THE HISTORYE OF ITALYE.

A booke exceding profitable to be red: because it intreateth of the astate of many and dyuers common weales, how they haue bene, and now be gouerned.

¶ Imprinted at London in Flete strete nere to Sainct Dunstons Church by Thomas Marche.

☞ The contentes of this booke.

The description of Italye.

Of the state of Italie in general.

Abbrigement of the state of Italye, from the beginnyng vntyl the Romayne empire was vtterly diuided.

¶ The description of Rome, and of the meruayloufe antiquitees there.

¶ Of the prefent ftate of Rome.

¶ Abbrigement of the liues of the Romaine byfhoppes

¶ The Venetian ftate, and the order of their common weale.

¶ The defcription of Naples.

¶ The Hiftorie of Naples.

¶ The defcription of Florence.

¶ The ftate of Florence.

¶ The defcription of Genoa.

¶ The ftate of Genoa.

¶ The defcription of Millayne.

¶ The ftate of Millayne.

¶ The ftate of Mantua.

¶ The ftate of Ferrara.

¶ The ftate of Placentia and Parma.

¶ The ftate of Urbine.

¶ To the righte honourable and myne especiall good lorde, Iohn Erle of Warrewike, Vysconte Lisle, knight of the moste noble order of the Garter, lorde great chamberlaine, and highe admyrall of Englande.



Thoughe many wise and learned men haue so substancially set forthe the infinite commodities that growe of the readyng of hystoryes, that my wyttes can not atteygne to a small parte of the due commendacyon thereof: Yet seinge my trauayle at this present hath ben to publish vnto our owne nacion in our mother tounge the doynges of straungers, and specially of the Italian nacion, whiche semeth to flourysshe in ciuilitee moste of all other at this daye: me thought I coulde no lesse doe for the incourageynge of theim that shall take this boke in hande, than partely reherse what profyte they maye gather by trauaylynge therein. First they shall see, vpon what little beginning many great astates haue risen, and how they that haue had the power to rule, by vsynge their auctorytees well and prudently, haue merited immortal fame of honour and preise: and vsynge tyrannye and ill gouernaunce, haue contrariwyse borne eternall sklander and shame. It encourageth the vertuouse men, by the exaumples that they reade, to encreace in vertue and nobilitee: and

sheweth the detestable, what the fruyte of their abuses are, and how naughtie doynges haue most commonlye naughtie endyng. It moueth the noble prince to maintaigne peace and iustice, and sheweth the tyrranne, what plagues folow of warre and cruelitee: and that thoughe hys tyrannye passe vnplagued in thys worlde (whyche happed seldome) yet shall his name be hated and cursed in al ages and amongest al nacions, as Nero, Heliogabalus and suche other prynces be. It sheweth also, howe mutable fortune is, and howe that, whyche hathe bene gotten with extreeme peines, vnmeasurable expences, and vnreasonable effusion of bloudde, hathe ben lost in a moment: and that commonly he that hathe conquered most in warre, at the beste is yet a loser, and finallye, that of diuision, either amongest the nobilytes or the commons, there ensueth bitter destruction of realmes, and subuersion of common wealthes. Where vnto there is none so great a minister as the alteration of auncient lawes and customes.

¶ All these thynges, with infinyte moe, hystoryes doe so set forthe to the eyes of prynces (if they reade them well) that their hertes shalbe more enclined with peace and iustice to enriche their subiects, and therby procure them selfes glorie, than by murtherynge of innocentes, rauishyng of honest wiues and maidens, burning, spoilyng and destruction of countreis (which are the effectes of warre) to make theim selfes conquerours of that they can not long enioye. For surelye, more prayse shall that prince deserue, that leaueth hys realme quiete and welthie vnto his successoure, than he that for the conquest of other countreis impouerisheth and disturbeth hys owne.

And

¶ And because this lytle worke declareth bothe these extremitees, aswell what a number of beautifull cities haue been edified, and what great countreis haue been enriched by peace and concord, as also how many goodly thynges and wonderful regions haue been destroied by strife and warre: Therefore woulde I wyshe all noble men to reade it, to the ende they may hereof take occasion so honourablye to spende their life tyme, that after their death, they maye shyne in fame for euer.

¶ And knowyng your lordship for your excellente feates of chyualrie, bothe by sea and lande, to be suche a one as is hable to iudge, whether mine opinion be good or not, like as your wonderfull knowlage in ciuile orders hathe made you worthy to be no lesse esteemed excellent in counsayle, than as you haue ben tried a most valiaunte cappitayne in the warres I therefore coulde finde none, to whom I might so worthilye dedycate my little trauaile as to you: Most humbly beseching your lordship to accept it at my poore handes, as the gifte of him that wisheth you all health and honour. At London the .xx. daye of September. 1549.

Your good Lordshippes humble at commaundment,
VVylliam Thomas.

The Media

¶ The Table of this present Booke, by letter.

A Abridgemente of the estate of Italye, from the begynnyng vntyll the Romayne empyre was vtterlye diuyded. folio. 8

Abbridgemente of the lyues of the Romaine Bysshoppes. fol. 41

Abbridgement of the Venetian histories from the edification of the citye to thys daye. 85

Acadamye in Florence 139
Adoaldus 18
Adrianus. 12
Agilulphus 18
Agostino Barbarico, 110
Agrippa 9
Alaricus king of Gothes. 15
Alba Siluius. 8
Alboinus 18
Alberto. 210
Aldepzandus. 20
Aldobzandino. 208
Alfonse kyng of Naples. 66
Alfons adopted heire to quene Johan. 131
Alfonse the seconde. 134
Alfonso. 212
Alexander Seuerus. 12
Amalasuntha 17
Amulius 9
Ancus Martius 10
Andzea Dandolo. 102
Andzea Contarini 104
Andzea Vendzamino 109
Andzea Gritti. 111
Andzea Dozia, 185. 186, 187.
Angelo Partielaco 90
Annates. 63
Antonio Veniero 105
Antonio Grimani 111
Antonio di Leua 200
Antonius Pius 12
Antonius Caracalla. 12
Antharis Flauius 18
Arches of tryumphe. 29
Archadius. 14
Arrigo Dandolo 96
Arno the riuer. 137
Artifycers of Italye, 5
Arioldus. 18
Aristolphus 20
Arithpertus. 19, 20
Ascanius 8
Aspzandus 20
Astate of Mantua 200
Astate of Ferrara 207
Astate of Placentia and Parma. 212
Athalphus 16
Athis oz Egiptus Siluius. 9
Attila 16, and 190
Auentinus 9
Augustus. 50
Auogadozi. 61
Aurelianus. 13
Azone 191
azo the fyzst and seconde 208
azo the. iii. 209

B.

Bagelardo. 117
Bartholomeo Gradenico. 101
Beginnynge and succesſe of the

of the astate of Myllaine. 189.
Welles. 91
Werengarius. 48
Wernabo. 191
Wyshoppes palaice, with Belvedere. 40
Wyshoppe of Rome besyeged. 113.
Wyrgus. 16
Woccatius. 127
Worso. 211.
Wouciquart. 177.
Wzidges in Rome. 23
Wzidges in Florence. 137
Wuildynges in Rome. 41
Wuildynges of Venice. 74
Wuildyng of Genoa. 163

C.

Cesar. fol. 50
Catus Caligula. 11
Cesar Fregoso. 188
Capi Stiui.us. 9
Cardinall hattes. 56
Cardynalles sacked and baked. 62
Cardinall Sauli. 185
Carlo duca de Angio. 125
Carlo. ii. 126
Carlo. iii. 129
Carpentus. 9
Carus. 13
Castel sante Angelo. 41
Castell Nouo. 113
Caroccio. 122
Castel of Myllaine. 189
Cercles. 31
Charles Martell. 45
Charles sonne taken pryssoner 126.
Charles the. v. emperour. 116.
Chilperike depesed. 45
Chrisstofore Moro. 168
Circuite of Italye. 1
Citee of Naples gotten by the Normaines. 120
Citee of Urbine. 214
Citta della. 159
Claudius. 11. 13
Colosses and Images. 34.
Comodus. 12
Commoditees of Italy. 1
Common pryuision and Charitable deedes in Venice. 82.
Common people. 149
Conrade. 124
Constantius. 14
Constantinus. eodem
Consules. 10
Conduytes of water in Rome 27.
Counsaile of Venice. 78
Corradino. 124. beheaded. 125.
Cortogoli. 184
Cosmo di Medici. 152
Couetousnesse. 134
Crueltee. 96. 98. 124. 125. 126. 208. 209.
Custoines in theyr lyuynge in Venice. 83
Cyprus wonne. 109

D.

Dypho. fol. 18
Decius. 13.
Deodata. 89
Descripciō of Italy. 1.
Descripcion of Rome. 22
Descripcion of Naples. 113.
Descripcion of Florence. 137
Descripcion of Myllaine. 187.
Desyderius. 18. 20.
Didius Julius. 12
Dignitees and offyces in Venice. 77

Diocle-

Diocleſianus. 11
Dimidyng of the Empire. 15
Diuiſion. 141
Diſcorde. 131
Dominion of Venice. 76
Domenico Leone. 89
Domenico Menicaccio. eo.
Domenico Orſeolo. 93
Domenico Flabenico. eodem.
Domenico Contarini. eod.
Domenico Siluio. eod.
Domenico Michele. 94
Domenico Morosini. 45
Dominion and gouernaunce of Genoa. 161
Domitianus. 11.
Don Ferraudo Gonzaga. 188.206.213.
Donacion of Conſtantine. 14.43.
Douchemens haull in Venice 111.
Drogone. 116
Duke of Florence dominyon and reuenew. 139
Duke Coſmo. 159

E.

EDificacion of Rome. 9.
Edificacyon and ſucceſſe of the citee of Florence 140.
Edifices in Florence. 137
Election of the Emperoure, whan and by whome it was ordeined. 21
Electours of the empire. 50
Empire deuided. 15.46
Empire chaunged. 48
Ende of the Romaine kynges. 10.
Ende of the Lumbardes reigne. 20.
Ende of the houſe of Normans in Sicilie. 121
Ende of the houſe of Sueuia in the dominyon of Naples. 125.
Ende of the hous of Durazza 132.
Ende of the houſe of Arragon in Naples. 135
Emanuel emperoure. 96
Eneas. 8
Eneas Siluius. eod.
Ercole. 221.212.
Ezelino di Romano. 98.

F.

FAcion of Italy. fol. 1
Faunus. 8
Federico. 206.215
Federike. 122. Kynge of Sicilie. 127.135
Feedyng in Italy. 2.
Ferdinando. 1334.
Ferdinando Kyng of Spayne 136.
Ferrandino. 135
Fertilitee of Naples. 113
Fier breakyng out of the earth 11.
Florence deſtroyed and reedyfyed. 140
Florentines cuſtomes. 138.
Florentynes common wealth conſtituted. 141
Franceſco Maria. 215
Franceſco 204.206.
Franceſco Donato. 112
Francis Petrarcha. 60.127
Francis Dandolo. 101
Francis Foſcaro. 106
Francis Sforza. 181,196 108.
Freſco. 209.

Galba Sergius. 11
Galeallo di Montekel=tro. 214
Galeazzo 181.191 193.197.
Galerius 14
Galienus. 13
Gormaldus 19
Gaſparo di Vicomercato. 181
Gates of Rome, 24
Genſericus 16
Genſualdus 19
Gentlemen of Italye. 3
Giofranceſco. 205
Giangaleazo 193
Giouanni. 89.91
Giouanni Dandolo 99
Giouanna prima. 127
Giouanna. ii. 130
Giouanni Torrigiani 190
Giouanni 192.197
Giouanni Maria 194
Giuſtiniano 90
Giudice di ginarcha 169
Godfrey. 117
Gonzaga. 203
Gordianus 13
Gothes 15
Graners and arſenales 36
Gratianus. 14
Grimoaldus. 19
Guelfes and gybelynes faction 141
Guglielmo Ferrabach 116
Guglielmo. 119.120.121. 123.
Guido. 204
Guido conte di Vrbino. 214.
Guido Vbalde. 215.216.
Gundebalde. 16
Gundibertus 19

Head of Tyber. 23
Helius Pertinax 12
Henrico imperatore. 121.
Hylles in Rome 25
Hyll Teſtacchio 35
Hippodromus. 36
Hyſtorye of Naples. 114
Honorius 14
Hoſpitalles in Venyce. 82
Hoſpytalles in florence. 138
Hotte baynes. 113
Hugo Conte de arli. 48
Hunes. fol. 15
Hunfredo. 117
Hulbandmen of Italye. fol. 5.

I.

Iacopo Contarini. 99
Iames Tiopolo. 97
Iano kynge of Cypras. 177.
Iano fregoſo. 184
Ianus 8
Images put out of churches. 44.46.
Ingratitude of people. 175
Iohn Acton. 62
Iohn Sozanzo 100
Iohn Gradenico 103
Iohn Delfino eodem
Iohn Mocenigo 109
Iohn Sharpe 149.210.
Iouinianus. 14
Italyans cuſtomes and nature folio. 3.
Iubilye 58.60.
Iulius Ceſar fyrſt emperoure 10.
Iuliano di Medici. 215
Iulius Philippus. 13

Julianus

Julianus apostata. 14
Junipertus, 20

K.

Kindes of marble. 37
Kynges of Naples intituled kynges of Jerusalem. 122
Kyng alfonse taken prysoner. 132.

L.

Lawes of Venyce. 81.88
Ladislaus. 103
Laurence di Medici. 155 215
Latinus. 8
Latinus Silutus. 8
Latinpertus. 20
Lewes the.12.kyng of fraunce 135.
Leather coyned for money. 110
Libertee of straungers in Venyce. 85.
Lidcralitie 107
Lionello. 210
Lodouico Moro. 198
Lorenzo Tiepolo. 99
Lorenzo Celso. 101
Lucchino. 192
Lucius Tarquinius. 10
Luigi gonzaga. 1032
Luigi. 204.205
Lutpzandus. 20
Lumbardes. fol.15

M.

Manfredo. 56.124.
Mrerinus 12.
Marcello. 88
Marino Morosini. 97
Marino giorgio. 100
Marino faliero. 102
Marco Coznario. 103
Marco Barbarico. 110
Marye. 129
Marcus aurelius antonius. 13.
Martino Torrigiani 190
Matilda. 52.201
Mattea magno. 161
Maurio. 89
Maximus. 12
Maximianus. 16
Merchandise of Italye. 2
Merchantes of Italy. 4
Michele Morosini. 105
Michele Steno. 106
Myllayne situate 188
Myllaynes name. 104
Moyca. 208
Morbus gallicus. 135
Murder. 129
Mutio, father to Fraunces Skorza.

N.

Napoleone. 190
Narses. 17
Naumachie 19
Nero 11
Nerua. 11
Nicene counsayle 43
Nicolo Trono. 108
Nicolo marcello 109
Nico. 210.213
Nobilitee suppressed 149
Numitor 9
Numa Pompilius. 10

Obta

Obelisks. fo.33
Obelerio. 90.
Obietto Fliſco. 182
Obizone. 209
Octauianus Auguſtus. 10
Oddo. 215
Odoacrus. 16
Odelaſſo Falero. 94.
Oſo. 88.91
Oſo Baduaro. 92
Oſo Oſeolo. 93
Otho the fyrſt. 115
Otho the. ii. eodem.
Otho Lucius. 11
Ottone Oſcolo. 93
Ottone. 190
Ottone Viſconti, eodem.

P.

Paolo Lucio. 87
Paſſerino. 202.
Paſquale Walpiero. 108.
Patriarke Vitelleſco. 132.
Partharus. 20
Peter kyng of Aragon. 126
Peter Fregoſo. 180
Philippo Torrig. 190.
Philippo Maria. 194. deſcriued. 195
Pietro Gryderico. 91,99.
Pietro Candiano. 92
Pietro Tribuno. eodem.
Pietro Baduaro. 92
Pietro Oſeolo. eodem, 93
Pietro Barbolano. 93
Pietro Polano. 95
Pietro ziani. 97
Pietro Mocenigo. 109
Pietro Lando. 112
Pietro Zinigi. 213.
Picus. 8
Pinamonte. 202
Plague of peſtilence. 60
Pleaſures of Italie. fo.110,2
Plinies death. 113
Policie. 65.164.
Porches in Rome. 31.
Poore people. 82
Poyſon that worketh not tyll a tyme. 185
Practiſe of a prelate. 153
Preſent eſtate of Rome. 37
Prieſtes mariage. 52
Prince Edwarde of Englande 126.
Pryſoners in Venice. 83
Probus. 13
Proca. 9.
Practouts and treaſure of Venice. 80
Pyliers in Rome. 32
Pyraundes. 34

Q.

Queene Johans houſband ſtrangled. 127
Queene Johan hanged. 129

R.

Rachis or Lachis. 28
Rafael Adorno. 180.
Raimpertas. 29
Raynoldes comming to Naples. 132.
Rauſe Duke of Burgoyne. 48.
Rebellion on Sicile. 125.
Realme of Naples. 6.
Renulus. 9

Reforte of straungers into Italia. 2
Reuenew of Venice. 76.
Richarde kynge of Englande. 163.
Rinaldo. 209.
Rinerj zeno. 98
Riuer of Tyber. 21.
Robert. 127
Roberto Guiscardo created Duke. 117
Rodoaldus. 19
Roger. 119. intytled kynge of Sicile. 120
Rome destroied. iiii. tymes. 17.
Rome gotten. 130
Romoaldus. 19.
Romulus. 9.
Romulus, firste kynge of Romaynes. 9.
Rotharius. 18.

S.

Saincte Peters church. 40.
Sainge of Fulvius. eod.
Saraſines comynge into Italye firſte. 115.
Saturnus. 8
Sebaſtian ziani. 95
Sepulchrum Bacchi. 36
Seruius Tullius. 10
Seuerus. 12
Sicile conquered by the Normaynes. 118.
Siluius Poſthumius. 8.
Site of Italy. fol. 1
Site of Venice. 73
Sordello. 202
ſophia. 17
ſupremites of the Church. 44.
Syſtynge and poyſonynge of Romayne byſhoppes. 50
ſlaughter of frenchymen. 125
ſtates of Italy. 6
ſtate of Genoa. 160

T.

Tacitus. 13
Tancredi the nozmain 116.
Tancredi. 113
Tarquinus Priſcus. 10.
Teia. 17.
Temperature of Italy. fol. 1
Temperature of Naples. 113
Temple in Rome. 31
Teſtament vzoken. 195
Theatres. 30
Thermes in Rome. 28
Theodolinda. 18
Theodozicus. 16
Theodotius. 14. 16
Thomas Beckette. 55.
Thomas Mocenico. 106
Title of the kyngedome of Jeruſalem. 126
Title of the ſeconde lyne of the houſe of Angio. 128
Titus. 11
Tullus Hoſtilius. 10
Turke conquered in Italye. 134.
Trade and cuſtomes of Genoa. 161
Traianus. 11
Treaſure founde vnder the grounde. 118
Tribuno Memmo. 93
Tyberinus. 9
Tyberius. 11
Tyrannie. 190

U.

Valla. 43
Valentino Borgia. 215
Valentinianus. 14
Valens. 14
Valerianus 13
Vandales. 15
Varius Heliogabalus. 11
Venetian astate. 73
Vespasianus 11
Vyage into the holy land. 53
Vytale Candiano. 93
Vitale Faliero. 94
Vitale michaele. eodem. 95
Virius gallus. 13
Visconti 190
Vitellius. 11
Walles of Rome. 23
Warres of Venice. 81
Wild beastes in florence. 138
Wiues of florence 139
Wiues of mylayne. 188
Women of Italye. fol. 6
Wonder. 263

Thus endeth the table of this
present Booke sette out
by Letter.

The Discrip:

CION OF

Italie.

ITALIE CONTEIGneth in length from Augusta Pretoria vnto Otranto. 1020. miles: and in breadth from the ryuer Varo in Prouance, to the riuer Arsia in Istria (whiche is the broadest place) 410. miles: and in the narowe places, as from the mouthe of Pescara to the mouthe of Tyber. 126. myles. So that to compasse it by sea from Varo to Arsia, are. 3038. miles, which with the. 410. miles by lande, maketh the whole circuite to be. 3448. miles. Thus it appeareth, that it is almost an Iland, closed on the east side with the sea Adriaticum, and on the southe and weaste wyth the sea Trirhenum, which is a part of the great sea Mediterraneum. And from the Northe it hathe the mightiest mountaines of al Europe called Alpes, which diuideth it from all other regions.

The circuite of Italye

The facyon of Italye

¶ The facion (as Plinie descryueth it) is lyke vnto an oken leefe with the stalke, but it endeth in maner of the Amazones targatte.

temperature of Italye

¶ It hathe a verye temperate and wholesome ayre, fertile fieldes, pleasaunt hylles, batefull pastures, shadowyng woodes, plentie of all kinde of trees and groues, haboundaunce of corne, vines, and olines: and welles,

layze cattayle, and so many spzings, fountaines, lakes, ryuers, and hauens, that it is an open lappe to receyue the trade of all countreis: and as it were to offer al men helpe it semeth willingly to put it selfe into the sea.

The cytee of Italye.

¶ It lyeth betwene the syxte houre and the syxte of the wynter in maner halfe way betwene the Equinoctiall and the Pole: betwene (I saye) the heate of the Sonne and the colde of the Nozthe. Foz the citee of Bononia, (where the great resozt of scholers from all nacions is wonte to be) standeth almost in the herte of Italye, and hath his eleuacion. 44. degrees: so that deuydynge the quarter from the Equinoctial to the Septemtrion into 90. according to the rule of Cosmographie, and takyng the one halfe therof, which is. 45. the difference is lytle to pzoue that Italie is in the middest betwene the extremitees of hote and colde. And seing than, that temperature is it that most of all other comfozteth, nourisheth and mainteineth nature, it must nedes folow, that this being one of the most indifferent regions, must be very pleasaunt delicate and aboundant.

¶ This lyttell discourse I haue made to the intente the wise may the better vnderstand the cause of those thinges, that to my purpose I must hereafter treate vpon.

¶ The commodytees of Italye.

IF I shoulde goe about to discriue vnto you particularly howe commodious the countrey is, aswel to the trafficque of them that lyue by marchaundyse, as to the good lyfe of theim that loue their rest, it shoulde be enough

enough alone to occupie an whole volume, but because I woulde seeme no moze tedious in this, than I coueit to doe in all the rest, I saye:

¶ First foz merchaundise, Italie as an hert oz knotte of these partes on our halfe of the wozld, is the pzincipall place of recourse of all nacions that occupie any thinge of impoztaunce farre from home. Foz lyke as with vs in England the most merchauntes of the realme resozt to London, to vtter their owne wares, and to bye suche other as make foz their purposes, euen so they of france of Spaine, of Germanie, and of all other westerlye places, that coueyt the merchandise of Soria, Ægipt, Cyprus, Candia, Constantinople, and those other esterly parties, as iewelles, dzugges, spices, perfumes, spikes, cotten, suger, malmeseis, and other lyke: resozte moste commonly into Italye with their woulles, clothes, lynnen, lether, metalles, and suche other, to Genoa, Mylaine, Venice, Ancona, Missena, Naples, oz to some of those places where as trafficque is vsed: and there metyng with Iewes, Turkes, Greekes, Moozes, and other easterlye merchauntes, sellynge the one they by the other. Merchaundyse.

¶ Than foz pleasure, he that hath money to paye foz that he taketh, shall haue in Italye what he can resonablye desyze, kyne bzeadde, synguler good wines both stronge and small, flesshe of all soztes bothe wilde and tame, foule of all kinders bothe of water and land, fisshe aswell of the sea as of the freshe water, but especyally suche plentie of delycate fruites, as would make a man leaue flesshe, foule and fisshe to eate them: namelye in the sommer. I meane the Melons, Pepons, Pomegranettes Pleasure.

nettes, Orenges, Lymmans, Citrõs, and swete grapes: besides theyr kygges, apples, peares, peaches, plommes, and olyues, with a thousande other of that sorte. And it is not to be meruailed at, thoughe (as the same goeth) the Italian be a small eater of flealshe. For though here before I haue commended the temperature of Italy to be comparable with any other countrey: yet must you understand, that in sommer the sonne is somwhat feruente, and in tyme of that heate, the lyghtnesse of those swete freshe fruites is better to be dygested, than the heauynesse of flesche or fysche, whiche woulde not there be so lyghtlye dygested. As I my selfe haue proued, that before time could in maner broke no fruit, and yet after I had bene a whyle in Italie. I fell so in loue withall, that as longe as I was there, I desired no meate more, because me thought nothing more wholesome, specially in sommer. And all be it, the heate be (as I haue sayde) somewhat feruent, yet it excedeth not so muche as the hottest, as the colde wynter is temperate at the coldest. For at the most the colde there endureth not .iii. monethes of the .xii. and some yeares in maner you shal feele no winter at all.

Fedyng in Italye

Resorte of strangers into Italy

¶ The rehersed commodities, with infinite other, to longe here to treats of, together with the louynge companye of the Italyans (who in maner make more of straungers than of theyr owne) doe cause the infinite resort of all nations that continually is sene there. And I thinke verily, that in one region of all the world againe, are not halfe so many straungers as in Italye: specially of gentilmen, whose resorte thither is principally vnder pretence of studye. For there are dyuerse famouse

famouse citees, that be priuileged with great liberties for all scholars that come: as Padoa, Bononia, Pauia, Ferrara, Pisa, and others: in euerye one of the whyche, are excellente learned men, waged for the readynge of Philosophye, of the ciuile lawes, and of all the liberall sciences. Besides excellent maisters of musicke to singe and playe on all maner of instrumentes, and the beste maisters of fence at all weapons that can be founde. So that all kindes of vertue maye there be learned: and therfore are those places accordingly furnished, not of suche studentes alone, as most commonly are broughte vp in our vniuersitees (meane mens childrē set to schole in hope to lyue vpon hyred learninge) but for the more parte of noble mens sonnes, and of the best gentilmen, that studye more for knowlage and pleasure, than for curiositee or luker. For lightlye there passeth no shroftide without renninge at the tilte, tourneying, fighting at the barciers, and other lyke feates of armes, handled and furnished after the beste sorte: the greatest doers wherof are scholers.

¶ This last winter lyng in Padoa, with diligente serche I learned that the noumber of scholers there was little lesse than fiftene hundreth, whereof I dare saye, a thousand at the lest were gentilmen.

Of the Italian customes and nature.

THe inheritance of landes in Italie goth by Canell kynde, that is to witte, one brother as good parte as an other. So that yf a Conte, (whyche

is as muche to ſaye as an Earle(haue.xx.ſonnes,euery one of theim is called Conte, and the youngeſte hathe as good parte in his fathers landes and goodes, as the eldeſt: vnleſſe it be the eſtates of prynces, as of Mantua, Ferrara, Vrbino, and ſuche others, which theldeſt euermoze enioyeth. And by this meane it is come to paſſe, that in proceſſe of time with chaunge from welth to pouertee, there be diuers Erles and Marqueſes with out lande oz goodes, reteigning neuertheleſſe the glozy of that name to them and theirs foz euer.

Gentlmen. ¶ But to ſpeake of the gentylmen, that haue wherof woozſchypfully to lyue(whyche foz the moſte parte doe commonly profeſſe armes (me ſeemeth that none other nacion is lyke them in maieſtie.

¶ Fyrſt, to reherſe the conformitee of ſpeeche that is amongeſt theim ſelues(conſyderyng what a number of dyuerſitees they haue in their tounge)it is a meruaile, that in maner all gentylmen do ſpeake the courtiſane. Foz notwithſtanding that betwene the Flozentine and Venetian is great diuerſitee in ſpeeche, as with vs betwene a Londoner and a Yozkeſchyreman, and likewiſe betwene the Mylaineſe and the Romayne, the Napolitane and the Genoueſe: yet by the tounge you ſhall not lyghtlye dyſcerne of what parte of the countreye anye gentylman is, becauſe that beynge Chyldzen they are brought vp in the courtiſane onely. And generally (a fewe cities excepted)in maners and condicions they are no leſſe agreable than in their ſpeache, ſo honourable, ſo courteiſe, ſo prudente, and ſo graue withall, that it ſhoulde ſeeme eche one of them to haue had a pryncelye bryngyng vp. To his ſuperiour obediente, to his equall

humble

humble, and to his inferiour gentle and courteyse, amiable to a straunger, and desyrous with curtesy to winne his loue.

¶ I graunte, that in the expense or loue of hys money to a straunger he is ware, and would be at no more cost than he is sure either to saue by, or to haue thanke for, wherein I rather can commende hym than otherwyse. But this is out of doubte, a straunger cannot be better entertayned, nor moore honourably entreated than amongest the Italians.

¶ They are verye modest in their apparel, fine in trimmyng of their houses, and excedyng nete at their table. But aboue all other they are sober of speche, ennemies of yll report, and so tender ouer their owne good name (whyche they call their honoure) that whosoeuer speaketh euyll of one of theim, shall dye for it, yf the partye slaundered may know it, and finde tyme and place to doe it. Whereof there is a vse growen amongest them, that few gentilmen goe abroade vnarmed. And though some in this case doe discommende theym, yet myne opinyon dooeth rather allowe than blame them. For the feare of suche daungers maketh men so ware of theyr tounges, that a man may goe .xx. yeares through Italie without findynge reproche or villanie, vnlesse he prouoke it hym selfe.

¶ And if one gentilman happen to defame another, many times the defamed maketh his defiaunce by a writte called Cartello, and openlye chalengeth the defamer to fight in campe, so that there are seen sometime worthy tryalles betwene them.

¶ And it is true, that many yeares agoe, such contencion hath

en hath growen amongeſt them, that almoſſe the whole nacion hath been diuided into partakynges, as Guelfi and Ghibellini: Imperiall and frenche, with other like: whiche hath bene occaſion of much manſlaughter, and conſequentlye of theyr forſayde continuall vſe in wearyng of armure. But at this daye thoſe open contencions are wonderfullye abated, whether it proceede of werineſſe or of wyſedome I cannot tell.

¶ Finally in one thing I can ſinglerly commend them, that they woull not lightlye meddle with other mennes matters, and that whan they heare ill reporte, they doe theyr beſt to couer the ſlaunder, ſaying that no man liueth without faulte: or with ſome other ſuche reaſon. But like as I could recken in the Italians commendacion many thinges more than are here rehearſed, euen ſo on the other ſyde if I were diſpoſed to ſpeake of vice, I might happen to fynde a number as ill as in anye other men: whyche are better vntouched than ſpoken of. For whereas temperance, modeſtye, and other ciuile vertues excell in the number of the Italian nobilitee, more than in the nobilytee of anye other nation that I knowe: ſo vndoubtedly the fleſhely appetite with vnnatural heate and other thinges in theym that be vicious, dooe paſſe all the termes of reaſon or honeſtye.

¶ And yet it is not to be forgotten, that theſe gentilmen generallye profeſſe three thynges: the fyrſte is armes, to mainteigne withall his honour, the ſeconde is loue, to ſhewe him ſelfe gentil and not cruel of nature: and the thyrde is learning, to be hable to know, to vnderſtande, and to better his opinion in matters of weight.

Merchantes

¶ The principall merchantes are for the moſt part gentilmen.

tilmen . For whan there be of one house.iii. or. iiii. bretherne: lyghtly one or two of theim disposse them selfes to merchaundyse . And if they happen not to deuide theyr fathers patrimony and substaunce (as manye tymes they dooe not) than doe the Merchauntes trauayle aswell for the wealth of theyr bretherne as theyr owne: for all renneth in common, be it gayne or losse . In deede theyr outwarde profession agreeth not wyth the gentylmen before reherſed. For they carye nother weapon nor armure, but doe what they can to liue in peace: not onely serching the trades of al countreis with their merchaundise, but also occupying at home the most substancyall fermes and possessyons by theyr factours, as hereafter more plainely it followeth . And because these merchauntes haue nothing the lesse reputacion of nobilitee, for theyr trade of merchaundise, therfore it followeth that there be suche numbers of wealthy men in that countrey, as the like is not to be foūd any other where. For in dyuers cyties of Italye it is no meruaile to see. xx. persones in a Citee woorthe. 100000. crownes a peece and vpwardes.

¶ As for the artificers I haue nothyng to saye: sauyng that for the most part thei are the finest woorkemen and best inuentours of all other, and are so wel payed for it, that many of theim lyue as well as they that haue standyng lyuinges: and grow sometimes vnto great wealth and richesse, but not lightly in two or thre descentes vnto any reputacyon of nobylitee. Artifycers.

¶ The husbandmen are of all handes oppressed. For in the countrey there dwelleth no man of substaunce. All the gentilmen and other that are wealthy, dwell in Husbandmen

the walled cytees and townes, leauynge the villayges, fyeldes and pastures in theyr tenauntes handes, not to ferme at certaine rent as we dooe in Englande, but to the halfes, or to the thyrde of all grayne and fruyte as the grounde is fertile or barayne. And the poore tenaunt is bound to tyll, sow and housbande the grounde at hys owne coste and charge. So that the Landlordes parte cometh clere wythout dysbursyng of a penye.

And at the harueste and vintaige the Landlorde sendeth a man of his for his parte, who fyrste taketh hys choyse of the grayne, wyne, oyle, and fruyte, and than leaueth the reste to the tenaunte as hys parte aryseth to. And manye tymes yf the landelorde be cruell, whan he cannot sell hys thynges at hys owne pryce, than forceth he his tenaunt to vtter it for hym, and to pay for it, not as he can sell it, but as the landelorde woull. By reason wherof the poore man is brought so low, that he is not hable sometyme to fynde breade of Zorgo (a very vyle grayne) to feede hys poore chyldren wythal.

¶ And because I haue here named Zorgo, me thynketh it meete to tell, that in Italie groweth manye sortes of graine, as this Zorgo, Meglio, Segala, and .rr. suche other, whyche cannot be expressed by any Englyshe names, because in Englande there is no kynde of suche grayne. All whych serue to make course breadde for the poore people, and also for the staple of vytayles in stronge holdes. For the breadde made therof (specially of Meglio) woull endure a noumber of yeres vncorrupted. And in lyke maner they haue certaine kindes of other graine, that in generall are called Legumi (as we were wonte to call pease, lenten stuffe) where-

of they

of they vse all the yere longe to make theyr potages.

¶ Finally in the vyllages are many faire houses made onely for the owners passetime against the heate of the sommer. For than dooe they habandon the cities and goe vnto those houses for a moneth two or three, where vnder the freshe herbes, hedges and boowes, amongest the delicate fruites they triumph in as muche pleasure as maye be imagined. And for the most part eche man hath his make: with some instrumentes of musicke, and suche other thynges as serue for hys recreacyon. And yf euer the tenaunt haue good daye, than lycketh he his lyppes of hys mayckers leauynges.

Women.

¶ As for the women,
Some be wonders gaie,
And some goe as they maye.
Some at libertee dooe swymme a flote,
And some woulde faine but they cannot.
Some be meerie, I wote wel why,
And some begyle the housbande, with finger in the eie.
Some be maryed agaynst theyr will,
And therfore some abyde Maydens styll.
In effect they are women all,
Euer haue been and euer shall.

¶ But in good earnest the gentilwomen generally, for gorgeouse atyre, apparayle and Jewelles, excede (I thynke) all other women of oure knowen worlde. I meane as well the courtisanes as the maryed women. For in some places of Italye, specially where churchemen doe reigne, you shall fynde of that sorte of women in riche apparaile, in furniture of household, in seruice, in horse and hackeney, and in all thinges that apper-

teyne to a delycate Lady, so well furnysshed, that to see one of theim vnknowynglye, she shoulde seeme rather of the qualitee of a princesse, than of a common woman. But because I haue to speake hereafter in perticuler, I woull forbeare to treate anye further of theym in thys place.

☞ Of the states of Italye.

THe greatest Prince of dominion there at thys presente is Charles the.v. Emperoure of Almayne, who for his parte hathe the Realme of Naples and the Duchie of Mylaine: whyche realme is diuided into.8. regyons, and to the entente the readers maye the better be satisfied, I haue set forth as well the auncient names of those regions, as the present.

The Realme of Naples.

☞ The present names.		☞ The auncient.
Parte of	Campagnia di Roma	
	Maremma.	Latium.
	Terra di lauoro	Campania.
	Principato.	Picentini.
	Basilicata.	Lucania.
Calabria		Brutii.
		Grecia magna.
Puglia.	terra d'otranto	Salentini.
		Calabria antiqua.
		Iapigia.
		Mesapia.
		Apulia Peucetia.
		Aetholia.
		Apulia Daunia.

¶ The present names.	¶ The auncient.
Abruzzo.	Frentani.
	Pelligni.
	Marrucini.
	Vestini.
	Precutii.
	Marsi.
Valle Beneuentana.	Samnites.

¶ As for that part of the Duchie of Mylaine that the emperour hath, it lieth in Lumbardie auncientlye called Gallia Cisalpina, for the most parte on that syde of the riuer Pó, that was called Transpadana.

The bisshop of Rome hath for his parte, the cytee of Rome, wyth these countreys folowynge.

¶ The present names.	¶ The auncient.
Parte of (Campagnia.) (Maremma.)	Latium.
Parte of Tuscane.	Hetruria.
The Duchie of Spoleti.	Vmbria.
Marca D'Ancona.	Piceni.
Romagnia.	Flaminia.
	Emilia.

The Citee of Bononia.

The Venetians for theyr parte haue the Citee of Venice with those townes in and about their marish called la Contrada di venetia, la Marca Triuigiana, and a great part of Lumbardy, aunciẽtly called Gallia Cisalpina on the same side of the Pó, that was called Trans-

padana. And parte of the countrey Istria.

The common wealthe of Genoa, haue the countrey about theim nowe called, Il Genouesato and auncyentlye Liguria.

Tuscane, auncientlie called, Hetruria, is deuided into diuers dominions, wherof a small parte the bysshop of Rome hathe, but the greatest is the Duke of Florence, who hath. viii. citees vnder him: And than there be two common wealthes, Siena and Lucca, whose territories are not greate.

The Duke of Ferrare hath parte of Romagnia, and parte of Lumbardie.

The Duke of Mantua is all in Lumbardie.

And the Duke of Urbine is betweene Marca d'Ancona and Tuscane, whose people are called of Plinie Metaurensi.

The Citees of Parma and Placentia in Lumbardy haue bene of late transposed from the churche vnto the astate of a Duchye, but nowe it is deuyded agayne: as hereafter you shal perceiue.

¶ Now here is to be noted, that euery perticuler prince and common wealthe of Italye, within hys owne dominion, accompteth him selfe absolute lorde and kyng, and lyueth vpon the customes, tares and tallaiges that he raiseth of hys subiectes. For lightlye they haue littell or no landes at all of theyr owne. And generallye they procede all together by the ciuile lawes, and are so diligent in the administracion of iustice, specially against murderers and theues, that I thinke no countrey more quiete than it: the Realme of Naples, and some part of the Romaine territory excepted, where many times

nye tymes happeneth muche robbyng by the waies.

CAn abbridgemente of the state of Italie, from the beginninge vntill the Romaine Empire was vterly deuided.

AFter the generall floudde remaygned no moe but Noe, hys iii. Sonnes and theyr wyfes, betwene whom it should seeme the whole worlde was deuided. Sem toke the Eaſte parte, Cham, the south, and Iafet the weaſt. Some write that Iafet was the same Ianus that fyrſt reigned in Italie, and some that Janus was Iafettes Sonne. But whether so it be, this Janus was euer taken for father of the gods, and was peinted with two faces, either because he was father of two nacions, the Greekes and Italians, or els because the moneth of Januarye (whiche hath two reſpectes, one to the beginninge, and an other to the ende of the yeare) toke name of hym. While this Ianus reygned in Italie, Saturne beyng chaſed out of the realme of Candia by his soonne Iupiter, came in a maner naked vnto him, and Janus not onely receiued hym: But also gaue hym the halfe of his dominion. For memorie wherof either of theim builded a Cytee to hys owne name, that is to wete Ianicula and Saturnia. From Janus vnto Numitor

nitor were.xxi.kynges of the Latines, whose names, with the yeres of theyr reygne, hereafter folow.

1 Ianus.

2 Saturnus.

3 Picus, beyng a great talker, was therfore feygned of the poetes to be conuerted into a pie.

4 Faunus, was after worshypped for a God of the woodes.

5 Latinus chaunged the name of his people from Laurentini to Latini, and gaue hys daughter Lauinia to Eneas the Troyane, promysed before vnto Turnus, sonne of kynge Daunus.

6 These.v. kynges reigned about.200.yeres.

Eneas maryed the daughter of Latinus, and after hys death, reygned.iii.yeres, and buylded the cytee Lauinia.

7 Ascanius, sonne of Eneas and of Creusa, king priamus daughter, reygned.38 yeares, and buylded Albalonga, to the whych he brought his fathers idolles called the gods Penates, but they of them selfes tourned, iii. tymes backe agayne to Lauinia.

Silaius Posthumius second son of Eneas, and begotten on Lauinia, reigned.xxix.yeares. Of whom all the latine kynges afterwardes surnamed theym selfes Siluij: & after some authours he was father to Brutus, that first named this Realme Britayne, and that slewe his owne father by mischaunce, which thynge Polidorus Virgilius doeth not graunt.

9 Eneas Siluius reigned.31. yeares.

10 Latinus Siluius reigned.50. yeres.

11 Alba Siluius, reigned.39. yeres. and builded Alba, whyche

whiche he made hys royall Citee: but after it was de-
ſtroyed by Tullus Hoſtilius. Of that citee deſcended
thoſe that to this day are called Albaneſi, though they
of their owne oryginal holde diuers opinions.

Athis or Egiptus Siluius, reigned. 24. yeres. 12

Capi Siluius reigned. 28. yeres, and builded the ci- 13
tee of Capua.

Carpentus reigned. 13. yeres. 14

Tyberinus reigned. 9. yeres, of whom the riuer that 15
renneth through Rome was firſt named tyber: by rea-
ſon he was drowned in the ſame: for before it was cal-
led Albula.

Agrippa reignsd. 40. yeres. 16

Remulus reigned 19. yeres, and was ſlaine with a 17
thunderbolte.

Auentinus, reigned. 38. yeares, and was ſlayne in 18
battaile on the hill Auentine, and buried there: wherof
that hill toke his name, thoughe Varro ſayeth that the
name proceded of the ſight of certaine birdes.

Proca reigned 23. yeres, and ordeined by teſtament, 19
that of his two ſonnes the one ſhould haue his realme,
and the other his treaſure, ſo that theldeſt toke the trea-
ſure, and the yongeſt the dominion.

Amulius reigned. 24. yeres, and chaſed his elder bro- 20
ther Numitor out of his realme, becauſe he had learned
by diuination, that one of his brothers deſcente ſhoulde
expel him out of his eſtate. Wherefore he ſlewe hys
nephew Sergiſtus, & put his neece Rhea into a religi-
on of virgines called Veſtales, where at the end of. vii
yere ſhe was gotten with childe by an vnknowen man,
and brought forth at one burden two ſonnes Romulus

and Remus with the which Amulius was so offended that he not onely caused the mother to be buried quicke accordynge to the lawe, but also commaunded the two children to be throwē into Tyber, so that they were left on the banke, and there fed by a she woulfe (as the poetes feigne) but the trouth of the hystorie is, that they were founde by a shepherde, whose wife (for hir beauty and licencious liuinge) was called Lupa, and so taken and nourysshed til they grew vnto suche yeres, that they reuenged theim selfes, slew Amulius, and made theyr graundefather Numitor kynge.

21 Numitor reigned not fully one yere til Romulus and Remus together found the meane to slea him, and than builded the citee of Rome. Before whyche tyme these Latine kynges had reigned in all about. 620. yeres.

The edyfication of rome. 4450

After the Citie was buylded, the two bretherne so contended for geuyng the name, and for the dominion, that Remus was slayne.

1 Romulus than reigned. 38. yeres, and created. 100. senatours for the rule of the common wealth. And within 4. yeres after the edification of the citee, because the inhabytauntes (beynge men assembled of dyuers nacions) had no women to mainteine succession, he deuised sacrifices and plaies, to the whyche the Sabines aswel men as women resorted. So that by order of Romulus all the Sabine maydens, that came to the feast, were taken and maryed amonge the Romaynes. Wherupō the Sabines made warre against Romulus and procured diuers other of theyr neighbours to doo the lyke, but the Romaine preuailed against them all. Finally as he perused his souldiers on a day in a great

The fyrste kynge of the Romaynes.

tempest

tempest, he was stricken wyth a thunderbolte, and because he could neuer more be heard of, the Romaynes imagined, he was ascended to heauen, and therfore worshypped hym as a God.

¶ Numa Pompilius reigned. 41. yeres, and kepte the citee in peace, and because the people thorough the yeres passed continual warres were become in maner wilde, he therfore entroduced religion and gods among them, and so brought theym to ciuilytee. 2

Tullus Hostilius reigned. 33. yeres, and conquered the citee of Alba, whych he rased to the earthe, and at laste bothe he and his house were burned with thunder. 3

Ancus Martius reigned. xxiiii. yeares, and subdued the Latines, with dyuers other people about Rome. 4

Tarquintus Priscus reigned, 37. yeares, he doubled the noumber of senatours, and after he had vāquished the Sabines, entred triumphanntly into Rome, but at last he was slayne by the sonnes of Ancus Martius. 5

¶ Seruius Tulius reigned. 34. yeres, he ordeined first the paiment of taxes, and thereby founde that he had at that tyme in Rome fourescore and foure thousand persons, and was slayne at last by the procurement of hys sonne in law Tarquine the proude. 6

¶ Lucius Tarquinius reigned. 35. yeares, he was the fyrst that inuented prisons and tourmentes, and by reason of the odious acte that his sonne didde in enforsyng the chast Lucretia, wyfe of Collatinus (who therefore slew hir selfe) he and all hys were exiled oute of Rome, and the estate chaunged from kynges to consules, after that the kynges had reigned aboue. 230. yeres. 7

The ende of the Romaine kings.

Than dyd the Romains ordeine two Consules remo- Consules.

ueable from yere to yere. The fyrſt were Lucius Iunius Brutus, & Lucius Tarquinius Collatinus, houſband to the dead Lucretia: vnder whych order of Conſules (a few chaunges excepted) the Romaynes maintayned theyr common wealth, well nere. 500. yeares: and ſo prevailed in conqueſtes ouer the woꝛld, that none other monarchie is to be compared vnto theyrs: noꝛ almoſt ſo many other wooꝛthy men to be read of in al the hiſtoꝛies wꝛytten, as were founde in that Citee foꝛ the time: as he that readeth Liuie ſhall ſee. But becauſe the onely wꝛiting of their names wold occupie a greater part of my boke than ſhould be requiſite to my purpoſe, I ſhall beſeche all gentill readers to be contented that I referre theim ouer vnto the Romaine hiſtoꝛies, whych are common to the whole woꝛlde.

¶ Finally, aboute. 700. yeares after the edifficacyon of Rome, and. 47. beſoꝛe the comyng of Chꝛiſte, the libertee of the Romaine common wealth ceaſed, by reaſon that Iulius Cæſar, after the death of Pompeius, hauyng quieted the cyuile contencions, tooke on hym by foꝛce the whole Empyꝛe, and had at hys commaundement the greateſt part of all the woꝛlde. From whom vnto the tyme of Conſtantine the fyrſte, there reigned, 38. Emperours, as by theyr names hereafter it appeareth, and they all kepte theyr principall ſeate in Rome, as the head citee of theyr monarchie.

The firſte Emperoure.

1 IUlius Cæſar, reigned in all not fullye. v. yeares, foꝛ Brutus & Caſſius, with diuers other ſenatours con-
2 ſpired againſt him, and ſlew him in the ſenate houſe.

¶ Octauianus Auguſtus reigned. 56. yeares, and vi. monethes, but the firſt. xii. yeres he had Marcus Antonius

nius & Lepidus as parteners of the empire, til by force, with consente of the senate, he subdued them bothe: and because he was happie in his enterprises, the senatours surnamed him Augustus. In the. 42. yere of his reigne, our Sauiour Christ was borne.

¶ Tyberius, son in lawe vnto Octauian, reigned. xxiii. yeares. In the. xviii. yere whereof Christe suffred hys passion, and Pilate wrote vnto Tyberius of the miracles that he had doen, wherfore Tiberius commaunded he shoulde be worshipped as a God: but the senatours woulde not graunte vnto it, because he had proclaimed it without theyr consentes. 3

¶ Caius Caligula reigned. iii. yeres and. x. monethes. A man of so yll liuynge, that he shamed not to companye fleshely with his owne sisters, and was slayne by hys owne souldiours. 4

¶ Claudius reigned. xiii. yeres and. viii. monethes, and was poysoned. Some write, that the seconde yere of Claudius reigne, Peter the apostle came to Rome, and there continued. xxv. yeares after. Whyche other some doe disallow, groundyng them vpon Peters age, that reckenyng the time, it was impossible Peter should liue so longe after Christes passion. 5

¶ Neroe reigned. xiiii. yeres and. viii. monethes, whose customes were odiouse to the whole worlde. He killed his mother, hys wyfe, his mayster Seneca, and dyuers other excellent men: so that his owne souldiers rebelled agaynste hym and the whole Senate condemned him: wherefore he fledde, and because he coulde not escape, desperately slewe hym selfe. 6

¶ Galba Sergius reigned but. viii. monethes, by reason 7

that his next succeſſour laye in waite for hym, and ſlew him in the baines.

8 Otho Lucius reigned ſcarſely.iii'.monethes, tyll he was ouercome by his nexte ſucceſſour, ſo that thrꝛoughe deſpayre he ſlew hym ſelfe.

9 ☞Uitellius reygned but.vii. Monethes. For the Romaine armie, that than was in the eaſt parties, elected Veſpaſian emperoure. So that in deſpite therof Uitellius chaſed Sabinus Veſpaſians brother with diuers into the capitol, and there ſet fyre on theim. Wherefore Veſpaſian came ſtreight to Rome, toke Vitellius, made hym to be drawē thrꝛough the ſtretes, & hewen to peces.

10 Veſpaſianus reigned.x.yeares, and reduced the cuſtomes and lawes into a better ordꝛer amonge the people, whiche by Nero and the other Emperours after hym were muche corꝛupted, and beganne the Amphiater. now called Colliſeo. And this was he that deſtroyed Jeruſalem in fulfillyng of Chꝛiſtes pꝛophecie.

11 Titus, ſonne to Veſpaſianus, reygned.ii. yeres and ii.monethes after his father, and was a verye gracious Pꝛynce.

12 Domitianus reigned.xv.yeres & .v.monethes, he was brother vnto Titus, but lyke Nero in condicyons, for he delited in vnnatural vices, and in cruel death of men, ſo that he ſlew diuers ſenatours, perſecuted lerned men and Chꝛiſtians, had ill ſucceſſe in his warres, and finally thrꝛough conſpiracie was ſlayne.

13 Nerua reigned one yere and.iiii.monethes, and was the fyꝛſt ſtraunger (that is to wete no romayne bꝛorne) that euer was made Emperour.

14 Traianus adopted ſon vnto Nerua and a Spaniard

borne, reigned. xix. yeres and. vi. Monethes, so benigne and courteise a prynce, that for a prouerbe, men vsed to say, God make the happier than august, and better thã traiane. For being somtime aduertised of his frēds, that he vsed him selfe to much familiarly, he answered, that a prince ought to be vnto his subiectes such as they should be to hym: and geuyng the swoorde to a Pretor, that he had newly made, he sayde, vse this against mine enemies, but see the cause be iust, and if I deale vniustly, than spare not me: He prospered muche in hys warres, and greatly augmented the Romaine empyre.

Adrianus reigned. xxi. yeres, the most parte in peace, 15
for that was his studie. He was wel learned, and perely wrote a pronostication, he builded a notable sepulchre: wherupon Castel. S. Angelo nowe standeth. And in his time there arose vppe a false Messias among the Iewes, whyche Adrian ouercame with muche a doo.

Antonius Pius adopted sonne vnto Adrian reygned 16
xxiii. yeres, so gentyl a prince, that all the worlde loued hym. For he was wonte to saye, he had rather preserue one of his citesins, than destroy a. 1000. of his enemies

Marcus Aurelius Antonius reigned. xix. yeares and 17
one moneth. At the first his brother Lucius Uerus was ioigned with hym, but he lyued not longe. This Marcus was an excellente Philosopher, wrote dyuers good bokes, & prospered in the warres, where finally he died.

Commodus, son to Marcus Aurelius reigned. 13. yeres 18
more lyke in condicions vnto Nero, than to his father, so that at last he was both poysoned and strangled.

Helius was surnamed Pertinax, because he toke the empire on him in maner against his wyl, & reigned not 19
vi. mone-

bi.monethes, but that hys nexte succeſſour cauſed him to be ſlaine.

20 ¶Didius Julianus reigned not fullye .bii. monethes, for his next ſucceſſour came againſt him dyſcoumfyted his armie, toke him, and cauſed him to be beheaded.

21 ¶Seuerus reigned.xbiii.yeres, and reſtored muche the Romaine Empyre from the decay that it was fallen in by his predeceſſours tyme, proſpered much in his warres, and dyed in the citee of Yorke: where (it is wryten) he made a dyche wyth a walle full of toures and baſtilions from one ſea to the other.132. miles of length

22 Antonius Caracalla reigned.bi.yeres, he cauſed his brother Geta to be ſlaine, maried his ſtepmother Iulia, vſed muche tyrannye, and was at laſte ſlaine by one of his owne ſouldiours.

23 Macrinus with his ſon reygned one yere, and were both ſlayne.

24 Marius Heliogabalus reigned.iiii.yeres, ſo abhominable a man of liuynge, that after he had tryed all the waies of carnall vice, he cauſed hys owne members to be cut of, in hope to chaunge hys kynde. Wherfore hys owne ſouldiours ſlewe him, drewe his carcaſſe a longe the ſtretes, tyed a ſtone aboute his necke, and ſo threwe him into Tyber.

25 Alexander Seuerus reigned.xiii.yeres, ful of vertue and good gouernaunce: but becauſe he was ſeuere in punyſhynge hys ſouldyours offences, they rebelled agaynſte him, and ſlewe him.

26 Maximianus reygned.iii.yeres, and becauſe he was created of the armie, without the Senatours conſente, therfore did the ſenate ordeine new emperours againſt hym

hym, so that his owne souldiours slewe him.

Gordianus reigned. vi. yeres, and prospered much in his warres, but at last for lacke of vittayles, the armie rebelled against e him, and elected his nexte successoure Emperour, by whose order Gordianus was slayne. 27

Julius Philippus with his sonne reigned. vii. yeres and were bothe christened, but finally they were slayne by procurement of theyr next successour. 28

Decius with his sonne reigned. ii. yeres and. iii. monethes, a great persecutour of the christian religion. In his time the Gothes first assailed the Romaine empire, and passed the riuer of Danubie, where Decius and hys sonne mette with theym, and in the battayle were bothe slayne. 29

¶ Virius Gallus with his sonne reigned. ii. yeares and were slaine both of theyr owne army, as they were goyng against e Emilianus, that than woulde haue vsurped the Empyre. 30

Valerianus with his sonne Galienus, reigned. xv. yeres. But Valerian in the. v. yere was taken in battaile against Sapor kynge of Persia, who put oute his eies, and vsed hym alwaies for his foote stole whan he went to horsebacke: and Galienus became so vicious e, that he was faine to flee from Rome, and finally was slaine of hys owne men. 31

¶ Claudius elected by the senate, reigned one yere and ix. monethes, fought against the Gothes and Germaines, and discoumfited bothe theyr powers, but he sickened shortly and dyed: Wherupon the armie elected hys brother Quintillianus Emperoure, who within. xvii. dayes after was slayne. 32

¶ Aurelianus reigned.v.yeres and.vi.monethes, reco-
33 uered a noumber of regions that his predecessours had
lost, and was so prosperouse in the warres, that Eutro-
pius compareth him vnto Alexander the great, or Cæ-
sar. But at last he was slaine through craste of one
of hys owne souldiours.

¶ Tacitus reigned not fully.vi. monethes, but dyed of
34 the feuer. And than was his brother Florianus elected,
but he lived lytle more than.ii.monethes.

Probus reigned.vi.yeres.iiii.monethes, he recou-
35 red France, ouercame Saturninus and Proculus, that
had made theim selfes Emperours, and synallye was
slayne of hys owne souldiours.

36 ☞ Carus with his two sonnes reigned.ii.yeares, and
achieued diuers worthy enterprises. But his son Cari-
nus became so great a tyranne, and so vicious withal,
that he was compared to Nero, and at last slayne of his
owne souldyours.

¶ Diocliſianus reigned.xx.yeres, a greate persecutour
37 of the christian religion, because reason persuaded him,
that where as diuersitee of opinions contynued, there
coulde be no peace, but perill of commocyons. And
because he thought not him selfe able to rule the whole
empire alone, he ioygned Maximianus with hym: and
either of theim made a deputie, Diocliſianus toke Ga-
lerius and Maximianus toke Constantius. Finally
whan they had brought the empire to a good stay. Dio-
cliſian & Maximian both renounced their astates and
became private, though Maximian would gladly haue
taken it vpon him againe, to haue exalted his son Max-
entius. Wherfore his sonne in law Constantine caused

hym

hym to be slayne.

¶Galerius with Constantius reigned together.ii. ye- 38
res,and deuided the empire betwene theym: Galerius had the east parte,and Constantius the west.Constantius,husband to the Queene Eleyn,died in Yorke,and Galerius,beynge fallen sicke,slew hym selfe. Neuertheless er he dyed Maxentius had gotten the Romaine souldiours called Pretoriani on hys parte,and so usurped the name of Emperoure.Against whom Galerius first sent his capitaine Seuerus, and afterwards Licinius,but they preuailed not,for Maxentius contynued til the commyng of Constantine to Rome, who fought with him,and so discomfited him,that in fleing he was drowned in Tyber.

COnstantitinus the fyrste, reduced the Romaine astate to tranquilitee,and toke Licinius as 319.
compagnion in the empire:to whom he gaue hys owne syster in maryage. But as discorde is common amonge princes,so it happened, that Licinius rebelled against Cõstantine,and being ouercome,was deposed, and(as some write)slayne. So that Constantine reygned alone,the tyme of whose reygne in all was .xxv. yeres and.x.monethes. He was conuerted to the Christian fayth by bisshoppe Siluester,vnto whome (as the clergie holde opinion)he gaue his royal seate in Rome, wyth auctoritee to vse all the imperyall rytes and honours,and made him head of the Christian church:and therupon remoued his imperiall seate from Rome to Constantinople:whych citee he than had newly reedified. And though authours agree that he in deede builded Constantinople,and chaunged it from the auncient 318

name, which was Bizantium, yet many allow not Cõstantines donacion to Siluester to be true, but say, that some one of those bisshops of Rome longe after Siluester, that vsurped the name of Peters successour, to enlarge theyr creadite and auctozitee, and to mainteigne theyr pompe, inuented this donacion. So that thoughe Donacyon of constantine. Constantine oz his successours remoued theyr dwelling from Rome to Constantinople, yet did thei neuertheles reteigne continually bothe the dominion of Rome and also the name of the Romaine empyze, vntil the takyng of Rome by Alaricus kynge of the Gothes, betweene whose commynge and the reigne of Constantine were these. xr. emperours folowynge.

1 COnstantinus, Constantius, & Constans sons of the first Constãtine, and had the empire deuided
339 betwene thẽ. But Constantine, not cõtented with his parte, moued warre to Constans, & was slaine, and Constans at length was also slaine by treasõ of one of his owne capitaines named Magnẽtius: who vsurped the empire, and after many battailes, beyng ouercome by Conctantius, at last slewe him selfe. So that Constantius remaigned emperour alone, the time of whose reigne, with his bzetherne togethers, was. xriiii. yeres.

2 CIulianus surnamed Apostata, because being bozne a
363 Chzistian he became a painem, reigned. ii. yeres. First he rebelled agaynste hys vncle Constantius, that had made hym Cæsar, and after his death (beyng made emperour) he persecuted cruelly the chzistian religion, and at length was slayne in battaile againste the Perstans.

3 CIouinianus reigned. vii. monethes, restozed the faith
365 of Chzist, and was constreigned of necessitee to graunt

vnto

vnto the king of Persia a great part of Mesopotamia. Whych was the fyrst tyme that euer the Romaynes or any Emperoure consented to diminisshe the Romayne dominion.

¶ Valentinianus reigned.xii. yeares, and was a good Chrystian. 4 366

Valens reigned.iiii.yeres, fauoured muche the Arrian secte, and makyng warre agaynste the Gothes in Thracia, was discoumfyted, besieged, and burned. 5 378

Gratianus reigned.vi.yeres, and he with hys sonne were both slaine by treason of Maximus and Arbogastus theyr owne cappytaynes. 6 382

Theodosius reigned.xi.yeares, subdued the Gothes, and discoumfited the traitours Maximus and Arbogastus, that vsurped the Empyre, the fyrste of theim was slayne in the fyelde, the other for despayre slewe hym selfe: and so he reuenged hys predecessours death. 7 388

Archadius and Honorius reigned together.xiii.yeres, and than dyed Archadius. 8 407

¶ Honorius after his brothers death reigned.xv.yeres, in whose time Alaric, before named king of ỹ Gothes, prouoked through treasō of Stillicon themperours capitaine a Vandale borne, tourned his armie, that than was goyng into Fraunce, against the Emperour, & so ouerrennyng all Italie, at length besieged Rome, and toke it rather by famyne than force. And here beganne the manifest decaye of the Romayne empyre. For from this daye forward those Septentrional nacions, that is to wete, the Gothes, the Vãdales, the Hunes & Lumbardes, with dyuers others, triumphed not onely ouer Italy, but also ouer Fraunce, Spayne and parte of Af- 9 411 412

Gothes.
Vandales
Hunes
Lumbardes.

strike, in suche wyse, that though many of theyr armyes were discoumfited by diuers of the emperours capitaines and others: yet in processe of tyme they myngled theim selfes so with the other nacions, that they were no more knowen for strangers, but became Italians, Spanyardes, Frenchemen, and so forthe.

After this first destruction of Italy, wyth the takyng and spoylyng of Rome, the common people beganne to crie out, saiyng: that syns they lefte the woorshyppynge of theyr auncient gods, and had embraced the new faith of Christ, all these afflictions through vengeance of the gods were fallen on theim: so that many doubted whether it were good to beleue or not. But surely, the remouyng of the imperyal seate from rome to Constantinople, was the greatest occasion of the Romaine empyres decaye. For whan the emperours beganne to dwel in Greece, and to leaue Italy, now and than deuiding the empyre, one to rule in the orient, and an other in the occident, theyr auncient reputacio declined so much, that theyr owne priuate capitaines enterprysed many times not onely to rebel, but also to vsurpe the name of emperours. By reason whereof it came to passe, that within the space of .80. yeres there entred .vii. straunge kinges into Italie, with so puissaunt armies, that they put eyther the whole countrey, or at least a great part therof to swoorde and fyre.

Deuyding of the empyre.

1 First Alaricus, kynge of the Gothes before named,
412 after he had gotten rome by such kamyne, that many mothers did eate theyr owne children, ouerrane all Campaigne, the realme of Naples, and the lande of Brutii, and finally dyed in the citee of Cosenza.

After

¶After whom succeded his kynsman Athaulfus, that maried Placidia sister of the emperour Honorius, taken amonge the prisoners of Rome, so wise a woman, that whan hir husbande folowyng the trade of Alaricus, determined to goe to Rome, and to rase it to the earth, she with faire wordes dissuaded hym, and broughte hym to accorde with hir brother, in suche wyse that throughe the emperours procuremente, he with all his nacyon of Gothes lefte Italye, and wente to conquere Spayne, where in the citee of Barcelona he was of hys owne folke traiterously slayne.

The second was Auila kyng of the Hunes, who with an infinite number of people entred into Italy, and put tynge all to fyre and swoorde, passed ouer the countrey now called Lumbardy vnto the Appenine hilles, and as farre as Florence, whiche he rased to the earth, not withstandynge it was yelded vnto hym wythoute resistence. But finally as he was goynge to Rome, entendyng to do likewise there: Leo the firste, than bysshop of the same, met him by the way, and so entreated him, that ceasyng from further crueltee, he wythdrewe hym and all his into Hungarye, where not longe after he died of a sodeine death. 2 447

¶Thirdlie Gensericus entred into Italie with a great number of Vandales throughy this occasyon. 3 458

Theodosius the.ii. assigned his cousen Valentinian to rule the weast parte of the empire, who died wythin fewe yeares: so that Maximianus a Romayne, by force toke on him the occidētal empire, and maried Eudossa late wife of the same Valētinian: who disdeining thys Maximian, practised secretly with Gensericus then reigning

gning in Affrica, & did so muche, that he came to Rome, toke it by force, slewe Maximian, spoyled and burned the citee, and finallie for a worthy reward, led Eudossa and hir doughter prysoners wyth hym at hys retourne into Affrike.

¶ The fourth was Biorgus kyng of the Alani, afterwardes called Alemani, who entred into Italie by the way of Trent, & ouerranne all Istria, La Marca Triuisana, and a greate parte of Lumbardye, till at last by Seuerianus one of the Emperours capitaines, he was fought withall, slayne and his host discomfyted.

4 463

¶ The.v. was Odoacrus kyng of the Eruli, that sometime were of the coũtrey of Valachia beyond the riuer of Danubie, who with an infinite number of mẽ twise in.xiiii. yere ouerran all Italie, callyng him selfe kynge therof, tyl the Emperoure Zenon sente Theodoricus king of the Gothes against him, who fought with him, dyscomfited all his hoste, and finally slewe hym.

5 471

The.vi. was this Theodoricus hym selfe, who by the Emperoure Zenon was inuested kynge of Italye, in the title wherof he caused muche slaughter and destruction er euer he banquisshed Odoacrus, but at laste he estabilisshed his royall seate in Rauenna, where he reigned.25. yeres, and dyed of the flure, leauynge behynde hym a perpetuall fame of his worthynesse and vertue.

6 481

The.vii. was Gundebalde kynge of Borgoyne, who with a great multytude passed the Alpes, ouerranne a great parte of Lumbardie, and wyth an infinyte number of prisoners, and a wonderfull praye of richesse returned into his owne countrey.

7 486

Nowe ye shall vnderstande, that after Theodoriche

was

was made kyng of Italy by the emperours consent, his doughter Amalasuntha folowed in successiō of the dominion, who after the death of hir owne son Atalaricus, accepted hir cousin Theodat⁹ for companiō in hir kyngdome, but he rendring yll for good, found meanes not onelye to exile hir, but also to make hir dye: to the entente he myght reygne alone. Which vnkind dealyng so muche offended his owne Gothish nacion, that they elected another kynge in Rome, named Vitigius, who shortlie caused Theodatus to be slaine by treason, and yet he hym selfe prospered not longe after. For er he had fully reigned .v. yeres, Bellisarius, a capitaine sent by the emperour Iustinian, recouered al Italy, besieged Vitigius in Rauenna, and finally toke him prisoner, and so led him to Constantinople.

Whan the Gothes had a litel renewed their strength, they made Totila theyr king, ouerranne all Italy, and twise toke the citee of rome by force, reigning ouer the whole countrey .ix. yeares, till Narses, an other of the emperours capitaines came puissātly into Lumbardy, and in a sore foughten battayle slewe Totila, wyth a greate number of hys nacyon. 542

Notwithstandinge that dyscoumfiture the Gothes a fresshe chose theim another kyng, called Teia, a verais valiaunt man, that wonderfully defended his dominion againste the power of Narses: but finally in playne battaile Narses slew hym, and so discoumfited hys armye, that the Gothes were constreigned to submytte theim selfes vnto the emperours obeisaunce, and from that tyme forth (beynge borne of two or three descentes in Italye) they were no more knowen for Gothes, 553

but taken for Italians, and there ended the Gothishe name: Whiche from the comyng of Theodoricus, before named, had reigned in Italy the space of. 72. yeres

¶ A meruailouse matter to see the instabilitee of these worldely thynges: that the Romaine empyre, whyche so many yeres before had triumphed in ryches & welth ouer the whole worlde, should now be subiecte vnto all calamitee and affliction . Rome it selfe . iiii. tymes taken by force within the space of. 140. yeares, the walles in many places throwē to the earth, the inestimable goodly buildinges of temples and palaices burned and spoyled, the infinite treasures of money, iewelles, and other ornamentz put to sacke, or hidde vnder the groūd by the owners, where it could neuer be founde: neither man woman nor childe spared of the enemyes furiouse swoorde, and finallye brought to that case, that it was more than an whole yere desolate without any creature to dwel in it, other then the wylde beastes . And not Rome alone, but also the moste parte of all the notable cities of Italie were thus afflicted for the tyme.

Rome destroyed, iiii. tymes.

¶ But whan the Gothish nacion was thus subdued, Italie returned to the obedience of the empyre, and was gouerned by the forenamed Narses, by the space of. 17. yeres, til after the death of the emperour Iustinian, Iustine the secounde of that name succeded, whose wyfe
566 Sophia, thorough instigacīō of some gentilmen of the court (that enuied the vertue & glory of Narces) kendled hir husband the emperour so muche, that he reuoked Narses from the rule of Italy, with iniurious wordes of the empresse, that had bosted, she would set hym amongest hir women to spinne and to make cloth, whi-

che she sayde was meeter for hym than to rule suche a countrey. But the noble hert of Narses conceiued so greate an vnkyndnesse of this, that (after he had answeared hir) he woulde spinne suche a clothe, as neither she nor hir vile housbande should be hable to weare out, he secretly sēt into Pannonia to Alboinus king of the Longobardi, now called Lumbardes, exhortinge him to come into Italie: howe be it, ere he came, Narses repented hym, and did what he could to haue letted it: but as he trauailed therin (being come to Rome) with John the thyrde bishop of the same, hauyng now delayed the Lumbardes coming a few yeres, he died, had his body caried to Constātinople, & there was honorably buried.

¶ This Narses with Belisarius before named, were two of the noblest capitaines that euer serued the Romayne Emperours.

¶ Incontinently after the death of Narses, the forenamed Alboinus, with an infynite number of men women and childern, entred into Italy, & occuppyed all the countrey betwene the Alpes & the Appenine hylles, namyng it after theyr name Lumbardy. And notwithstanding that the emperours for the space of .80. yeres made continuall warres agaynst theym by theyr generalles, whom thei called Exarkes, yet could they neuer so abate and banquisshe the glorie of those Lumbardes, but that sometimes they wolde right wel be reuenged, so that in effecte they reigned ouer Lumbardye aboue .200. yeres, tyl the coming of Charlemaine, who in fauour of the Romayne bishops, warred against Desiderius last kyng of the sayde Lumbardes, toke and ledde him prisoner into Fraunce. 569 Desyderius.

In all whych tyme of the Lumbardes prosperitee, there reigned amongest them .23. kinges, whose names hereafter folowe.

1 Alboinus, slaine by procurement of his wife Ro, samunda.

2 Dapho, slayne of hys owne people for hys tyrannie. After whose death the Lumbardes wolde haue no kyng, but in maner of a common wealth elected .30 Dukes, who occupied all Italie, Rome and Naples excepted, and so contynued the space of .xii. yeares, till the Lumbardes, being weery of theyr gouernaunce, returned againe to the election of a kynge.

3 ¶ Antharis surnamed Flauius, toke to wife Theodolinda, the kynges doughter of Bauarie, a woman that by persuasion of Gregorye the firste, bisshop of Rome, secretly embraced the christian faith, and after conuerted hir nexte housband to the same.

4 ¶ Agilulphus Duke of Turine, maried Theodolinda after the death of hir other housbande, and so beynge made kyng, through his wiues procurement, he became a Christian.

5 ¶ Adoaldus, sonne of Agilulphus, beyng very young, reigned about .x. yeares, vnder the gouernaunce of hys mother Theodolinda, and after hir death, was driuen oute of his realme.

6 ¶ Arioldus, of whom I fynde nothing notable.

7 ¶ Rotharius, a valiaunt warriour, and so wel learned withal, that he prescribed lawes vnto the Lumbardes, who from theyr coming into Italy tyl that time (whyche was about .70. yeres) had no written law.

8 Rodoaldus sonne of Rotharius was slaine by one that

founde

founde hym in adoultrie with his wife.

Arithpertus, through feigned flight obteyned a notable victorie against the frenchemen. 9

Gundibertus, sonne vnto Arithpertus, contended so long with his brother for the dominion, that at last thei were bothe chased awaye. 10

Grimoaldus, toke the affate from the children of Arithpert, and held long warre wyth the emperour Cõstantine the thyrd, & so ouercame Theodorus the Exarke, that the emperour in a great rage came him selfe with a myghtye armie into Italye, and after he had ouerranne the countrey of Puglia, and taken the citee of Luceria, which he put to fyre and swoorde, at last he besieged Beneuento, where hapned one notable thing worthy the rehersal. 11

Romoaldus sonne to the king Grimoaldus was than within Beneuento, and valiãtly defended the citee against the Greekes, sending woorde by a foster father of his named Gensualdus, vnto hys father, that vnlesse he wolde shortly sende succours, the citee must needes be taken. Gensualde did his message, and retournyng wyth answeare was taken of the enemies, and brought before the emperour. Where beynge straightly examyned, he confessed, that Grimoalde withal the power of Lumbardy was departed from Pauia, & came to reyse the siege: and that he hym selfe was the messenger of hys commyng. Wherfore the emperour hoping incontinently to haue the towne, and so to departe before the comyng of Grimoalde, partely with threatenynge, and partly with fayre offers, persuaded Gensualde, that beyng brought before the towne, he should shewe Romo-

alde, how his father through other businesse of importaunce could not than succoure hym. Gensualde promisinge so to doe, was brought to the walles, and called for Romoalde, who forth with appeared. Romoalde (sayd he) thy father is here at hand, with a puissaunt armye to succour the. I lefte hym passynge the riuer of Sanguine: be good to my wyfe and children, for I am but dead, and so it proued, for hys head was striken of, and for despite with an engine throwen into the towne. Wherupon Constantine with his armie retyred to Naples, and from thense to Rome, where he was moste honourable receyued of Bishop Vitellian, withall the clergy and nobilitee. But he in recompence of that honour, fell to robbyng and spoylynge of all the goodlye thynges that ye founde there, aswell marble, brasse and peinture, as other richesse, insomuch that he toke the tile of brasse, wherwith the temple of Pantheon was couered, and shipped all that he gotte. So that Rome in a maner suffered more hurt and spoyle in .vii. daies that he remaigned there, than it did by any ouerthrow from the fyrst comyng of the Lumbardes. And yet he enioyed not, for retourning towardes Greece he was slaine by hys owne men in the citee of Syracusa: and all those precious thynges taken afterwardes by the Saracines, and caried to Alexandria in Aegypt, where manye of theim maye be seen at this daye. But to retourne vnto my purpose. Grimoaldus dyed of to mache sreignyng his arme after he had been letten bloudde.

12 ¶ Garmaldus, sonne of Grimoaldus, reigned .iii. monethes onely and dyed.

Partha-

¶ Partharus, soonne of Arithpert before named, that
from his youthe had been in continuall exile, retour- 13
ned home, and was restored to the kyngdome.
Iunipertus or Compertus, sonne of Partharus succe-
ded after the death of his father. 14
Laimpertus, or Luitpertus, sonne of Iunipertus, be-
ynge a childe, had not reigned vnder the tuicion of A- 15
sprandus fullye. viii. monethes; but that Raimpertus
Duke of Turine rebelled, and in plaine battayle ouer-
came Asprandus, and so vsurped the kyngdome. 16
¶ Raimpertus reigned not fully a yere. 17
¶ Arithpertus, son of Raimpertus, was much dessur-
bed by the forenamed Luitpertus, but at lasse he slewe
him in plaine battaile, & in maner destroyed the whole
house of Asprandus. Neuertheless in the. xi. yeare of
his reigne Asprandus, with helpe of the kyng of Baua-
rie, retourned puissantly into Italy, fought with Arith
pert, and so discomfited him, that in his flight passynge
the riuer of Tesino, he was drowned, by reason he had
ouerladen him selfe with golde. 18
Asprandus reigned but. iii. monethes and dyed. 19
¶ Luitprandus, son of Asprandus, was a great warri-
our, insomuch that after he had gotten Rauenna, and
many other cities from the emperours Exarke, at last
he besieged Rome. Neuertheless at the intercessyon
of his gossippe the frenche kynge, he leauied his syege,
and restored to the Romains those castels and townes
that he before had taken from theim.
Aldeprandus, nephewe of Luitprandus, lyued not 20
fully. v. monethes, and dyed without issue.
Rachis or Lachis, as some cal him, Duke of Turine, 21
was

was next kynge, who after manye gyftes made to the churche of Rome, whan he had reigned. vi. yeares, lefte his crowne, and became amonke.

22 Ariftolphus, brother to Rachis, contrarie to his brothers maners, made fo fharpe warre to the Churche of Rome, that Stephen then byfhop, called Pepine the French king twife into Italy againft him, & conftreygned him to obey the Romayne See, and at laft beynge on a day a huntyng, he died fodeinelye of an appoplexi.

23 Defiderius laft kynge of the Lumbardes, profpered longe tyme in hys warres, and fpecyally agaynfte the church of Rome, which he fo conftreigned, that Adryan the firft than bifhop there, was faine to cal king Charlemaine of Fraunce into Italie to fuccoure hym: who 779 at his comyng not onelie reftored vnto the churche all thofe citees that were taken away, but alfo led Defiderius, his wyfe and Children prifoners wyth hym into Fraunce, furnyfhinge the whole regyon of Lumbardy with officers and rulers of his owne nacion.

The ende of the Lumbardes reigne. Thus ended the reigne of the Lumbardes, which had continued more than. 200. yeres.

It is nowe to be vnderftanded, that fhortly vpon the comyng of Alboinus into Italy, diuers citees and prouinces of the fame (as they ftrengthe & tyme did ferue theim) vfed theyr owne libertees, and leauyng the imperial lawes, made newe orders and officers amongeft them felfes. Wherefore the emperour Iuftinus fent a general of his into Italie, named Longinus, ordeining him to be called Exarke, whiche fhould be chiefe ouer all other officers.

This Exarke paffing by Rome, came to Rauenna, and there

there kept his astate, appoynctyng the gouernaunce of Rome to a Duke: so that many yeres after there were no mo Consulles made: wbych office together with the most parte of all the other Romayne magistrates, kept theyr auncient forme vnto that tyme, notwithstanding that the emperours had taken from theym al maner of auctoritee, except the onely gouernaunce of the citee.

¶ From Longinus vnto the comyng of kyng Pepine into Italie, the emperours helde in maner contynuall warre with the kinges of Lũbardy by theyr Exarkes: but after Pepine had ouercome the kinge Aristolphe (who before had subdued the Exarke of Rauenna) he gaue the lands of that Exarcate to the church: A great part wherof the bishoppe of Rome holdeth to this day.

¶ And because that from the tyme of Honorius hitherwardes I cannot finde that any emperoure had quyet dominion ouer Italy, or was at any time residẽt there, I therfore omitte to reherse the emperours names that haue reigned syns, and woull conclude, how by Charle maines time, the empire that before had none other title than of Rome. (wherof it toke originall) was vtterlye deuided in two: Oriental and Occidental, the occasion wherof was this.

¶ Leo the. iii. successour vnto Adrian byshop of Rome, was chased away by the Romaines, and fledde to kyng Charlemaine for succour, who not onely restored hym to his bishoprieche, but also for a more terroure to the Romaines, with a greate power came to Rome in hys owne person: where on Christmas day, for a reward of 801
his trauaile, the bishoppe and clergie proclaymed hym Emperour.

Some wryte, that Charlemayne was very loth to take it vpon him, til he had practised first with Yirena, thã Empresse of Constãtinople, and after with Nicefozus nexte emperour folowynge, and obteyned bothe theyr consentes.

In effect Charlemayne was crowned, toke on him the empire: and his son Pepine was entitled king of Italye. And after they had attempted to chase the greekes cleane out of the same, they accozded with Nicefozus to diuide the east empyze from the west, limittinge the Duchie of Beneuento to be as a confine oz bound betwene them both.

Election of the Emperour.

¶ And thus, sens Charlemaine, the occidentall empire continued vnder the frenche dominion, till Gregozye the. v. bishop of Rome, transpozted the election of the emperour vnto the pzinces of Germanie, whiche to this day endureth. Like as on the other side the Dzientall empire continued in Constantinople in the handes of Chzystyans, till Machomet the seconde of that name emperour of the Turkes, toke the citee by fozce, slewe the emperour Sigismonde, and consequently enioyed the whole Greekish empyze, as his successours doe vnto thys daye.

The

The description of Rome.

THynkynge to fynde a greate contentacion in the syght of Rome, because that amõgest all the citees of the worlde none hath bene more famous then it, I dispoſed my ſelfe to go thyther. But whan I came there and beheld the wonderfull maieſtie of buildinges that the onely rootes thereof do yet repreſent, the huge temples, the infinite great palaices, the vnmeaſurable pilers, moſte parte of one peece, fine marble, and well wrought, the goodlye arches of triumphe, the baynes, the conductes of water, the Images as well of braſſe as of marble, the Obeliſkes, and a noumber of other lyke thinges, not to be founde agayne throughoute an whole worlde: imaginynge wythall, what maieſtee the citee might be of, whan all theſe thynges flouryſhed, Than didde it greeue me to ſee the onelye iewel, myrrour, mayſtres, and beautye of this worlde, that neuer had her lyke, nor (as I thinke) neuer ſhall, lye ſo deſolate and diſfigured, that there is no lamentable caſe to be hearde, or lotheſome thinge to be ſeene, that maye be compared to a ſmall parte of it. Neuertheleſſe, when I remembred agayne the occaſions, wherof theſe glorious thinges haue growen, what noumbers of warres the Romaynes haue maynteygned, with infinite bloudſhedding, deſtructions of whole countreys, rauiſhmentes of chaſt womẽ, ſacke, ſpoile, tributes, oppreſſion

pzeſſion of common welthes, and a thouſande other tyrannies, without the which the Romaines could neuer haue achieued the perfection of ſo manye wonders as mine eye dyd there beholde: Than perceiued I, howe iuſt the iudgement of god is, that hath made thoſe antiquitees to remayne as a foule ſpoyle of the Romayne pryde, and for a witneſſe to the worldes ende of their tyranny. So that I wote not whether of theſe two is greater, either the glory of that fame, that the Romaines purchaſed wyth theyr wonderfull conqueſtes: or their preſente myſerable eſtate, with the deformitee of theyr antiquities.

Of the ryuer of Tyber.

The riuer of Tyber, whiche renneth throughe Rome, deuideth Tuſcane and Champaigne ſo that Tranſtyberim, and the Vaticane, wherin ſtandeth S. Peters churche, with the biſhops palaice and caſtel Saint Angelo, are in Tuſcane: and the reſt on the other ſyde of the water, which is very Rome in deede, is in Champaigne.

The diſtance betwene the citee and the ſea called Mare Tirrhenum, is .xv. myles. And all be it, the ryuer be greate, deepe, and large enoughe for an hauen, from the ſea to Rome, yet moſt commonly the ſhips can come no neerer than Oſtia, which is .xii. myles from Rome: partly by reaſon of the ſtreame that renneth very ſwift and partelye by reaſon of the wonderfull quantitee of madde, that being brought downe with the ſwift courſe of the water, lieth commonly at the mouth of the hauen.

So

So that all the merchandise, vittails, and other thinges that come by shippe, are vyscharged at Ostia into certaine smal vessels, and so brought to Rome, either drawen by corde, or rowed vp by force of ores.

¶ The head or first spring of Tyber is in the Appenine hilles, somewhat higher than the heade of the riuer Arno, that renneth through Florence: and er euer it come at Rome, it receiueth .42. other riuers: So that it is no meruaile, thoughe it be depe, specially in Rome and to the seawardes, where it appeareth, that the naturall bredth of it is restreigned: & by force of stronge bankes made much narower than his aũcient course hath ben. The heade of Tyber.

¶ Of the Brydges.

Vpon this ryuer of Tyber in Rome be. iiii. brydges, the first and fairest is it that passeth from the citee vnto castel. S. Angelo, vnder the which the riuer comyng from the North towardes the south, entreth into the citee. And is commonly called Ponte di Sant'Angelo, or del Castello. Ponte di S. Angelo Ponte del Castello

The second is Ponte Sisto otherwyse called Ponterotto, a very goodly bridge, that leadeth from the strete now called Iulia, vnto the foote of the hylle auncientely called Janiculus in Transtyberim. Ponte Sisto Ponte rotto,

The thirde is called Ponte de l'isola, Ponte di San Bartholomeo, or Ponte di quatuor Capora, whych passeth from the herte of the citee throughe the Ilande Tyberina into Transtyberim. Ponte de l'isola Ponte di S. Bertholomeo Ponte di quatuor Capora

The fourth next to the goyng forth of the ryuer out of the citee at the South is called Ponte di Santa Maria Ponte di S. Maria

¶ But to satisfye them that be learned, I thinke meete to rehearse here the names of the .viii. bridges Sublicius, Palatinus, Fabricius, Cestius Ianuclensis, Vaticanus, Elius, & Milvius: & to declare where they stode.

Sublicius. First Sublicius, whiche Horatius alone defended in the warres of Porsena, was at the foote of the hill Auentine, where nowe is no bridge at all, & first it was made of timber, afterwardes of stone by Emilius Lepidus, for the whiche he was surnamed Lapideus, but finally it was made of marble by Antonius Pius, and nowe decayed to the foundations: wherof parte are yet to be seene.

Palatinus The second palatinus, is now called di santa maria.

Fabritius Cestius ¶ The thirde and fourth, fabricius, nere the citee side, and Cestius, on the side of Transtyberim, are the two bridges that passe through the Iande Tyberina.

¶ The .v. Ianuclensis, is nowe called ponte sisto.

Ianuclensis Vaticanus. The .vi. Vaticanus, is decated to the foundacion, parte whereof is seene against the hospitall di san spirito.

Elius ¶ The .vii. Elius, is now called del Castello.

Milvius ¶ The .viii. Milvius, is .ii. mile northewardes oute at the gate called del popolo, in the way to Tuscane: and is called at this daye ponte molle.

¶ Of the walles.

The circuite of ỹ citee about by the walles, as Plinie wryteth, was in his time, xx. miles: and Flauius Vopiscus sayeth, that the emperour Aurelius .200. yeres before the coming of the Gothes, enlarged the circuite of Rome to .50. miles: whether these

authours

authours included the suburbes I can not tel: but ones there can be seene no signe or token of any walles, that shuld conteine so much compasse: nor yet of the walles that Liuie mentioneth, should be made of square stone For the walles now about Rome are of bricke, & in my iudgement passe not. xiiii. miles in compasse. Nor I can not perceiue, either by mine owne eye, or by writing of authours, or yet by reporte, that euer the walles were of greater circuite then they be at this present. It is euident, that manye partes of the same wall haue been throwen to the earth by diuers enemies, & repayred agayne. For notwythstandynge it be builded of bricke, yet dooeth it shewe such an antike mateſtie (hauinge .365. towres agreable with the noumbre of dayes in the yeare) that he who seeth it, must needes confesse, it could neuer be buylded but in time of the Romaines glory. Perchaunce some will meruayle, howe bricke shoulde so longe continue: but theyr bricke, whether it be longe of good makynge, or of the heate of the sonne that dryeth muche better than wyth vs, is wonderfull durable. For there be manye buyldinges in Rome of bricke, that haue continued these. 1000. yeares and more and yet to this houre are nothing worne or decayed. In deede manye gates of the citee are of square stone, wrought after the moste antike facion: so that it is not incredible, as Liuie writeth, that ỹ walles haue bene of square stone, but it should not seeme so, because that in making of a newe wall in the same place, it is to be supposed, the builders would haue vsed the olde square stone, rather than bricke.

Of the gates.

Plinie writeth, that in his time were .xxx. gates open, and .viii. closed, but because he hathe not written theyr names, I woull not trauaile to trie what they were. For I can finde but .xvi. that are vsed: Of whiche .iiii. are in the Vaticane, that many yeares after Plinie, was walled by Leo the .iiii. bysshop of Rome, for defence of hys owne palaice and of Sainct Peters churche.

Porta de popolo. Flumentana. Flaminia. P. Pinciana. Collatina. P. Salaria. Quirinalis. Aegonalis. P. di sant' Agnese. Viminalis Figulensis Numentana. P. di San Lorenzo Tiburtina Exquilina P. Maggiore. Neuia Labicana Prenestina P. di. San Hioanni Celimontana. Asinaria P. Latina

Fyrst nerte vnto the comyng downe of Tyber on the northsyde, is the gate called Porta del popolo, whych auncientlye hathe had diuers names, as Flumentana & Flaminia of the way Flaminia that wēt out therat.

Than coming about towardes the East, the next gate is called Pinciana, sometime Collatina.

The .iii. Salaria, auncientlye called Quirinalis, or Aegonalis.

The .iiii. Porta di Sant' Agnese, sometime Viminalis, Figulensis and Numentana.

The .v. Porta di San Lorenzo, sometyme called Tybertina after some authours, and after other Exquilina, though Andreas Fuluius affirmeth playnely Exquilina to be betwene this and the nerte gate.

The .vi. Porta maggiore was sometyme called Neuia, Labicana and Prenestina.

The .vii. Porta di San Hioanni hath ben called Celimontana, and Asinaria, by reason it lyeth towardes the realme of Naples, that bredeth many asses.

The .viii. Porta Latina hath not chaunged name, or if it be chaunged, the auncyente name cannot be knowen nowe.

The

The.ix. Porta di San Sebastiano, was somtime called Appia and Capena, and after most opinions was also called Triumphalis.

P. di S. Sebastiano
Appia.
Capena
Triumphalis.

¶ The.x. Porta di San Paolo, was sometyme called Trigemina. All whiche.x. gates are on the Champaigne side of the riuer.

P. di San Paolo
Trigemina.

The.xi. Porta portese, or Porta di Ripa.

P. Portese
di Ripa

The.xii. Porta di San Pancratio, sometime called Aurelia.

P. di S. Pancratio
Aurelia

¶ The.xiii. Porta del Torrione.

P. del Torrione

¶ The.xiiii. Porta portusa, on the toppe of the hill behynde sainct Peters.

P. Portusa.

The.xv. hathe diuers names, as Porta di Beluedere, di San Piero, del Giardino, or di Santo Peregrino and is hard vnder the bishops palaice.

P. di Beluedere
di San Piero.
del Giardino.
di. S Peregrino

The.xvi. porta del Castello, somtime Posterula. lieth vnder Castel Sant'Angelo, and serueth to go into the medowes. As for those auncient names, Carmentalis, Pãdana, Mugonia, Queruetulana, Iauernalis, Ruduſculana, Rhuttumena, Carthularia, and diuers others, which as I suppose were old gates, that lost theyr places as the walles were enlarged: I could neuer learne where they should be, and therfore doe beleue they haue bene conuerted to the vse of other buildynges.

P. del Castello
Posterula

These gates and walles about Rome are not strenge, nor yet fortified with rampiers of earth or otherwise to defende shotte of artillerie, and in manye places are so decaied, that to assaute there nedeth not muche batterye. Many of the gates haue ben excedynge fayre, but like as moste notable thynges there be decayed: so are these rather a figure of theyr antiquytee, thanne anye

thynge elles.

☞Of the.vii.hilles.

THe .vii. hilles, wheron rome standeth, are but of a smal height, standing a rewe vpon the riuer side.

Auentinus. The greatest of theim Eastwardes is called Auentinus, wherin was the caue of Cacus the giaũt that Hercules slewe: and the fountaine, where the Goddes Picus & Faunus were taken by the policye of Numa, who geuyng theim wine in stede of water, made theim dronke, and so toke theim a slepe. And albeit, that on this hill haue ben many goodly edifices, as the temples of Matuta, Diana, Minerua, Lucina, Liberta, wyth diuers others, yet at this daye there is nothynge to be seen, not so much as a token of Claudius notable conducte, that Frontinus & Cassiodorus treate so muche vpon. For there is nowe none other buildynge, but the monasteries of Santa Sabina, and Sant' Alesso, with a fewe other litle churches. The reste is either couered with rubbel, or occupyed with vines.

Capitolinus. The next hille, fyrst called Tarpeius, after Capitolinus, and nowe Campidoglio, was the principal place of the cites, such as for example the yelde haul is in london. For thither came all they that happened to be receyued with triumphe: and amongest all the buildynges of the worlde Capitolium was compted the goodliest. For Cassiodorus sayeth. It is a greate wonder to » beholde the market place of Traiane: But to clymbe » vp into the capitoll, & there is the excellencie of all hu- » mayne wyttes to be regarded. Cicero calleth it the

many

many places the habitacion of the goddes: and Virgile the golden Capitoline. Wherof at this day remayneth no moze but an olde house called the Senate, & the churche of Araceli. They say, that the temple of Iupiter optimus maximus was there, where the churche of San Saluator in maſsimi is now: and the temple of Ianus cuſtos, where the pzisons be now called La Cācellaria. But of theyz antiquitee appeareth at thys daye not so much as the bare foundacions.

Next vnto Campidoglio is the hil Palatinus, on the whiche the emperours, kings, consuls, and other chiefe officers had theyz palaices, beſides many famous temples that haue been built ther, wherof remaineth none other now but the olde ruines, and a churche of saincte Nicolas not yet finiſshed. Palatinus.

Here is to be noted, that these. iii. hilles Auentinus, Capitolinus, and Palatinus were onelye closed wyth walles by Romulus: so that Rome was nothinge so great in circuite at the fyrſte as it is nowe. But as the people multiplied, so the other hilles were taken in: as he that readeth Liuie shall well perceiue. In effecte, settynge the rubbel and olde monſtruouse foundacions aparte, Rome (as touchyng these. iii. hilles) is retourned deserte, pasture, and vineyardes, as it was before the fyrſt foundacions.

Next is the hil Celius, wherin is seen vnto this daye a part of the auncīēt Romaine maieſtee, by the mercuailouse buildynges that yet remaigne, not whole, but so that the magnificence thereof maye be comprehended: as the Amphitheatrum, now called Colliseo, the conduites and baines, the great palaice, and a noumber of Celius.

fayre churches, tranſlated from olde temples.

Exquilius

Next vnto this Exquilius, which as Varro ſayeth, are two hylles, but they ſeme not ſo to me. In this part are Therme Dioclesiani, the pilier of Adrian the toure de i Conti, Trofei de Caio Mario, the gardeins and toure of Mecenates ſo muche renoumed, wyth diuers other thinges, and is well enhabited.

Viminalis
Quirinalis

Finally the hilles, Viminalis and Quirinalis, lye ſo together, that I coulde not deuide theim: But by eſtymacion and repoꝛt they begin at the gate of S. Agnes, and ſtretche downe by Monte Cauallo vnto Tyber, in which are fewe notable thynges to be ſeene, excepte Monte Cauallo, Therme Conſtantiniane, Torre delle militie, and a fewe others.

Tranſtyberim

Now that parte of the citee that is called Tranſtyberim, is diuided in two, that is to wete the Vaticane and Ianiculum.

Vaticane

The Vaticane was walled aboute by Leo the .iiii. byſhop, and called Citta Leonia after hys owne name, and is wel knowē from Ianiculum, becauſe that going from the one to the other, it behoueth to paſſe thꝛoughe the gate called Septimiana, ſometymes called Subtus Ianū, oꝛ Fontinalis: wherby it is euident, that the Vaticane oꝛ Borgo San Piero (as they now cal it) was neuer any part of Rome vntil Leos time. But Ianiculum in Tranſtiberim was aſſigned vnto Rome by Ancus Martius .iiii. kynge of the Romaynes, and is eſtymed to be the ſame citee, that the god Ianus builded and dwelled in, like as many wꝛite Saturnia, that Saturne builded, was againſte it on the other ſide of the water, in the place that we call nowe Campidoglio: thoughe

Porta Septimiana.
Subtus Ianum.
Fontinalis
Ianiculum

ſome

some holde opinion it shoulde be at Ouuri.

¶ Of the conduites of water.

FRontinus writeth, that for the space of 441. yeres after the edification of Rome, the Romaines vsed none other but the water of Tyber, or of such welles and springes as were founde within the citee. But from the tyme of Appius Claudius they haue had so much water brought by cõduites vpon arches, through the mountaines, and some vnder ground, that no citee of all the worlde coulde be better serued. And the maner was this. When they had taken a spryng, and had brought the water of it to the citee, than was there a place made to receiue it, closed about with walles like a castel: from the whiche, pypes were laied to serue aswell the common people in the open stretes, as also the nobility, and such as were hable to haue water in their owne houses. And so (as Strabo writeth) it semed that riuers ranne haboundauntly through the citee, and almost euery house had chanelles and conduites with cesternes to preserue the water. For Marcus Agrippa in one yere caused. 700. pondes. 105. fountaignes, and 130. castels to be made, besides a number of other goodly edifices for the maintenaunce of these fresh waters: amongest which I shal recite the principallest.

¶ Fyrst the water called Appia was conueyghed vpon high arches of stone out of the Lucullane territory the space of. viii. miles, and brought in betwene the hill Auentine and the hill Celius: but now there remayneth nothing of theim that can be seen. Aqua Appia.

Aqua Martia. Anfeia. Traiana

An other, Aqua Martia, sometime called Anfeia, lastly Traiana, came out of ỹ lake Fucinus, & serued principally to drinke, where most part of the rest serued for other vses: and this was brought by mine through the mountaines and by arches aboue ground .xviii. miles.

Claudia.

Aqua Claudia was brought .35. miles from .ii. fountaines Ceruleus, and Curtius, part of the waye vpon wonderful arches of square stone, whiche are yet to be seene bothe within and many miles without the citee.

Plin li. 36 nat. histor.

Plinie sayeth, that the conueighaunce of this water did cost .555. thousande Sextertia, whiche make aboue .lx. thousand talentes, and rekenyng euery talent at .130. li. sterlyng (whiche I thinke was the least) the summe amounteth to .viii. millions and .viii. hundred thousande poundes of oure money: whiche as it seemeth a summe impossible to be gathered together, and more incredible to be spent in one worke, so is the maiestee of that buildyng wonderful, that in maner I am abasshed to write the trouth thereof, for I woulde not haue beleued it my selfe, if I had not seene it. And Frontinus writeth, that these arches in some places were .109. foote high.

Auiena.

Than was there the olde and the new Auiena, the one wherof was brought .xlii. miles of, and at lengthe ioygneth with the water Claudia, and is receiued vppon those arches before mencioned.

Diuers other waters there were, to long here to reckon, because of all these waters that were wont to come to Rome, can be found no moe at this day but one, called Triuiana, and auncientlye named Virginia, which renneth vnder the groũd by the gate Pinciana, & sourgeth vnder ỹ hill called Mõte degli hortuli: frõ whẽce

Triuiana Virginia

it is

it is cõueighed abrode to serue al partes of the citee, because in rome ther is none other good water to drinke.

Opinions of the decay of the antiquitees.

¶ Of the decay not onely of these conduites, but also of the other antiquitees be dyuers opinions. Some affyrme, that the Gothes, the Vandales, and the other barbarouse nacions, that so often destroied Rome, were causers and doers of it. Some other ascribe the faulte to tyme, mother and consumer of all thynges. Other saye, that nother the barbarouse nacions, nor yet tyme ought to be blamed for it, but rather the gredy beastlynesse of theim, that bothe within the citee and without, regarded not to spoyle those noble antiquitees, to garnisshe and beautifie therwith theyr priuate buildinges.

¶ Of the Thermes.

YOu shall vnderstande, that the Romaynes vsed oftentimes to bathe theim selfes, wherfore at the first, priuate men made them stewes or hotehouse of theyr owne: But afterwardes (as a thyng necessarye for the common wealthe) The Emperours gaue them selfes to the makynge of these Therme. Of whyche Blondus rekeneth.xii. & Fuluius sateth.xviii. namyng them Agrippine, Neroniane, Alexandrine, Titiane Diocleſiane, and the reste. These were not onelye common baines for washing, but also sumptuouse haules, goodly chaumbers, faire walkyng places, & euerye other gallaunt buildyng, that mighte serue for the commoditee of theym that thither resorted. The pauementes were of fyne marble wrought in colours, the vaultes sustayned on riche pillers of porfirie and fineſt

mar-

marble of one peece, A noumber of hotehouses in euery Therme, some seueral, & some common, with lodging? accordyng, and offices assigned for the seruice of theim that would eate there, besides all other pleasures that were to be imagined. Insomuche that the emperours them selfes many tymes woulde come thither openly, and be washed in the common houses. For it is writen that the emperour Adrian entred on a day into one of the baynes, and findyng an olde souldiour there rubbinge him selfe againste the marble stones, asked hym why he dyd so? The souldioure aunswered, because he had no seruaunt. This aunsweare so much pleased the Emperoure, that streight waye he not onely gaue thys souldiour a seruaunte, but also honestlye wherwith to mainteigne hym. Throughe the fame wherof the nexte day whan the emperour came to the same baine, diuers olde men were gotten in before, and were likewise rubbyng theim selfes: who beyng demaunded why they did so, aunsweared, because they had no seruauntes. But Adrian perceiuyng theyr entent, called theym to hym, and shewed them howe they mighte well enoughe one rubbe an other.

adrians curtesie, and wysedome.

¶ Of all these goodlie Thermes, there remaineth none other but the broken walles, and the olde monstruouse ruines, specially of those two that were the greateste, Antoniane, and Diocleſiane, whose hugenes may be reckened as a wonder amongeſt the buildynges of the worlde.

Of the

Of the Naumachie.

There were certaine pondes of water called Naumachie, made of purpose so large, that smal shippes myghte mete in them. For lyke as the Romaynes were diligent in bryngyng vp theyr youthe in feates of chevalrie. So also they exercised them in practise of the water, to make them no lesse experte by sea than by lande. For the which these Naumachie were made, specially for the triumphynge dayes, whan they vsed to fight ship with ship, and whan also on the lande the horsemen shoulde be prouynge of theyr strengthes. So that in one spectacle you shoulde behold the feates of armes both by sea and lande, as most commonlye in Circulo maximo it was wont to be. But at this daye there scarcelye appeareth anye signe or token of those pondes, saue that euery man there can tell where some of them haue ben: as that before the fronte of Palazzo maggiore, an other vnder Monte de glihortuli, and one of Neros in the Vaticane. For now thorough lacke of water, sens the decaie of the conduites, they are become drie ground, and conuerted into gardeins, pastures, and other vses.

Of the arches of triumphe.

The Romaines vsed to edifie certaine arches, and to dedicate theim vnto the names and memory of suche as had conquered straunge countreis, or returned victoriously from daungerous battailes.

For the whiche they were receiued triumphantlye into the citee, sittyng on a riche chariotte, drawen with .iiii. white steedes, and their notable prisoners and spoile before them, with goodlye representacyons of the gotten citees, townes, countreis and other thyngs: and so passyng throughe the citee, shoulde ride vnto the temple of Iupiter in Capitolio.

¶ There haue been many of these arches, but at thys daie .iiii. onely are to be knowen, that is to wete of Cõstantine, of Titus, of Seuerus, and of Domitian.

Arius Constantini. The first of Constantine standeth on the corner of the hil Palatinus, a little besides Coliseo, and is yet metely fayre to beholde, were it not that the fine carued fygures on both sides wrought in the harde marble, are battered, and almost defaced by the weather.

Arcus Titi. The nexte of Titus and Vespasianus, is in the middest of the way called Sacra, wherein maye be seene the representacion of the chariotte of triumphe, with the .xii. sergeauntes on the one syde, & on the other the spoyles of Ierusalem, that is to wete the golden candelsticke of seuen braunches, the two tables of Moyses, the golden table and vessell of the Temple, with dyuers other thynges: whiche as Ioseph writeth, were laied vppe in the temple of peace.

Arcus Seueri. The arche of Septimius Seuerus standeth in the olde market place, nowe called Piazza Romana, at the foote of Campidoglio: and this is the fayrest of all the other, hauing finely grauen on both sides the representacions of his battailes and victories, aswell by sea, as by lande, with the title in fayre Romayne letters, to whom it was dedicated.

Finally

Finally in the waye Flaminia, harde by the churche of saincte Laurence in Lucina, is the arche of Domitian as they saye: and is now called L'arco di Tripoli, nothyng of beautie comparable to any of the rest. Arcus Domitiani.

¶ These arches are as it were gatehouses to passe thorough, but the finesse of the marble, & curious workemanshippe sheweth wel, that they were exceding sumptuouse, and more beautifull than anye other kynde of buildynge.

Of Theatres.

LIke as the Romaines in theyr warres, triumphes and buildynges exceaded all other nacions of the world, euen so did they in their feastes and spectacles: that is to wete in their plaies and sightes deuysed for pleasure and recreacion.

One while they rectred comedies, an other while they vsed diuers soũdes of instrument, to the Pandomimo, who was one that with signes woulde counterfayte all maner of men, and declare his conceite as euidently, as if he shoulde haue spoken. Sometyme they had a number of wilde beastes brought in, as Elephantes, Lions Tygres, and other like, against whome, men that were either condemned to death, taken in the warre, or foolehardie felowes therunto hyred, shoulde be put to fight: and toren to peeces, vnlesse their chaunce were wonderful. Sometyme againe the maisters of fence wyth theyr scholers, and many tymes the souldiours, would enter with theyr sharpe swoordes, and there kyl one an other, to trie theim selfes valyaunt. Sometyme they

wrastled, sometime they iusted, & sometime they fought as it were in playne battayle, aswell by water as by lande, with other lyke passymes to longe here to rehersse.

¶ To beholde these thinges, at the begynnyng euerye man toke suche place as he could get, but in processe of yeres whan theyr common wealth flourished, than they deuised certaine skaffolds of borde, with grices or steppes one aboue another, and fastened theim on greate beames made after the forme of an halfe circle, for the commoditee of the more number of people to sit vpon. Whereof Plinie saieth thus: Beholde the people Conquerour of other countreis, and lorde of all the worlde, they that ouerthrowe realmes and nacions, geue lawe to straungers, and be as it were a certaine diuine thing amongest the humayne generacyon, stand here neuertheless dangerously on an engine, reioysynge whyle they be in peryll.

Theatrum

This engine of tymber was called Theatre, and the first that euer made any in Rome was Marcus Scaurus, whose Theatre receiued fourescore thousand persons, & serued for 30. daies only. But to ease the greate charges that the buildinge of suche Theatres required from time to time, Pompeius buylded one of square stone, sufficient for 80. thousand persons: which Theatre Nero at the receiuing of Tridates kinge of Armenie, caused to be gilte cleane ouer in a daie.

¶ Many of these Theatres haue ben in Rome, but the most notable were these iii. of Pompeius, of Marcellus and of Cornelius Balbus: of which there remaigneth so litle memorie at this day, that almost no man can tel

where

where they stode.

Finally the Amphitheatre, now called Coliseo, is yet standyng, one of the perfectest to be seen amongeste all the antiquitees of Rome, and may in deede be accompted one of the wonders of the worlde. For though parte of it be alreadie fallen downe, and the reste decaiynge daily, yet is it not so defaced, but that you maye see perfectelie, what it hathe been, aswell for the meruaylouse height, greate circuite, and fayre stone: as also for the excellent workemanship and proporcion. It is rounde bothe without and within, from the ground within vpwardes, it riseth vniformely one steppe aboue an other staierwise to a very great height: so that to beholde the shewe in the bottome, whiche I thinke is aboue .300. yardes in compasse, there might sitte an hundred thousande persons at theyr ease. And because they vsed to grauel the grounde, whan any greate passime shoulde be, therefore in the latine tounge some aucthours haue called it Arena: notwithstandinge they haue knowen the name to be Amphitheatrum, which signifieth two Theatres ioygned togethers, and after most opinions this Amphitheatre was builded by Vespasian and hys sonne Titus. Amphitheatrum. Coliseo. arena.

There is also an other Amphitheatre yet to be seen, edified by Statilius Taurus: but it is so decaied, that it scarcely deserueth to be spoken of.

☞ Of the Circles.

AS for the cercles, whiche serued to lyke purposes of spectacles, because there is none of theim at Circuli.

this day, that hath any similitude of theyr auncient beynge: I can saye nothyng to them.

¶ Of the Porches.

OF the solemne and sumptuouse porches or baultes, that many auncthours write, were made thorough al the principal stretes of Rome to couer the people from sonne & raine, there be none nowe any thinge lyke, neither for the pillers, nor yet for the proporcion. Where is the porche of Nero, that Tranquillus writeth, extended forthe ryght. iii. thousande paces: where be the porches of Liuia, of Octauius, and of his syster Octauia, of Pompeius, of Seuerus, and of many others: Amongest all of that sort there is but one remaignynge, whiche standeth before the doore of the temple Pantheon, situate on. xvi. wonderfull fayre pillers set in. iii. rowes.

☞ Of Temples.

Pantheon. THe temple of Pantheon is the perfectes of al the antiquitees, and standeth whole vnto thys daye. It is round, and hath but one gate to enter in at: the doores wherof are of brasse, very great and antike. The circuite within forth is very large, and the height proporcionable. The roofe is all vaulted like the halfe of an egge, of so greate compasse, that it is a wonder to beholde: and in the verie toppe is a greate rounde hole, through whiche the temple receiueth lyghte. For other wyndow it hath none, and yet is the light so much, that

if all the sides were made in wyndowes, it coulde geue no moze: vnder the which in the middest of the flooze is such holow pzouision made, that the raine passeth away wythout offendynge the eie oz the place. Finallye the walles are furnisshed round aboute with faire marble, and a noumber of goodly pillers: so that the temple beyng old, is yet thought goodlier than any new building that can be found, and is now called Santa Maria Rotonda. S. Maria Rotonde.

¶ Many other temples haue ben in Rome, that foz the most part are likewise conuerted into churches, which to describe shoulde be an endlesse wozke. But because of the alteracion and ruyne that tyme hath wzoughte, theyz trewe antiquitee cannot be declared: Wherefoze I wyl shew where some stode, and into what churches some other haue ben conuerted.

The auncient temple of Romulus is now called San Cosmoe Damiano, not much vnlike the buildynge of Pantheon, with the pozche befoze, and the gates lykewyse of bzasse. Templum Romuli.

¶ The ruine of the Temple of peace, whyche was the beautifullest and richest of al the wozld, is yet to be seen betwene Palazzo and Exquilie. T. Pacis.

¶ The temple of Ianus, whiche was neuer open but in time of warre, was nere vnto the churche nowe called San Georgio in Velabro. T. Jani

¶ The temple of Isis is nowe called, Santa Maria in Aquiro. T. Ifidis

¶ The Temple of Minerua is nowe a house of friers called Santa Maria Sopra la Minerua. T. Minerue.

¶ And the temple of Pallas was in the place befoze the T. Pallados.

porche of Faustina, now called Pallara.

¶As for the temples of Fortune and Concorde, which were many, besides a noumber of temples dedicated to the other Goddes and Goddesses, there is none nowe worthie to be seen.

¶Of the Pyllers.

IT shalbe necessary to declare, that there be, iiii. kinde of pyllers, rounde, square, and striped.

¶These are alwaies of one peece, and the chapiter of the piller called in latine Epistylium, is the stone that stãdeth on the toppe of the pyller, like as the base called Basis in latine, is the stone that the piller standeth on.

¶Of whiche bases therebe. iiii. sundry factions, Ionici, Dorici, Italici, & Corinthij, or Tusculani, as Vitruuius writeth. These kyndes of pyllers were so common amongest the Romaynes, that almost he was no man, that had not a number of pillers in his house, of white, red, or diuers coloured marble, or of porphyrie, or other like riche stone: for the gray is not accoumpted marble in Italie, but graye stone. So that to consider the infinite number of these pyllers that were in Rome, and that yet amongeste the olde ruines are to bee seene, it seemeth a wonder where they should be had, and what a treasure they coste. For I haue seene dyuers almost two fathome aboute, and aboue. 40. foote hyghe. And nothynge more earnestly desyred I, than to see some of those wonderfull temples or edifices vppon pyllers in theyr olde facion, with the presence of some of those aũciẽt Romaines, that with their naked maiestee durst

passe

passe through the power of theyr victorious ennemies, as Liuie writeth, that Caius Fabius dyd, when the frenchemen had gotten Rome, and besieged the Capitol. But to my purpose.

¶ Besides these pillers of one stone they vsed in Rome certayne pyllers called Structiles, that were made of dyuers stones. These were dedicated to the perpetual memorie of the woorthie emperours, as the two that yet stand doe wel witnesse. Structiles

The tone is called the piller of Traiane, whyche is 123. foote hyghe, and hathe a staier of. 185. steppes wythinforth, whereby I haue gone to the toppe. It hath 45. little wyndowes that geue light inwarde, and is all of white marble, so wel and finelye grauen, wyth the storyes of all Traians warres & victories, that it should seeme impossible to peincte a thyng better. Columna Traiana

The other piller dedicate vnto Antonius Pius, muche after the same sorte, hath his warres and dooynges set foorthe in figures grauen, and is. 63. foote hygher, but muche more decayed than Traianes piller: for it is cleefte almoste from the toppe to the base, so that if it be not looked vnto the sooner (as I thynke it shall not) it must needes fall. Piazza Colonna.

There was suche an other piller made all of porphirie, which Constantine toke downe, and caried to Cõstantinople. Besydes diuers other pillers, as one of Cæsar, an other called Milliariũ aureum Pœnia, and Lactaria, and many moe, wherof no parte remaigneth now that can be knowen.

☞ Of Obeliskes.

OBeliscus is a stone, that beyng broade and square at the foote, ascendeth proporcionallye to a sharpe poincte . Of which sorte of stones, there be but viii. now to be seene in Rome: notwithstandynge that Fuluius affyrmeth, there haue ben. vi. great & .42. smal

¶ These Obeliskes were fyrst inuented by the Aegiptians, and dedicated to the son, not onely because it hathe the likenesse of the sonne beame, but also because they vsed by the shadow therof to trie diuers conclusions of Astronomie, and specially the houres of the day: as by diuers caractes and figures that are yet seene in some of them, it doth euidently appeare.

¶ And a wonder it is to thinke, what an vnreasonable enterprise it was to digge one of them out of the mountaine, seeing it could not be had but by cuttyng awaye all the grounde and rocke aboue it.

La Guglia

¶ In effecte there is but one of theim standyng, whych is in the Vaticane, on the southsyde of saincte Peters church, called La Guglia, beinge .72. foote highe of the very stone it selfe, besides the base and .iiii. great Lions of marble that it is set vpon: and hathe on the toppe a great ball of brasse gilt, with the asshes of Cæsar in it, as some holde opinion.

Octauiã August brought two very great ones from Heliopoli in Aegypt, the one wherof beyng .122. foote hygh, brake in two peces, as they woulde haue erected it, and the other of .110. foote lieth in Campo Martio. There lieth one in Girulo, that sometyme was Salustus gardeine, and two other lie besides the churche of

saincte

saincte Roke, the one of theim in the high waye.
¶ The other two are but smal, and seeme rather peeces than whole stones, the one is in the gardeine of Araceli in the Capitoll: and the other is the strete of San Macutio.

¶ Of Piramides.

There is no moze Pyramides in Rome but one, which the commō people take to be the sepulchze of Remus, but the letters grauen therin witnesse it to be the sepulchze of Caius Cestius, one of the .vii. men that was ozdeyned ouer the feastes of the solemne sacrifices. And where as Liuie wziteth, that Remus was buried in the hil Auentine, wherof it was named Remuria, it is manifest, that this Pyramides was not his sepulchze, foz it standeth in the playne, and in the very wall of the citee, betwene the gate of San Paolo, and the hill Testacchio. The facion of it is lyke vnto a poynted dyamant, and is made of square stone, so great at the foote, that ascendyng vnifozmely to the top, it is higher than any towze of the wall.

In the high wales without the citee specially Flaminia, Salaria, & Appia be many like seene of muche lesse quantitee: But foz the most part they are either decaied oz decaiyng. Like as the Cimiteri, which were vaultes vnder earth, that serued of later tyme foz Chzistian sepultures, whiche with other like kind of buildynges, by pzocesse of yeres are wozen and come to naught.

¶ Of Colosses and images.

COlossus signifieth an vnreasonable great image such as that of Apollo, that was brought out of Apollonia in Ponto, & set in the Capitol, whose height was .xxx. cubites. Or that of Iupiter in Campo Martio, commonlye called Pompeianus. But aboue all that euer were, the Colosse at Rodes exceded. For it was .70. cubites highe, and so proporcionate to that heighte, that lynge on the earthe (after it was shaken downe by an earthquake) fewe men could embrace one of the fingers, and manye of the holowe places in the iointes, seemed valeis or deepe bottomes: so that it is written, the Sarasines after they had gotten Rodes, laded aboue. 900. Camelles with the brasse that they pyked out of that Colosse.

¶ Nero caused one to be made of, 120. foote high to his owne likenesse, and sette it in the porche of hys golden house, whiche afterwardes was remoued thense vnto the Amphitheatre, and therof it is thought it toke the name of Coliseo.

Finally I can find no more of these Colossi whole at this day, but one head, one hand, and a foote, that lie before the dores of the Conseruatori in the Capitol.

It is true that in manye places of Rome are seen wonderful peeces of marble, that should seeme to haue been membres of those Colossi: but they are in maner cleane defaced.

¶ Likewyse of the excellent images, bothe of brasse and marble, aswell of men as of horse, many peeces yet remaigne: thoughe scarcelye woorth the name of good I-

mages,

mages, as they appeare nowe.

¶ Fuluius writeth, that there were in Rome. 24. horses of braſſe gilte, and. 114. of Iuorie, beſydes a number of mens images on horſbacke and on foote of marble and other mattier. But of all theſe there are nowe none to be ſeene, ſauing one of braſſe on horſebacke at Saint Iohn Lateranes, whiche ſome aſcribe vnto Marcus Aurelius Antoninus, ſome to Lucius Verus, & ſome to Seuerus: and an other there is in the Capitol called, Il gran Villano.

¶ In deede there be diuers bodyes without heades, I thinke becauſe ſome ſtraunger delityng in thoſe antiquitees, haue broken of the heades to carie them away. Amongeſt all other Conſtantius, ſonne of Conſtantine, being come out of Greece to ſee Rome: and arriuyng in the ſtrete called Forum Traiani, reſted all amaſed to beholde the wonderfull beautie thereof: and deſpayryng with him ſelfe to be hable to bryng to paſſe any of thoſe thynges that were beſore his eies, ſaid, he woulde ſee, whether he could make ſuch an other horſe of braſſe as was there vnder Traiane in the middeſt of the markette place. Whervnto one of his ſkilfull men preſent, named Ormiſda, aunſwered, that he were beſt fyrſt to make ſuche an other ſtable to put hys horſe in. And if emperours theim ſelfes haue mernailed at theſe thynges, why ſhoulde not other men wonder at theim?

Of the hill Teſtacchio.

IF the common reporte be true, this hill is one of the notableſt thinges amongeſte the antiquytees of

Rome: because (as they saye) the Romaines ordeyned, that all tributes, which were brought yerely to Rome, should be laied in pottes made of the earth of the countreys from whens it came, whiche pottes after the money was paied, shuld be brought to the place where this hill lieth, there to be broken and remaigne on an heape for a perpetuall memory of the Romaine empyre. And beynge well considered, it shall appeare, that there can be no deuise lyke vnto this, to haue a thyng endure for euer. For if the hil had been made of any matter worth the caryyng away, it should haue been spoyled longe er this time: but because there is nothyng to be gotten, saue potshardes, therfore it remaigneth whole as none other antiquitee dooeth. And although learned men allow not this vulgare opinio, thinking it hath growen rather of the broken pottes, that haue ben throwen out of the .viii. colledge of potters, founded by Numa Pompilius, yet beholdynge aduisedlye the place, whereon it standeth, beyng the fayrest plaine within the walles of Rome, me semeth it halfe incredible, that the Romains would suffer so fayre a ground to be occupied with potshardes: vnlesse there were some further purpose in it, than I can imagine. For the hill is little lacke of halfe a mile compasse, hygher a great deale than any toure in the towne wall, and so easie to get vp on euery side, that I haue ridden vp at the one end, and downe at the other and yet is the earthe of it so thynne, that diggynge .iii. yeres deepe, you shal finde potshardes.

De Hip-

De Hippodromo.

BEtwene this Testacchio and the hil Auētine is a faire grene aūciētly called Hippodromus, where some yeres at shroftide, the Romaines vse to thys daie, to tourney on horsbacke, & among other pastimes, they tie two bulles to the tayle of a carte, and so dryue the carte from the toppe of Testacchio downe into the playne, and he that fyrst can take the carte and bulles, shall haue theim: But if the bulles breake lose, as many times they dooe, they make foule worke amongeste the people er they be taken, so that sometimes thei are faine to kyl theim. Some holde opinion, that this playe was firste deuised by Tarquiniur Priscus, to be celebrated in Februarie in honour of the infernal gods.

Of Graners and Arsenales.

ON the other side betwene Testacchio & Tyber haue ben. 140. graners for corne, lōg and large, as by some of the olde foundacions it doeth yet appeare. And somwhat nerer the foote of the hil Auentine, were the sellers and vaultes for saulte, and al maner of merchaundise: with the Arsenales, where their shyppes and galleys were made: of whiche at this daye is scarce any signe to be perceiued.

¶ Finally it were to tedious a matter for me to speake of euery notable thyng in Rome. For if Blondus, nor yet Fuluius Italians borne, dwellyng in Rome, & wel learned men, haue trauayled therin, and wolde not yet vndertake fully to describe those antiquitees, should I a straun-

a straũger, that taried there but a smal time, enterprise to do it: And yet amongest all other I had almoste forgotten the sepulchre of Bacchus, that lieth in a litle old temple beside the church of Saint Agnes without the walles, more notable for the value of the stone than for the woorkemanship. For it is of fine redde porphirie, plaine and square lyke a cheste, and so greate, that the onely couer woull requyre a great force to lifte it vp: so that my guide saied merely, if I had company sufficyent to raise vp this stone, I woulde one night see what were within: meanyng that the god Bacchus could not be buried there without some treasure.

Sepulchrũ Bacchi.

And to the entent that generally men may the better vnderstande the sortes of marble, and maners of buildyng, wherwith the citee hath been aunciently beautyfied, I shal here reherse one saiyng of Fuluius.

The saiynge of Fuluius

The auncient greate buildynges, aswell publyke as priuate, for the moste parte were founded vppon greate
» square stones, to the end that the waight and substance
» of the buyldyng should be the more stedfast, euery stone
» so ioigned to other with yron claspes, that they neded
» no morter. And than the wal from the foundacyon vp-
» wardes was made of stones, that weighed not passe a
» pounde weight a peece, layed together proporcyonallye
» chekerwyse. The fronte of the buyldynge was moste
» commonly wrought after the maner of a net, or perget
» ted either with a faire white mixture, or elles with tesse,
» and some couered finely with thin marble, or with cer-
» tayne plates of latine gylte. The vaultes and
» rooses of the chaumbres were trymmed eyther wyth
» glasse, with leade, with Jesse, or els with very fine pein-

tynges:

tinges: and the floores vnder foote made some of glasse and some of the finest marble, or other pleasaunt deuyses of diuers makyng.

¶ They had many kyndes of straunge marble, as white marble of the Ile of Paro and of Carrara, and that whiche cometh from Laconia the pleasauntest of all. The redde marble not vnlike the masard, with certaine white spottes, whyche they call porphirie. The bloudie marble that groweth in Troade. The blacke marble called Luculleus. The spotted marble called Serpentine. The Onichite brought out of Arabia. The alablaster, and some marble transparente, that is to be seene through, as the Fengite, with diuers others

Kynoes of Marbles.

¶ Of the present astate of Rome.

OF the ground conteigned within the wall scarcely the thirde parte is now inhabited, and that not where the beauty of rome hath been, but for the most part on the plaine to the water side, and in the Vaticane: because that sens the bisshoppes beganne to reigne, euery man hath coueted to builde as neere the courte as myght be. Neuertheless those streetes and buildynges that are there at this time are so fayre, that I thynke no citee dooeth excell it, by reason they haue had the beautifullest thynges of the antiquitees before rehersed to garnysshe theyr houses withall. Specially the bishop, his Cardinalles, prelates & other membres of his churche, who haue all at theyr commaundement. For though the Romains haue in theyr herts vnto this

haue a certaine memory of their auncient libertee, whi-
che they haue attempted manye tymes to recouer: yet
doth the bishop kepe thē in such subiectiō, that they dare
not ones steerre for their lyues, but speake they maye
what thei list, so it be no treason: and therfore many ti-
mes you shal here theim raile on the bishop and his of-
ficers that it is a wonder. In effect the present astate
of Rome in comparison of the aūcient astate deserueth
not to be spoken of, & yet I beleue, that in the Romay-
nes most glorie, there was neuer halfe so much pompe
vsed as nowe. O what a worlde it is to see the pryde
and abhominacion, that the Churchemen there main-
teigne: What is a kyng: what is an emperoure in hys
maiestee: Any thynge lyke to the Romaine bishop? No
surely, nor I would not wisshe theim so to be. And
to the entent you maye the better perceiue it, you shall
vnderstand, that on Chrystmas day, the yere of our lord
1547. Paule the thyrde beynge bysshop, I noted his co-
ming to church, because it was a principal feast celebra
ted in Pontificalibus. Wherfore early in the morning
I resorted to the palaice, and there waited the cominge
of the Cardinalles, that for the most parte lie in the ci-
tee, & to come to sainct Peters, muste passe Ponte Sāt'
Angelo, where is an old order, that whan so euer any
Cardinall passeth the bridge, there is a peece of ordy-
naunce shotte of in the castell: for an honours that the
bishop is bounde to obserue towardes his bretherne.
¶ I had not ben longe in the palaice, but I harde two
peeces shotte of at ones, whereby I knew that two Car-
dinalles were compynge, and therefore resorted to the
gate to see theim and their traine.

From

From Castel Sant' Angelo to Saint Peters stairs. there is an excedynge faire strete, streight & leuel more than a quarter of a myle long, called Borgo San Piero, in the further ende wherof I sawe these Cardinalles come, and therwith out of the bisshops palaice came his garde of Suizzers al in white harneis, and there alongest before the gate made a lane halfe on one syde and halfe on the other, with their.ii. drummes & a syfe before them. And assone as the Cardinalles approched, the drummes and fife began to playe, and so continued til the Cardynalles were well entred amongeste the gard. Than the trumpettes blewe vp an other whyle, til the Cardinalles were almoste at the gate, and as they should enter, the shalmes began to playe, and ceased not tyll they were alyghted, and mounted vp the stayers to the bisshoppes lodgeing.

¶ The lyke cerimonies were vsed vnto all the Cardinalles that came, whether one came alone or many togethers. And there taryed more than.ii. houres harkenyng to this gunneshot and mery pipyng, and rekened aboue.40. Cardinalles that came thus rydynge, sometime one alone, and sometime.iii. or.iiii. together.

¶ There was no Cardinal that came without a greate traine of gentilmē and prelates, wel horsed and apointed, some had.40. some.50. and some.60. or mo, & nexte before euery of theim rode.ii. benehemen, the one caryyng a coushin and a riche clothe, and the other a piller of syluer, and the Cardinalles theim selfes aparayled in robes of crimsen chamlet, with redde hattes on their heades, rode on moyles.

¶ Whan they were all come to the palaice, and had

waited a while in the chaumber of presence, the bisshop him selfe with the .iii. crowned miter full of iewelles, in a verye riche cope, with shoes of crimsen velvette, sette with precious stones, and in all his other pontifical apparaile, came forthe, and at the chamber dore sate him downe in a chaier of crymsen velvet, through the whiche renneth two staues couered with the same.

Thus beyng sette, the prelates & clergy, with the other officers passed on afore hym. Whiche are suche a numbre, as were able to make the muster of a battaile, if they were wel ordred in the field, Dataries, Threasorers, Clerkes of the Chamber, Penitentiaries, Prebendaries, Notaries, Protonotaries & a thousand mo; eche order of them, in his diuers deuise of parlyamente robes, al in skarlet, and for the most part finely furred. Than came the double crosse, the sworde and the imperial hatte, and after that the Cardinalls by two & two, and betwene euery two a greate route of gentilmen.

La Guglia

Than came the ambassadours, & nexte theim the bisshop him selfe blessing al the waye, and caryed in his chayre by .viii. men clothed in longe robes of skarlet: and on either side of hym went his garde makinge Rome, and crying abasso abasso, for they that woul not willingly knele, shalbe made knele by force. And I thinke verily the formost of his order was distant from the hindermost more than a quarter of a myle.

¶ Thus whan he came into the middest of the churche against the sacrament of the aulter, he turned him selfe towardes it, and bowyng his heade a litle, seemed to make a certaine familiare reuerence.

¶ Than was he caried into the chapel, brought behinde

the

the aulter (for the aulter standeth in the middest open euery way) and there in a trone of wonderfull maiestee was set vp as a god.

The Cardinalles then bestowed them selfes after their auncientes in certaine stalles, somewhat lower aboute the queere. Than sate the Ambassadours, and other prelates at theyr feete. And so whan they were set, the chapell beganne the office of the masse, and sange so sweetely, that me thought I neuer hearde the lyke. At the communion of the masse the Cardynall that celebrated, brake the hoste in .iii. peeces, whereof he eate one hym selfe, and the other two he deliuered vpon the paten to a Cardinall appointed, that brought it to the bishop, and in his presence (for feare of poysonyng) toke assaye of the seconde peece: and deliuered hym the thyrde.

¶ Whan the masse was finished, the bishop gaue hys benediction, with many yeares of pardon, and than returned to the palaice in lyke order as he came.

¶ As for the pompe he vseth whan he rideth abroade, I nede not to speake of it, considerynge what I haue sayd, sauyng that you shall vnderstand, how Corpus domini is alwaies caried in a tabernacle before hym on a white hackeney, that is taught to kneele both at the settyng vp, and also at the takyng downe of it.

¶ In dede the bishop for his owne ordinarie kepeth no great house, but his traine exceedeth al that I haue seen. For euery Cardinal & prelate kepeth house accordinge to his habilitee, and some of theim are so precise, that if one of theyr retinew be myssyng, whan they goe out of theyr doores, be it gentilman or other, he forfeiteth a cer-

tain peece of money, which he is conſtreigned forthwith to paye. And lyghtlye there is none of theym without iii. or. iiii. paiges trymmed like yonge prynces, for what purpoſe I wolde be loth to tell.

¶ If I ſhoulde ſaye, that vnder theyr longe robes they hyde the greatteſt pryde of the worlde, it might happen ſome men wolde beleue it, but that they are the vaineſt men of all other, theyr owne actes doe wel declare. For theyr ordinarie paſtime is to diſguiſe them ſelfes, to go laugh at the Courtiſanes houſes, and in the ſhrouing time, to ride maſkyng about with theim, which is the occaſion that Rome wanteth no iolie dames, ſpecially the ſtrete called Iulia, whiche is more than halfe a myle longe, fayre buylded on both ſydes, in maner inhabited with none other but Courtiſanes, ſome worthe v. and ſome worthe xx. thouſand crownes more or leſſe as theyr reputacyon is. And many tymes you ſhal ſee a Courtiſane ride into the countrey, with. x. or. xii. horſe waityng on her.

¶ Likely by reporte, Rome is not without. 40000. harlottes mainteigned for the moſt part by the clergye and theyr followers. So that the Romaines them ſelfes ſuffer theyr wifes to goe ſeldome abrode, either to churche or other place, and ſome of theim ſcarcelye to looke out at a latiſe window, wherof theyr prouerbe ſayeth, In Roma vale piu la putana, che la moglie Romana, that is to ſay, in Rome the harlot hath a better lyfe, than ſhe that is a Romaines wyfe.

¶ In theyr apparaile they are as gorgeouſe as may be, and haue in theyr goyng ſuch a ſolemne pace, as I neuer ſawe. In concluſion to liue in Rome is more coſtly

than

than in any other place, but he that hathe money maye haue there what hym lyketh. But now remaigneth to speake of the new buildynges.

Of saincte Peters churche.

The churche of saincte Peter standeth somewhat aloofe on the hill Vaticane, and hathe before it a very faire and large roume, as it were a market place: in the middest wherof is a goodlye fountayne of marble, that gusshethe out water of a great height.

From this place vp to the churche are aboute. 30. steppes or grices of square stone, the solemnest that I haue seene. For they are almoste. 30. paces longe. At the toppe of this staire, ouer the middest of a goodly porche is a great image of saincte Peter of fine marble. Within that is a large courte paued with fine marble, in the middest wherof is an antike pineaple of brasse of a wonderful biggenesse, and so many images, pillers and other riche stones, that haue been gathered out of the antiquitees, and brought thither to furnishe the new buildynges withal, that it shoulde be an endelesse worke to describe them. Oute of thys courte is the entrie into the churche, which hath iii. great gates of brasse, wherin the stories of the actes of Eugenie the. iiii. are fynely grauen.

This church within is nothynge faire to the eie, but it hath in it many beautyful and fine thynges, as the tabernacle of marble, where (they say) Christes sudarye, and one of the. iii. nayles lieth, the goodly brasen sepulture of Sixtus the. iiii. the brasē images of saincte Peter

and

and Paule, a numbre of goodlye pyllers, and diuers o-ther thynges.

¶But aboue all the newe buildyng, if it were finished, wolde be the goodliest thyng of this worlde, not onelye for the antike pillers that haue ben taken out of the antiquitees, and bestowed there, but also for the greatnesse and excellent good proporcion that it hathe. Neuertheleſſe it hath been so many yeres adoing, and is yet so vnperfect, that most men stand in dout, whether euer it shalbe finished or no.

In the middest of this newe buildyng is a preatye chapell, wherein the bishop, with all his Cardinalles and clergie, vse to celebrate theyr solemne cerimonyes.

¶Of the bishops palaice with Beluedere.

The bishops palaice ioigneth to the church, whych to myne eie seemeth muche greater than goodly: notwithstandyng the lodgynges withinforth are faire, but I can moste commende the staier, that goeth downe from the palaice to the church, almost a quarter of a myle about, so fayre paued and playne, that a man may easily ride vp and downe.

¶Abant. iii. quarters of a myle from the palyace is the bishops banketting house, called Beluedere, one of the fineſt buildynges that is to be seen, so riche, so pleſante, and of so goodly a prospecte, that it seemeth almoste an other paradyse. The garden walled round about, is ful of faire orynge trees, and hath in the middest a goodlie fountaine with perfect plottes in molde of the riuer of Nile

of Nile in Aegypt, & of Tyber, that renneth through Rome. Besides the images of fine marble of Romulus and Remus playyng with a woulfes teates, of Apollo with his bowe and arowes, of Laocoonte, with his .ii. children wrapped aboute with serpentes, of Venus beholdynge little Cupido, of the sorowfull Cleopatra, lyynge by the ryuer syde, and of dyuers other to longe to reherse.

¶ Of Castel Sant' Angelo.

THis Castell is no lesse notable than some of the rest. It standeth on the banke of Tyber in maner cleane without the towne, and hath. iii. wardes, one within an other: excellently wel builded and strōg, and after most mens opinions is impregnable, vnlesse it be by famine. The two inner wardes stand vpon the sepulchre of the emperour Adrian, which is a certaine blackemasse of earth of a great height, compounded of certaine mixtures, whiche being dried, is harder and more durable than stone it selfe. Upon this foundacion Adrian made his tombe, and decked it with suche ornamentes of marble and other sumptuouse thynges, as made it seeme one of the rarest thyngs of the world. But after it came to the bishops handes, considering the force of the place and strong foundacion, thei conuerted it to a fortresse, and haue edified many goodly lodgeinges vpon it, so that oftentymes the byshop hym selfe lieth in it, and kepeth his court there.

☞ Of buildinges in general.

FInally there be a noumber of as fayre palaices in Rome as in any other place of the woꝛlde whereof it ſhould be to long here to make perticuler mencion: but ſpecially the palaice that Paule nowe biſſhoppe there hath builded, by the place called Campo di fiore, where Pompeius houſe ſtode in the old time, deſerueth not to be forgotten. Foꝛ he hath rooted out of the ruines of the antiquitees ſuche goodly marble pillers and other fine ſtone, which he hath beſtowed on that houſe, that if he finiſhe it, as it is begunne, it would be the gaylaunteſt toyng olde oꝛ new, that ſhal be founde agayne in all Europe, and he hathe called it after hys owne name Palazzo Farneſe.

☞ Abbꝛidgement of the lyues of the Romayne Byſhoppes.

BEcauſe my pꝛyncypall purpoſe tendeth to deſcriue the affates of Italy, I nede not to vſe much circumſtance, either in mattiers of relygyon, oꝛ yet in wꝛitinge all the liues of the Byſhops of Rome. Wherefoꝛe entendyng to begin at Stiuester, the fyꝛſt biſhop there that had any thing in perpetuitee, I haue thought good to declare the diuers opinions of theyꝛ oꝛiginal.

Peter the apoſtle.

☞ Some auncient authours affirme, that Peter one of Chꝛi-

Chriſtes Apoſtles, after that he had ſufficiently confirmed the church in Aſia, & confuted the errour of thoſe Chriſtians that allowed circumſicion, came to Rome the ſecond yere of Claudius Empire, and there was receiued of the congregacion as biſhop. In which office he miniſtred. 25. yeres, and at laſte was crucifyed with the heade downewardes, the ſame daye that Paule the apoſtle was beheaded, the laſt yeare of Neros reygne, and the. 37. yere after Chriſtes death.

Contrariwyſe manye learned men at theſe daies are of opinion, that Peter neuer came in Rome, groundynge them ſelfes vpon diuers reaſons, as this. If Peter had commen thither, it could not haue ben vnwriten in the holy ſcriptures, either by Luke in the actes of the apoſtelles, or elles by Paule in ſome of his epiſtelles. Or if Peter were of that age, that it ſhould ſeme he was at Chriſtes death, and after continued in Antioche and other places ſo many yeres as is to be proued, it ſemeth impoſſible he ſhould come to Rome, and there liue. 25. yeres. Wherefore they ſay, the ambicioufe biſhops of Rome, to couer theyr vſurped auctoritee, haue feygned this comyng of Peter thither.

But this is clere, that from Peter to Syluester they recken. 33. biſhops: whyche for the moſt parte were perſecuted, and many of them martyred by the emperours officers. So that in maner they alwayes kepte theim ſelfes out of ſight, preachyng and miniſtryng ſecretlye without pompe aſſate or ſolemne ceremonie. But from the tyme of Syluester hitherwardes, as they greiwe in wealthe, ſo encreaſed theyr worldely maieſtee and ambicion, as hereafter more playnely appeareth.

¶As for the bisshops names, the time of theyr reygne, and the date of our Lord, because that in a table I haue put theim all togethers, I neede not particulerly to reherse euery one of them, but such as the occasion of my purpose shal necessarily requyre.

Silueſter. 1. ¶Silueſter the syrst of that name, after he had been a certaine space in the hil Soratto, now called Mõte di San Silueſtro, where for feare of persecucion, he hydde him selfe, hearynge of the good inclinacion that the emperour Constantine the fyrst was of, towardes Chrisstian religion, came to Rome, and so discretely behaued him selfe that the Emperoure was conuerted to the right fayeth, and baptised.

¶Some wryte, that the occasion thereof proceded of a myracle doen on Constantine, in recouering his helth from the leapryе. But Platina thynketh that to be a fable, and in maner proueth it, thynkyng rather it proceded of the signe of the crosse, that Constantine dyd see in the firmamente, vnder whiche he was promysed victorie, and so caryyng a redde crosse in hys standarde before him, he ouercame his enemy Maxẽtius, whereupon he gaue eare to Silueſters preaching & was conuerted. But whatsoeuer the occasion was, it is agreed, that Silueſter baptised Cõstãtine, who being chrisstned turned many of the gentiles temples to chrisstian churches: enduyng them with ornamentes and possessions.

¶Not longe after, leauyng Rome to Silueſter and his succeſſours, as the clergie saie, Constantine wente to dwel at Bizantium, whiche he had than newly redified, calling it Constantinople after his owne name. So that from thensforth the Chrisstian faithe began to

flouriſhe ouer all the worlde: and therfore moſte parte of all Chriſtian churches ſent to the byſhops of Rome to learne of them the ceremonies and ordres neceſſary to be vſed in the churche, by reaſon wherof the emperours beyng reſidente elſwhere, the Romaine biſhops grewe in ſuche reputacion, that at length they became emperours theim ſelfes.

The donacion of Conſtantine.

And there is an auncient writyng in the Vaticane librarie, called the Donacion of Conſtantine, which is ſo behement liberal, that it ſhould ſeeme the emperour ſpoyled him ſelfe of all his glory and honoure, and of a great part of his dominion, to geue them to the church of Rome: by aucthoritee whereof the Romaine biſhops haue taken vpon theim the imperial veſtementes, maieſtee, commaundementes and dompnyon ouer ſom countreys.

Valla agaynſt the donacion.

¶ In deede Laurentius Valla, an excellente learned man, and a Romaine borne, hath writen a boke to confound this Donation of Conſtantine, and proueth by ſo many reaſons, that it hath been feigned by ſome byſhop of later time than Siluefter, that I am perſuaded rather to beleue him than the Donacion. In effect this Siluefter was the firſt that preſcribed a direct order of miniſters in the church, and howe they ſhoulde be knowen in theyr degrees from the higheſt to the loweſt: by whoſe tyme there ſpronge dyuers ſectes amongeſt the Chriſtians, as the Arrianes, Photines, Sabellianes, and others: for whoſe reformacion the Nicene counſayle was called, but for al that thoſe errours ceaſed not many yeres after.

Nicene counſayle.

Next vnto Siluefter Marke ſucceded, who made his

Marcus.

clergy like vnto a common wealth, exempting the same from all temporall iurisdiction, and further established a certaine order for the solemne cõsecration of the Romaine bishops, that before vsed no pompe at all.

Julius. ¶ Julie the fyrste contended with the churche of the Orient, partly for the Arrian sect, but most of all for the supremacie of the churche. For this Julie was the fyrst that claimed the inheritaunce of Peters keyes, for the which Constantius, the sonne of Constantine, banished hym out of Rome. But ere he had fullye been awaye.x. monethes the Emperoure dyed, and than returned he from exile.

Liberius. ¶ Liberius the firste was bishop after him, who by the power of the Arrianes, after the counsaile holden at Syllaine, was banished, and Felix the second chosen in his place. But at length through the emperours displeasure, Felix was deposed, and Liberius restored, who from that time forward fauoured the Arrines, and ordeyned that euery bishop should be residente on hys benefice, and applie him selfe to fede his flocke.

Felix. 2.

Damasus. ¶ Damasus succeded Liberius, who contented with Vrcisin⁹, one of the decons of the church, that was likewise elected vnto the bishoprike. For the Romaines at that time were diuided into sectes, so that a number of either side were slaine, but finally Damasus preuailed, and Vrcisinus was confyned to Naples.

This Damasus was afterward accused of adulterye: and therfore called .40. bishops together, and clerynge him selfe of the crime, not onely punished his accusers, but also made a decree, Sub pœna tallionis, that none of the clergy from thenseforth shuld be accused, whyche

Pœna

Pœna tallionis condemneth the accuser to the payne of the accusacion, in case he proue it not.

¶ At this time lyued sainct Hierome, that than hadde newly translated the bible out of Hebrue into the Latine tonge, and had set it forthe to the edyficacion of the churche, which before had none other but the .70. interpretours. Hierome.

¶ Syritius was the next bishop, in whose tyme, the sect of the Manichees encreased much: of al other most pestilent to our Christian religion. It beganne thorough one Maneph, a Persian borne, who named hym selfe Christ, chose vnto him 12. apostles, reproued the old testament, followed the new, and sayd, that Christ had but a fantastical and a feigned bodye: and with wonders gate hym suche credite, that in maner all the east partes were corrupted with his heresies. Syritius.

Finally Syritius, to reformme this & other like sectes, called a generall counsaile in Constantinople of. 1350. bishoppes, where these opinions were vniuersally condemned: though they could not be clerelye extinguished many yeres after.

¶ But because it appertaygneth not to my purpose, to write of sectes and opinions, seyng that til the tyme of Gregorie the seconde, about the yere of our lord. 720. the Romaine bishops trauailed most in matters of religion, beyng alwaies obedient and ruled by the emperours without peculier dominion: I woull passe theym ouer for that space.

¶ True it is, that in the tyme of Phoca the emperour, vppon controuersie moued betwene the Patriarke of Constantinople and the bishop of Rome, for the supre-

macie 603

macie of the churche, Biniface the.iii. obteined a pry-
uilege of the Emperour, that he & his successours from
thenseforthe should be taken for Primates and chiefe
of all Christian bishops. By reason of whiche pre-
ferrement not lōg after the Romaine bishops, not one-
ly toke on theim the direction of al other bishops, wyth
graunting of Dispensacions, Iubilees, and Pardons,
but also wold put forthe their feete to be kissed of pryn-
ces, yea and of Emperours theim selfes, as appeareth
by the example of the emperoure Iustinian, who kyssed
the feete of bishop Constantine the fyrst, as Platina af-
firmeth: like as other emperours sens haue accustomed
to dooe. But for all that I fynde not, that any byshop
openly contended with the Emperours tyll the time of
this Gregorie the seconde.

Supremacie of the churche.

Gregorius 2.

Images put out of churches

¶ Leo the.iii. emperour commaunded throughout hys
dominion, that all maner of images shoulde be cleane
had out of the churches for auoydyng of Idolatrye, but
the most part of the people disalowed this ordinaunce.
Through comfort wherof this Gregorie so cōtended a-
gainst it, that in most parts of Italy, the emperours of-
ficers executing their princes commandemēt in this be-
halfe, were hewē to peces: as ỹ exarke of Rauēna with
hys son, Marinus Spatarius duke of Rome wyth hys
son, & diuers other. Insomuch that Gregorye not onely
sequestred from the emperours the customes and taxes
due vnto him out of Rome and many other citees in I-
talie, but also called a counsaile, and excomunicated the
emperour as an heritike, and leauynge the churche in
that astate died. Blōdus saith, that the doer hereof was
Stephen the seconde, who was bishop before this Gre-
gorie:

gozie:but by agreement of moſt authours it ſhould not ſeeme to be ſo.

¶Than ſucceded Gregozie the.iii.who folowynge the example of his predeceſſour,called a counſaile in Rome of a.1000.biſhops,wherin the emperour was not only excomunicate againe,but alſo by decree depziued of his imperiall title and iuriſdiction,and the Italion nacion pzocured to rebel againſt him. Ercoxius.

¶By reaſon wherof whan Luitprandus kynge of the Lumbardes,had beſieged the citee of Rome,the byſhop could not foz ſhame requyze ſuccours of the emperour but was faine to ſende to Charles Martel,than beynge chiefe ruler in Fraunce:by whoſe fayze meane and entreatie,the Lumbarde withdzewe hys ſiege, the rather becauſe Charles Martel had made hym his goſſippe. And here beganne the fyzſt amitee betwene the kinges of Fraunce and the Romaine churche. Charles Martel

¶Zacharie ſucceded Gregozy,who to encreaſe the reputacion of the Romaine churche,at the interceſſion of Pepine,ſonne vnto Charles Martel,than greate mayſter of the Frenche kynges houſe, depoſed Chilperike than being king,and made him a monke cloſed vp in a cloiſter , and afterwardes inueſted Pepine kynge of Fraunce. Foz which acte the heyzes of Pepine were euer after earneſt frendes to the Romaine See. Zacharias Chilperike depoſed

¶This Zacharie vppon occaſion wente to Narnia to Luitprandus king of Lumbardes, & there partly with making a ſermon, & partly with his humble behauiour, entred in ſuch grace with the kinge,that he gaue to the church of Rome.iii.citees,Narnia,Ancona,& Humana,with a great baley in Sutri: whiche were the fyzſte

notable possessions that the church of Rome obteined. For vntyl this time if the churche had anye temporalitees, they were so smal, that they serued scarcely to the necessary findyng of the ornamentes and ministers. But after this they encreased so much, that they passed princely astates.

Stephanus. 24. ¶ After Zacharie folowed Stephen the secounde, in whose time Aristolfus or Aistolfus, kynge of Lumbardes, troubled all the astates of Italye, by reason he had gotten Rauenna, with dyuers other cytees, and was like to haue subdued the rest. Wherfore the bishop that than had taken vppon him to rule the Romaines, sent for ayde vnto Constantine the .v. than emperour. From whom he receiued so smal coumfort, that for his last refuge, he repayred to Pepine kyng of france, and procured him to come into Italye.

¶ Pepine to gratifie the Romaine church, vsed all his power, & two seueral times passed the Alpes against Aristolfe. At the firste besieged Pauia, and there constreigned Aristolfe to promyse more than he performed in deede: and at the seconde tyme, for breache of that promise, to forgoe the exarkate of Rauenna, whiche he had before taken by force frō the emperours exarke there: so that Pepine at his laste viage gaue vnto the romaines, although the bishop vnder that name receiued it as his owne, al the territory of Pentapoli and Aemilia, from Placentia to Pesaro, lying betwene the Appenine hilles, the Po, and the Adriatike sea: which are at the least .xi. or .xii. citees, wyth the countreis aboute theim. Throughe the gifte wherof the Romaine bishoprike encreased no lesse in power than before time it had

it had dooen in auctho̅itee.

True it is, that the emperoure sente his ambassadours vnto Pepine, to claime this exarkate, whereof he & hys predecessours had ben in possessiō. 170. yeres: but those ambassadours could not be heard.

¶ Blondus saieth, that these thynges happened in the time of bishop Gregory the. iii.

¶ Of this Paule I finde nothyng notable, sauinge he did his best to dissuade Constantine the. v. emperoure from the defacyng and hurlynge of images oute of the christian churches: but Constantine, folowyng the example of his father Leo, not onelye extirped the images, but also put diuers to death that wente aboute to resist it. Paulus. Images.

After the death of Paule, Desiderius, king of the Lumbardes made Constantine bishop by force, but within a yere, the clergie of Rome deposed him, and elected Stephen the. iii. in hys place, in whose tyme happened no notable thing in the church, sauyng that he with al the clergie immediatly after his election, in token of humilitee, wente barefoote in procession from the Laterane church to Saint Peters. Constantinus. 2 Stephanus. 3

¶ This Adrian was so haulte of courage, that whan Desiderius the king sent ambassadours to cōgratulate his election, and to enter in amitee with him, he answered theim, how may I trust him, that so ofte hathe broken his faith? wherwith Desiderius toke such displeasure, that he inuaded the churches dominion, & toke by force Faenza Ferrara, Comacchio, Mōtefeltro Vrbino, Senegalia, & was come as farre as Spoleti, entendyng to goe to Rome, had not. iii. bishops mette him Adrianus.

therewith an excomunicacion: for feare whereof he returned to Pauia without any more adoe. But because he held still in possession the forsaied citees, the bishop of Rome procured Charlemaigne, than frēch king, to come into Italye, who with a mightye power besyeged Pauia, toke Desiderius with his wife and children prisoners, restored to the churche all that hys father Pepine had geuen, with more, and reserued vnto him selfe the dominion of Lumbardye.

¶ In this bishops time Tyber rose so high, that Rome was in maner cleane drowned.

Leo. 3

¶ After Adrian succeded Leo the. iii. who because the Romaines conspyred against him, fledde vnto Charlemaigne, & by him was restored with great pompe into his estate, & for pacifying this romaine fury against the bishop, Charlemaigne him selfe w̄ a great army came to Rome, where for the high seruice he had doen to holy church, the Romaine bishop annointed and proclaimed hym emperour August: and his sonne Pepine kyng of Italie. So that from this time forewardes the emperours of Constantinople were no more reputed Romayne emperours: but emperours of Greece. For Charlemaigne dyd so much, that at lēgth the empires were deuided by confines, and the Greeke Emperours consented to suffer the Frenchemen in quyette bothe with the name and dominion of the Occidental empire.

The empire deuided

After the death of Charlemaigne and of Pepine, thys Leo remembryng the old cōspiracie made against him, caused many of the chiefe Romaines his enemies to be put to death. For the whiche at laste he was fayne to withdraw him from rome, and lyng at Biera, the Romaines

maynes in a ſodayne rage ſpoyled and raſed to the erth all the buildynges that he had made or procured to be made in Rome. And becauſe the byſhop dyed ſhortly therupon. Lewys the french kyng and emperour, ſente his conſin Bernarde as kynge into Italie, to be a ſtaye againſt the incõueniences that of this fury might haue folowed: whyche Bernarde within few yeres after rebelled, but at laſt he was conſtreigned to yeld him ſelfe, and ſo beyng brought into Fraunce, was beheaded.

This Stephen went into Fraunce, and there crowned the forenamed Lewis emperour, who for his great curteſie and gentilneſſe was called Lewys the meeke: and at his retourne to rome, this biſhop brought many Romains home with him, that his predeceſſour had exiled. Stephanus.4

After Stephen ſucceded Paſcall, who crowned Lotharius, ſonne of Lewys the meeke, kyng of Italy, and ſucceſſour to his father in the empyre: and wyth fayre perſuaſions obteined of Lewys the election or confyrmacion of all biſhops, which before that time depended onely vpon the emperours pleaſure. And further procured the conſines and limites of the churches dominion to be made certaine, and that with the largeſt. Paſcalis

But Gregory the.iiii. would not take vppon hym the byſhoprike, tyl he had receiued hys confyrmacion from the emperour Lewys before named. gregoryus.4

In his time, the Saraſines in great noumber landed in Italie, beſieged Rome, toke it, ſpoyled it, and all the countrey about: but at laſte they were repulſed by the Marques Guido of Lumbardy, with helpe of the frenchemen.

Sergius the ſeconde, fyrſte gaue preſidente to all hys Sergius.

successours to change theyr names: by reason that hys owne name Bocca di porco that is to saye, swynesmouth, was so vnsemely, that he thought it not agreable to his dignitee. He repayred the walles of the Vaticane, and buylded Castel Sant' Angelo vppon the tombe of Adrian.

Johannes. 8 ¶ Johan the.viii. was an englishe woman, that in hir youth disguised in a boyes apparaile was broughte to Athenes in Greece, where she profited so much in learnyng, that whan she returned to Rome, for hir good behauiour and singler reputacion she was elected bishop: and so continued more than two yeres, til at last goyng in procession towardes saint Johns Lateranes, she fell in trauayle of childe in the high way, and there dyed. For whyche cause the byshops to this daye doe forsake that way, and (as they say) whan any new byshop is elected, he is brought to saincte Johns Lateranes, & there set in a chayre with an hole, that the yldest Deacon of the Cardinalles may feele vtrum habet testiculos.

Adrianus. 2. ¶ Adrian the seconde was elected and establysshed byshop without the emperours consent, wherwith the emperours ambassadours, than resident in Rome, began somewhat to be moued: but at length the emperour himselfe was so contented withal, that from thenceforth the clergie in maner esteemed not the emperours.

Johannes. 9 ¶ John the.ix. succeded Adrian, and willyng to crowne Lodouicus balbus frenche kynge emperour: the Romaines (that fauoured more Charles the.iii. kynge of Germanye, who than was entred into Italye with an army) put the byshop in prison: but he was shortly conueighed out, and fled into Fraunce, where he annoynted the

ted the kyng emperour. Neuertheleſſe within a whyle after the frenche kynge dyed, and than was the bishop reconsiled to the forsayd kyng Charles, whome he afterwarde crowned emperour.

Adrian the.3. byshop made a lawe, that from thensforthe the emperours should haue naught to doe wyth hys succeſſours elections. Adrianus.3.

Stephen the.vi. bearyng malice in his herte agaynſte his predeceſſour Formosus, caused him to be taken out of his graue, to be spoyled of his pontyficall veſtementes, his fingers to be cut of, and his body to be throwen into Tyber, as an excomunicate and damned person. For which act there grewe heynous contencion amongeſt the Romains that ceaſed not many yeres after. Stephanus 6.

At this place Platina began to lament the tyrannye of the Romaine bishops, because from hense forthe there reigned no more humilitee, temperance, religiō, trouth nor charitee among theim: but in stede therof ambicyon, disdeygne, auarice, falshead, and tyrannye. For shortlye after Leo the.v. was by force deposed, and put in prison by Christofer the fyrſt, one of his owne byngegynge vp: who contynued scarcelye.vii. monethes, but was likewyse serued by Sergius the.iii.

Here, I haue thought good to make a lytle dygreſſyon, because of the notable chaunge of the empire.

About this time began the contencion betwene Lewis the Frenche kynge, and Berengarius Duke of Friuli for the empire and dominion of Lumbardye.

The Italians wolde not, that the bishops of Rome shoulde crowne any other emperour than one of theyr owne nacion, wherupon Berengarius toke on him the

name

name of emperour and kyng of Italye, and in that quarel fought twise wyth Lewys. The firste battaile he loste, but the seconde he wan: in the whiche Lewys was taken prisoner, and one of his eies put oute. And thus ended the empire Charlemaignes descent, for the whiche was no small contencyon awhyle betwene the.iii. nacions, Italian, Frenche and Douche.

Chaunge of the empyre.

Berengarius.1

¶ Fyrste this Berengarius reygned wyth the name of emperour.iiii.yeres, and had no smal warres, specially with the Conte Guido di Spoleti: who at the laste was discomfited and slaine in the fyeld. And as some wryte, the bychop Lando gaue Berengarius the crowne.

Berengarius, 2

After him reigned Berengarius the seconde.vii.yeres. who suffred the Hungaryens to passe into Italye, vpon condicion they should not offend hys subiectes: but they kepte not theyr couenaunt wyth hym.

Raulfe Duke of Burgoyne

And than came Raulfe Duke of Burgoyne and dryue hym out of Italye: whyche he ruled for the space of .iii. yeres, tyl Berengarius, with the helpe of the Hungaryens recouered it agayne.

Hugo Conte d' Arli

¶ Than came Hugh, Conte d' Arli, and reigned after Berengarius.x.yeres as kyng of Italye.

Berengarius, 3

The laste of the Italyans was Berengarius the.iii. who reigned about.xi.yeres, and was expulsed, as you shall here afterwardes.

Johannes, 11

John the xi. (a better warriour than churchman) with the helpe of Alberico Marques of Tuscane, gathered an army, and fought with the Saraslnes, that than had ouerronne Puglia and Calabria, and were coming to Rome, & in effect so discomfited theim, that they fled to Monte Gargano, were they fortified them selfes, and did mu-

did much hurte afterwardes in the realme of Naples. Finally he fel at variaunce with the forenamed Marques, who therfore called the Hungarians into Italye, and scourged the whole nation, aswel his owne subiectes as others: So that the Romains to be auenged toke Alberico and beheaded hym, and the souldiours toke the bishop and strangeled hym.

Agapet the seconde, seeyng the puyssance of Berengarius the .iii. and fearyng to come vnder hys subiection, with consent of the romains procured Otho, than newly chosen emperour in Germany, with a greate armye to come into Italie. Where he fought twyse with Berengarius, and at either tyme toke hym and hys sonne Albert prysoners. The fyrste tyme he restored hym to the astate of Lumbardye vppon conditions. But the secounde tyme he and his sonne bothe were ledde away, and confined the one to Bamborough in Almaigne, & the other to Constãtinople: where they died miserably. Agapitus. xi

Otho

¶ Iohn the .xii. not by free election, but by the power of his father Alberico than chiefe of the Romaynes, was made byshop. For thoughe the byshops had longe time continued like kynges, I meane for theyr astate & temporall possessyons: yet for ail that the Romaynes created yerely certaine Consules and other officers after theyr olde faction, and had belongyng to theyr commõ welth diuers townes nere vnto Tuscane, betwene Vrbeuentano, & Tudertino, and all that is betwene Naples, Marsi, Riete, and rome, so that the chiefe Romaines bare a great stroke in the bishops elections. Iohannes xii.

This bishop crowned Otho beforenamed fyrste emperoure of the Germaynes. For neither Henry Duke of

Saxonie last Emperour before him, nor yet Conrade successour to Lewys before named of Charlemaignes descent, were euer crowned: though they both toke vpon theim the imperial auctoritee.

This John was a man of so ill liuynge, that two of his Cardinalles complained on him to the emperour: beseechyng him to see a reformacion for an exaumple to the world. But the bishop hearynge of this, was soone euen with them. For he cutte of the ones nose, and the others handes: and afterwardes receiued the emperour with so good a countinance, that he seemed nothinge gilty til the clergy with one voice accused him, whereupon he fledde into the mountaines & hidde him selfe: so that the emperour with consent of the clergie chose Leo the.viii. But assone as the emperoure retourned home, John by force of his frendes expulsed Leo, recouered his byshopzike, and so continued til he died.

¶ Some write, that this was John the.xiii. For amongest the auctheours is some confusion in the number of these Johns, specially because some recken the englisshe Johan for one, and some recken hir not: but how so euer it be, this John succeded Agapet the secound: and as some write, was taken in aduoulterye and slayne by the womans housband.

Johannes. 13.

¶ John the.xiii. elected by the clergie against the Romaines will, was taken by Geffroie Cõte di Campania & exiled, till this Geffroie & his sonne were slayne by an other lorde of Campania. Insomuche that the emperour Otho, hearyng of this byshops exile, made an army, and came to rome, where after a solemne entrey, he toke all the senatours and put theim in prison,

sente

sent the Consules prisoners into Almaigne: and one Peter that had been chiefe of the conspiracye againste John, was drawen throughe the stretes, whipped naked hanged by the heare of the head, and finallye in maner halfe dead sent prisoner into Germany, where he finyshed hys dayes. For which courtesie this John crowned Otho the second (sonne of this fyrste Otho) emperour, by the fathers consent, and his wife Theophila empresse.

¶ Benedict the.vi. was taken by Cinthio, a noble man of rome, and beynge layed in prysone in Castell Sant' Angelo, was either strangled or famished to death. Benedictus. 6.

Bonifface the.vii. beynge constreyned to forsake rome, toke all the riches of. S. Peters Churche wyth hym to Constantinople, and there sold it: and at length retourned to Rome, where after he was wel receiued, he put out one of his Cardinalles eies. Bonifatius. 7.

¶ Gregory the.v. by reason of a commocion in Rome, fled first into Tuscane, & afterwardes into Germany because he wolde not consent to crowne Crescentius, emperour: who beynge the noblest amongest the Romaines, was prouoked by the Italians to take the empyre vpon him. So that whan Gregory was fled, they made one that had been bishop of Placentia bishop of Rome, and named him John the. 17. but Otho the. iii. than emperour, with a puissant army came to Rome, & wolde haue besieged it, had not the Romayns receiued him, so that Crescentius and the bishop John both fled into Castel Sāt' Angelo, & there held thē til they had so faire offres made on themperours behalfe, that vpon trust therof they came forthe and submyted theim sel- Gregorius. 5

ses. But for all that they were both tormented, and at laste put to death. Wherevpon it folowed, that this Gregory, who was a Saxon borne, transferred the election of emperours vnto. vii. princis of his owne nacion, that is to wete. The king of Boeme, cupbearer, the Marques of Brandenburgh camberlaine, the Conte Palatine sewer, & the Duke of Saxonie swordbearer, with. iii. Archebishops of Mentes, Treuere, & Coleyn. And ordeyned further, that from the Emperours election to his coronacion, he shuld be called none other but Cæsar and kyng of Romaines, & after that the byshop of Rome had crowned him, he should be called Emperour and Auguste, whych order by consente of the forenamed Otho, was established about. 200. yeares after Charlemaignes coronacion.

Electours of the empire.

Cesar,

Augustus

Benedictus. 8

¶ Benedicte the. viii. crowned Henry the seconde, emperour: who was the fyrst that accordynge to the order of Gregorie the. v. was elected by the princis of Germanye. Some call hym Henry the fyrste, because Henrye Duke of Saxonie, that succeded Conrade, neuer came to Rome to be crowned.

Benedictus, 9

¶ Benedict the. ix. for his naughtye behauiour was expulsed, and Siluester the. iii. placed in his roume, who helde it. 40. daies and than was Benedict restored.

Shiftynge and poysonyng of Romayne byshops.

Neuertheleste Benedic mistrustyng that he coulde not kepe it longe, solde his iurisdiction vnto Gregorye the vi. but the emperour. Henry the. iii. came to rome deposed theise. iii. bishops, and created Clement the seconde, who liued not fully. x. monethes, by reason that his next successour Damasus the second found meane to poison him, beynge after so serued hym selfe the. 23. daye nexte

folow-

folowynge hys election.

¶Leo the.ix. beyng sent as bishop to Rome, at the Romaines request, that desired the emperour to send them a good man, mette with.ii. mõkes by the way, who perswaded hym so muche, that he put of his pontificall habite, and priuately came to rome, saiyng that he repented hym to haue taken of the emperour, that which appertained to the clergies free election. For whyche humilitee the clergies embraced hym, and neuertheles made hym their bishop. Leo.9.

¶He made an armie against the Normains, than reignyng in the Realme of Naples, to recouer Beneuento that they had wonne from the church, where his army was discomfited, and he with diuers of his Cardinales taken prysoners. But the Normaines freely delyuered him, and honourably sent hym home.

¶In his time was the counsaile of Vercelli called against the opinion of Berengarius for the sacrament of communion.

¶Stephen the.ix. broughte the churche of Pyllayne to the obedience of the church of Rome, which for.200 yeres before would neuer knowlage Rome for hys superiour. Stephanus.9

¶Nicolas the.ii. after the clergie had deposed Benedicte the.x. was elected, who made a decree, that from thenseforthe the Cardynalles onely shoulde choose the bysshoppe. Nicolaus.2

He created Robert Guiscarde duke of Calabria and Puglia, and made hym lieutenaunt of the Church, by whose power he subdued to the churches dominion the Prenestini, Tusculani, & Numentani: with diuers o-

ther territozies abonte Rome.

Alexander.2. ¶Alexander the.ii. in the beginning of his astate was disturbed by Gadolo bishop of Parma: foz the whiche they fought two battailes, but finallye Alexander pzeuailed, by reason that at a counsaile holden in Mantua, where the emperour was pzesent, the whole clergy agreed vppon Alexander, and exempted from all emperours the auctho3itee of confy3macion of the Romaine bishops: whych afterwardes was occasion of many inconueniences.

Gregozius.7 ¶Gregozie the.vii. incontinentlye vppon his election beganne to pzoue maistries with the emperour Henry the.iii. Fy3ste he woulde not bee confy3med of the emperour, and afterwardes, where the emperoure befo3e tyme hath vsed to geue bishop3ikes, Gregozye woulde geue them him selfe. So that whan a bishop dyed, the emperour woulde name one, and Gregozy an other. Wherof folowed excomunicacions as thicke as haile, so that at last the emperoure hym selfe was not onelye excomunicate, but also by the ecclesiasticall power deposed of the empy3e. And yet had religion so muche power in hym, that whan he was come into Italye, and had besieged his enemy Gregozy within the towne of Canosso, the emperour hym selfe went barefooted to the towne gates in the hard frost and snow, to aske fo3geuenesse of the bishop: who fo3 all that stode fyue. iii. o3. iiii. dayes ere he woulde assoyle hym. At lengthe they agreed vpon condicion, that the emperoure should obey the bishops commaundementes.

But the bishop not yet contented, within a whyle after so offended the emperoure againe, that he came to

Rome,

Rome, and was there receiued of the Romaines. Wherfore Gregory fled into Castel Angelo, and there kepte hym, til he was rescued by Robert Guiscarde, for feare of whose coming the emperour retyred into Germanye. Where by the bishops procurement the princes had elected Radulphus de Sueuia emperour betwene whom and Henry were many blouddy battailes fought ten, & not only Radulphus him selfe slaine at lengthe, but also the empereurs owne sonne so suborned, that he warred against his natural father, and besieged hym in the towne of Mentz. Neuertheleſſe (muche agaynſte the bishops will) nature and friendes wrought a peace betwene theim at laſt.

And though Guiscarde deliuered this bishop oute of the emperours hands, yet he was so hated of the Romaynes, that he durſte not abide in Rome, but wente wyth Guiscarde into the realme of Naples, and there dyed.

¶ Some write, that this Gregorye was the fyrſte that prohibited matrimony vnto preſtes. Preſtes mariage.

¶ Victor the. iii. was poysoned by the Emperours procurement, as some write, but some holde that he died of a natural infirmitee. Victor. 3

¶ Paſcall the. ii. fell at baryaunce with the famillye of Colonna in rome, by reaſon wherof, whiles he was at the getting of Beneuento (which by the helpe of roger duke of Puglia he obteined) the Coloneſi by force toke the towne of Caua apperteinyng to the churche. But the bishop at his retourne both recouered Caua, & also toke from them Zagarolo, & Colonna their owne enheritaunce. Wherupon folowed ſo muche buſyneſſe, that almoſte no man coulde paſſe in quyet anye where Paſcalis.

throughe

thzough Campania.

¶This Paſcal went into Fraunce to reſozme the diſ-
ozdinate life of the clergie there.

¶After his retourne into Italye, he condemned the do-
ynges of Henrye the.iiii. Emperoure, ſo that whan the
emperour him ſelfe was come as far as Sutri, wyth a
great army, the biſhop fozbade hym the commynge to
Rome, til he had pzomiſed not to medle with the church
matters: and further to cauſe thoſe biſhops that he had
made, to renounce their Biſhopzikes.

¶But whan the emperour had kyſſed the biſhops foote
at the heade of S. Peters ſkaiers, & was receyued wyth
ſolemne pzoceſſion into the churche, than he requyzed
Paſcal to confirme his biſhops, who refuſyng ſo to do,
he with diuers of his cardynals & pzelatz, were taken,
ſpoyled of their myters and copes, and ſo ledde into the
armie that lay without the citee, and from thenſe into a
ſtronge holde, till the biſhop ſo conſented to the Empe-
rours wyl, that he not onely crowned him there, but al-
ſo confyzmed his biſhops. Howe be it, ſhoztlye after the
emperours retours into Germanie, Paſcall called a
counſaile in Laterano, and reuoked all his doinges to
the emperour, becauſe they had ben doen thzough com-
pulſion and not of free wyl. Wherefoze the emperoure
with a puiſſaunt army retourned to Rome, and finding
that Paſcal was withdzawen into Puglia, foz feare of
diſpleaſure, he cauſed him ſelfe to be crowned a new by
the archebiſhop of Barcare, of whom he alſo toke auc-
tozitee to diſpoſe the biſhopzikes at his pleaſure.

Matilda ¶About this tyme died the Counteſſe Matilda, that
gaue vnto the churche of Rome all the territozie from

the

the riuer Pissea and San Quirico vppon the Senese, vnto Ceperano betwene the Appenine & the sea, wyth the Feodaryshyp of Ferrara.

¶ And in this bishops tyme was the great viage made of the Chrystians into the holy lande, where Hierusalem was wonne, and Godfrey of Boloigne crowned kynge. Vyage into the holy land

¶ Gelasius the.ii. succeded Paschall by the clergyes election, but the family of Frangipani in Rome, which were of the imperiall faction, toke hym by force: and put hym the fyrst nyght in prison, but there was such a commocion of the people the nexte morynge, that the chiefe of his enemies was faine to kysse his feete, and to let hym goe. Wherefore shortly after the emperoure came so soddeinly to Rome, that no man knew therof, til he was in saint Peters church, so that the bishop incontinently fledde, and by boote escaped downe Tyber vnto Ostia, and so into Fraunce, where he dyed. After whose departure, the emperoure created the above named bishoppe of Bracare in his place, callynge hym Clement: and so committynge him to the protection of the Frangipani, retourned into Almaigne. Gelasius. 2

Calixt the second, before archebishop of Vienna, was elected successour vnto Gelasius by the Cardinall̃ that than were resident in Fraunce: how be it, he wold not take the dignitee vppon hym: till he had woorde from Rome, that the clergie there were contented wythall. Vpon good aduertisement wherof he repayred thither: and findyng the imperial bishop to be fledde, setled hys astate there: sendyng to the emperour for peace and fauour, which he easilie obteined. Calixtus. 2

¶ And hearynge that the imperiall bishop was gone to Sutri, and there had fortified, he made an armye, went thither, besieged Sutri, toke hys aduersarye, brought hym to rome, made him ride about the stretes on a camel, with the tayle in his hande: and at last closed hym vp in an abbey. He trauailed much for William duke of Puglia in the defence of his countrey against Roger Erle of Sicile, but it auailed not.

Innocentius. 2

¶ Innocent the second immediately after hys coronacion, sodeinly reised an army, & went against the forenamed Roger that than wrote him selfe king of Sicile: whom he founde so vnprouided, that he made hym flee to Castell Galuzzo, and there besieged him: til his son William with a greate power came to ỹ rescue, fought with the bishops army, and toke the bishop withall hys Cardinalles prysoners. Neuertheless they were afterwardes courtesly let goe, and accompanied towardes Rome, where in the meane season was a new bishoppe made, named Anaclete. And this new bishoppe vsyng the iewelles of sainct Peters as his owne, made so many friendes, that Innocent was faine to flee from thense to Pisa, from Pisa to Genoa, and so into fraunce. Finally he went vnto Lotharius the. iii. than elected Cæsar, and by his meanes was restored to his bishoprike agayne. For the which he rewarded Lotharius with the imperyall crowne as the custome was, causynge hym afterwardes so to inuade the realme of Naples, that Roger, who than called hym selfe kyng therof, forsoke Italie cleane for a tyme.

The emperour was no sooner retourned into Germanye, but the bishop, thinkynge him selfe in peace, fell at

vari-

varlaunce with the Romains for chosyng of senatours because somewhat before that tyme the other byshops his predicessours, had taken all temporall power clerely from the citesins, & vsed it priuatelye as theyr owne. In the heate of which contencion Innocence dyed.

Eugenius the .iii. incontinently vpon his election forsoke Rome, because the Romains were resolutelye determined to maintesgne theyr Senatours: and he to the contrary, vsynge his vttermoste power, constreigned them to crye him mercye, and to committe the order of all magistrates vnto him. Neuertheleste after hys returne, the people (that coulde not brooke the losse of theyr lybertees) so rebelled agaynste hym, that he was faine to flee, and went into Fraunce: where declaryng his case vnto Lewys the kynge, he obteyned suche succours, that in maner by force he retourned to Rome, and had his owne wyl. Eugenius .3

Adrian the .iiii. an englishman borne, constreigned the Consulles and Senatours of Rome to depose theym selfes, and to committe all theyr rule vnto the churche. He crowned Frederike Barbaroſſa emperour, though afterwardes he did excommunicate hym. He also graunted the title of kyng to William the third, descended of the Normaine bloud, beyng than lord of Sicile, and of the realme of Naples. He encreased not a lyrle the Churches territory, but he was muche hated of the Romains for takyng away of their libertees. Finally before his death he repented the excommunycacion of the emperour, saiyng, that there could be none so miserable an astate, as the Romaine bishop: the gosten wyth blounde. Adrianus .4

Alexander 3. ¶ Alexander the. iii. had vnto his election the voyces of 22. Cardinalles, and Octauian had but. iii. as moste autyours agree. Neuertheleſſe betwene theim two grew ſo great a Schiſme, that the empereur Frederike was faine to call diuers counſayles for the mattyer: cityng both the parties there to appeare, that the mattier might be rightwouſlye iudged. Octauian came at the emperours calling, but Alexander iwolde neuer appeare. Wherfore the emperour became ſo much his enemy, that he was faine to flee from rome into Fraunce and other regions, to procure helpe of other princes. So that there happened much bloud, fyre, and deſtruction for this mattier many yeres together.

Some write, that Alexander was ſo purſued of the emperour, that in a cookes apparayle he was fayne to flee vnknowen, from place to place, til at laſte he came to Uenice, and there in a monaſtary toke a gardeiners wages, and ſerued in the kitchin. Wheree he was diſcouered by a pilgrime, and therupon apparayled, and brought in Pōtificalibus with procēſſion to S. Markes churche, remaigning there honorably enterteigned, til after fore feight by ſea, betwene the emperour and the Uenecias, Otho the emperours ſon was take priſoner, by whoſe meanes a peace was made betwene Alexāder & the emperour. Some writers make no mēcyon of this hiſtory: but ſay, that by appoinctmente Alexander came honorably to Uenice, to mete the emperour for a treaty of peace, wherby the other hiſtory of the cookiſh apparaile ſhould ſeeme vntrewe. In effecte howe ſo euer it were there they mette, and the emperour in preſence of al the people kneled downe to kiſſe the biſhops

foote. At which killynge, some affyrme, that the bysshop vsed these wordes: Super aspidem et Basiliscum ambulabis et cõculcabis leonem et draconem: And the emperour aunswered, Non tibi sed Petro. whereunto the bishop replied: et petro et mihi. Neuertheles there they concluded such a peace, that the bishop retourned to Rome and enioyed his place. Immediatelye wherupon he called a counsayle in Laterano, in the whyche iiii. bishops (that sens his fyrste election had been created by the emperour) were condemned bodye and soule.

¶ In his tyme Thomas Beckette, bishop of Cauntorburye, was slaine. And the kynge of Englande (as some write) sent ambassadours to this Alexander, protestyng the same to be doen vnknowyng to hym. But the bishoppe not creditynge the ambassadours, sent two Cardinalles into England to examine the trouth: who compelled the kyng to sweare, that he was not guilty of Beckettes death: and neuertheles they enioigned him in penaunce, to send. 200. souldiours to serue an whole yere in Hierusalem: and within the terme of. iii. yeres to goe against the infidelles him selfe, to maintaine all the libertees of the church, and to permitte matters to be appealed to the court of Rome. Thomas Beckette

Lucie the. iii. would haue depriued the Romaine Consules of theyr dignitee, but the people so resysted, that he was faine to flee, and as many as were taken of his partye, had theyr eyes putoute. Wherefore the bishop went to Verona, called a counsaile, and there died. Lucius. 3

Celestine the. iii. enuynge the succession of Tancredi, bastard sonne of Roger, brother to the good kyng Wylliam of Sicile, called into Italye Henrye the. vi. than Celestinus. 3

elected Cæsar. And after he had crowned him emperour in Rome, toke Constantine a Nonne oute of her cloyster: and because of the Normanes royal bloud, maried hir to this emperour: endowyng him and hir both with the titles of the realmes of Naples and Sicile: and so trãsferred the Napolitane astate from the Norman succession to the Germains, wherof there folowed great bloudshedyng.

Innocentius.3

¶Innocence the.iii. because Philip Duke of Sueuia, sonne vnto Barbarossa, was chosen emperour against his will, not onely recommunicated him, but also caused Otho the.iiii. to be elected, and crowned hym in rome. Thys byshop contendynge with the forenamed Philyp was wont to saye, either shal Philyp take from me my myter, or I from hym hys crowne.

¶Otho had not longe enioyed the crowne, but the byshop with his excõmunications made his princes to forsake him, and he the emperoure him selfe to forsake Italie: because he had moued warres against the church, and gotten Montefiascone & Radicofano, entending also to inuade the realme of Naples, than belongynge to young Frederike sonne of Henry the.vi. who by his parentes was committed to the bishops protection. Finally he deposed Otho, and named this Frederyke emperoure. Whereof there folowed so sharpe warres, that at length, whan Frederike had afterwardes receiued the crowne of Honorius the.iii. the Romayne byshop persecuted Frederike, and he them.

¶This Innocence beeyng of the familye of Conti in Rome, buylded a notable fayre toure of bricke there, whych yet is to be seen, called La torre d' i Conti.

Hono-

¶Honozius the.iii. crowned Frederike the.ii. Emperoure, and after excommunicated hym, for what cause I cannot tel. Honozius.3.

Gregozy the.ix. did likewise excommunicate the emperour, because he wold not at his appointiment go into Asia agaynst the infidelles. Afterwardes he assoyled him vpon his humble submission at Anagnia, for.120 thousand ounces of golde payed by the emperour. Gregozius.9.

¶Than fell he in contencion with the Romaynes for the tributs of the territozies about the citie, whiche the Romayns alledged that the bishops vsurped vpō theyr common wealth. And because Frederike fauoured the Romains cause, the bishop did excommunicate hym againe, wherof folowed cruel warres betwene the emperour and the confederate citees of Lumbardy, wyth the battaile besydes Corte noua, where the Mylanese and Lumbardes were so miserably slaine, and theyr Caroccio taken.

¶Than began also the ciuile sedicion of the two parties in Italie, Guelfi and Chibellini, that caused so muche myschiefe.

¶The Romayns after they had ben ones by force subdued of this bishop, began to rebel againe: For the pacifiyng wherof the byshop caryed about saincte Peters and Paules heades in procession, and so quyeted the people.

Finally beyng hardly handled by the emperour Frederike, who had taken diuers legates, cardinalles, and prelates prisoners, in theyr comyng to Rome, he dyed for sorowe.

¶Innocence the.iiii. before he was elected byshop was very Innocentius.4

verye kriende to the emperoure Frederike, but after he became so moztal enemy vnto hym, that they ceased not the one to persecute the other as long as they liued: not withstandynge that pzincipallye foz respecte of hys olde amitee with the emperour, Innocente was elected bysshop. And the emperour against this election set at libertee diuers cardinalles, that he had taken pzisoners in the warres, betwene hym and Gregozy the.ix.

¶This Innocence was occasion of the great discomfiture that Frederike had befoze Parma, and yet was the auctozitie of the Romaines so great in his later daies, that he durst not come in Rome.

Cardinal hattes

¶He first ozdeined the Cardinalles to ryde with redde hattes: and went to the citee of Naples, entendynge to haue conquered the realme, where trauaillyng to setts foz the an army he died.

Vrbanus. 4

¶Vrbane the.iiii. seynge the armie pzepared of Innocence, discomfited by Manfredo, than gouernoure of the realme of Naples, & him selfe vnhable to resist both

Manfredo 4

Manfredos power and the Romayns also, that newly had recouered theyz libertee, pzactised with the French kyng, that Charles duke of Angiowe might come to conquere Naples and Sicile, but he died er his purpose could take effecte.

Clemens .4.

Clement the.iiii. folowing the pzactise of Vrbane, receiued the fozenamed duke Charles, that came with.30 galeys from Marsiles to Rome, and there created him Senatour. Whych office he exercised foz a tyme.

Afterwardes he inuested hym kynge of Naples and of Sicile, vpon condicion, he should holde it of the churche in fee, paiyng tribute yerely. 40000. ducketes: and by

this

this meane brought the Frenchmen to warre against Manfredo. In which warres Charles prenayled, and the Germaine bloud ceased: not onely by the death of Manfredo slayne in the fielde, but also by the death of Corradino the ryghte heyre, who beinge taken prysoner, through this bishops counsayle was beheaded.

After long contencion amongest the Cardinalles, and two yeres vacacion of the see, gregory the.x. was elected byshop. He incontinently pacified the warres betwene the Venetians and Genowaies, and called a counsayle in Lions, vnto the which the emperour of Greece came with a noble companye: and amongest other certayne infidel Tartares, who there receiued baptisme. Gregorius 10

He confyrmed Radulphus Erle of Holsatia emperour, though he came not to rome to receiue ỹ crowne.

Nicolas the.iii. deprined Charles kynge of Naples of the vicarage of the Empyre, that Clemente the.iiii. had geuen hym in Tuscane, & toke from him also the Senatourship of rome, taking the vse of that office into his owne handes: and made a lawe, that no prynce from thensforthe shoulde be Senatour of Rome. He repulsed the Venetian ambassadours with soule wordes, because of the siege that they had laied to the citee of Ancona. He toke many citees in Flaminia by force and practise, and brought them from obedyence of the emperour to the churches subiection. He went aboute to make two of his owne kinne of the house of Vrsina in Rome kinges, the one in Tuscane, and the other in Lumbardy: but he could not bring it to passe. Nicolaus 3.

Finally he procured Peter kinge of Aragon, to chalenge the realmes of Naples and Sicile, as the inherytaunce

taunce of his wyfe Constantia, doughter to the kynge Manfredo. Wherof there folowed sharpe warres.

Martine the.iiii. a frencheman borne, after long contencion amongest the Cardinalles was elected bishop, who incontinently reskored vnto Charles than king of Naples, the office of Senatour of rome, against the romaines wyl. For the which there hapned much bloudsheedyng: But at last the frenchemen so preuailed, that Richard Hannibal, chiefe of the romaines, was faine to come with a halter aboute his necke to aske pardon at the bishops feete. Whereupon the bishop made two new Senatours, and so ruled Rome at hys wyl.

Martin⁹ 4.

He excommunicated king Peter of Aragone, and cried the croisie against him, because he had preuailed in winnyng of the realme of Sicile against kynge charles of Naples: and the excommunicacion was suche, that all men myght lawfully take his lands and goodes, where or how so euer they could come by them. But this letted not kyng Peter of his purpose.

Honorius. 4. Honorius the.iiii. confyrmed the excommunicacion of Martine against king Peter: entitlyng the french king to the realme of Aragone, and the Erle of Arras, the Frenth kynges sonne, to the realme of Sicile. Whyche both with seueral powers enforced them selfes to occuppy both those realmes, accordyng to the bishoppes gyfte: but in effect they preuayled not.

Celestinus 5 After longe contencion, at length the cardinals chose Celestine the.v. beyng an heremyte, who was so simple a man, continuyng stil the olde maner of his abstinent life, that the cardinalles could not wel supporte hym.

Wherfore the cardynall Benedicte Gaietane began a new

a newe practise, and fell at composicion wyth hys bre-therne, ỹ if he could make Celestine resigne, they shuld electe him. So he made one with a cane thorough a wal crie to Celestine in the night, as he lay in his bed that God commanded hym to resygne hys byshoprike vnto Benedict. Wherupon this simple man, beleuynge the voyce to come from heauen, gaue ouer hys dignytee, and caused Benedict to be chosen in his place, naming hym Boniface the.viii. who for rewarde, fearyng leaſt Celestines life myght be a trouble to his glorye, caused the poore man to be taken by the waye as he retourned towards his heremitage, and laied in prison in Castel Fumone, where shortly after he was famished to death

Boniface the.viii. cleauynge earnestlye to the Guelfe part, persecuted cruelly two cardinalles of the house of Colonna, that thã were chiefe of the Ghibellines: and dyd so much hurt to that family, that after he had raised theyr townes and houses to the earthe, none of theym durst appeare. For Sarra Colõna, chiefe of that house fled so muche the persecucion of this bishop, that after he had liued a certaine space in the woodes poorely amongest the sheepeherdes, at laſt he was taken of Pirates vpon the sea costes, and made a slaue to the oze in the galeys. Bonifacius. 8

This bishop giuing asshes on ashewednesday to Porchetto archebishop of Genoa, sayd to him in latine, remember man that thou art a Ghibelline, and with the Ghibellines shalt retourne into asshes, and therwithal threw the asshes in hys eyes.

He also was the firste that ordeyned the yeare of Iubiley amongest the christians, which caused wonderful yere of Iubilie.

resorte from all parties to Rome.

He excommunicated Philip the frenche kynge, because he wolde not go into the holy land at his appointment, and deposed him of his crowne, entitling Albert duke of Austriche to the same. To the entente the Almaynes might auenge his quarel agaynst the Frenchemen.

But at lengthe Sarra Colonna happened to arriue in the porte of Marsieles in Fraunce, where disclosynge hym selfe, he was take out of the galey, had to the frech court, and finally sent so strongly into Italy with .200 men of armes, that he came sodeynlye on a nyghte to Anagnia, toke the bishop in his bed, & led him to rome prisoner: where within lesse than .24. dates he dyed for sorowe. So that there folowed a sayinge of hym: he entred lyke a fore, reigned like a woulfe, and dyed as a dogge.

Benedictus. xi. Benedict the xi. alloyled the frenche kynge, reconsyled the two Cardinalles of the house of Colonna, and condemnyng the actes of his predecessoure, did neuertheles excommunicate the authours of his death.

Clemens. 5. Clement the .v. a Gascoygne borne, and byshoppe of Burdeux, was after .xii. monethes contencion amongest the Cardinalles elected bishop of Rome: who for affection to his countrey, transferred the see of Rome to Lyons in France: and called all the Cardinals thither to his consecracion. Whereat the frenche kyng, with many other princes was present: & the Duke of Britaine, and diuers other slaine, with the fallyng of a wall.

For feare wherof Clement fell from his horse, and lost a carbuncle of hys myter: esteemed to be woorthe .vi. thousand duckates.

¶Than incontinently he made.xii.frenche Cardinalles,three of the which he sent to Rome,with senatours aucthoritee,to rule the citee and all Italye. He oppressed the sect called Fraticelli:that were than newly risen in Lumbardie,who woulde haue had all thynges in common,without magistrates or rulers.

¶He interdited the Venetians,because they succoured the house of Este against the church.

The Cardinal Orsino,than legate in Tuscane,excommunicated the citees of Florence & Luke,because they would not be ordered by hym,but the Florentines prouided a spedye remedye. For they laied suche tares on the spirituall men, that the bishoppe,for hys membres sake,was glad to assoyle theim.

¶The Frenche kynge practised with the bishop,to reduce the imperiall astate vnto hym:but at lengthe they agreed so ill,that Clemente caused the Germaynes to elect emperour Henry the.vii.of Luxemburgh,who by the bishops procuremēt passed into Italy with a mightie armie,streigned sore the Italians,was crowned of the Cardinalles in Rome,and finally wared so greate, that the bishop,mistrusting his power,threatned to excommunicate him,if he departed not the rather out of Italye. Wherefore the emperoure fortified hym selfe and his army in the Theatres and Thermes of rome, resistyng the bishops fauters,and specially theim of the house of Orsina:but at lengthe for lacke of victualles, he was faine to forsake rome, & to retyre into Tuscane where being at Arezzo,he somoned Roberte kynge of Naples,to appeace before hym, and for lacke of apparaunce deposed him of his Realme by imperiall sen-

tence, whych was by Clemente disanulled.

Finally the emperour by meanes of the bishoppes legate was poysoned in receiuing the sacrament of communion, in the towne of Bonconuento. After whose death the bishop hym selfe lyued not longe.

Johannes 22.

Whan Johñ the.xxii. had receiued the myter in Lyons, he wente streight to Auignion and there created viii. Cardinalles of the whyche two onelye were Italyans.

Shortly after he degraded a frenche bysshop, and put hym cruelly to death for a conspiracie that he was accused of.

In this tyme the electours of Germanye, not agreyng togethers, chose two emperours, Lewys of Bauarie, and Frederike of Austriche: eche of theim hauynge iii. voices: but the bishop allowynge Frederike, dyd excommunicate Lewys. Wherefore Lewys after he had fought and taken Frederike prisoner, went wyth a power into Italye, and receiued in Rome the imperyall crowne at the handes of the Cardinal Colonna, bothe by assent of all the clergie there, and of the Romaynes: who than had recouered to theim selfes a maner of lybertee, to chose theyr owne officers, and vsed percelye to take for theyr rulers two presidentes of theyr owne nobilitee, namyng theim vicars of the empyre. And because the emperour had dyuers wales sought to the bishop for his absolucion, and could not obteine it, therefore immediately after his coronacion he created a new bishop in Rome, namyng him Nicolas the.v. who toke it vpon hym, gaue bishoprykes, & graunted dispensacyons, tyl after the emperours departure oute of Italye,

he was

he was taken by the Conte Bonifacio of Pisa, & sente prisoner to the bishop Iohn in Auignion, where he was layed in a stinkyng prison, and miserably dyed.

¶ This Iohn condemned them as heretikes, that wold haue had the churchemen line porely, as Christes disciples dyd, and burned dyuers of the .iii. order of sayncte Fraunces, that than folowed this profession.

¶ Finally he died in Auignion, leauyng to his friendes muche more treasure, than euer anye of his predecessours had dooen.

¶ Benedict the .xii. confyrmed the excommunicacion a- Benedictus. 12.
gainst the emperour Lewis of bauary, not of his owne wyl (as some write) but in maner by constreinct of the kynges of Fraunce and Naples. And the better to maintaine hys quarel, he assoyled all the estates of Italye of theyr feaultie to the empyre, confyrmynge theim free prynces in the same as vicars of the churche. So that euer sens, the Dukes of Mylaine, with the houses of Este, of Gonzaga, and the common wealthes, of Florence, Lucca, and others esteemed themperours lesse than they did before.

¶ Beside this he made the Senatours of Rome confesse theim selfes subiectes to the church onely, and not to anye other power. And by his tyme Frauncis Pe- Frauncis trarke, as a Laureate poete was crowned with Laurel Petrarke. in the Capitol of Rome, by Orso Erle of Anguillara than Senatour there.

¶ Finally this bishop died very rych in Auignion, and lefte his goodes to the churche.

Clement the .vi. chaunged the Iubiley, that was fyrste Clemens .6. ordeined to be but ones euery hundreth yeres to be kepte Iubiley.

euery

euery.50.yere, and to hold the astates of Italy in amitee with him, he confyrmed eche Lorde as vicare of the church in his owne astate, Visconti in Mylaine, Malatesta in Rimino, Pesaro, & Fano, Feltrano in Vrbino, and a noumber of other.

¶ In his tyme the Romains recouered theyr lyberte againe, and created theyr officers without the byshops cõsent: so that one Nicolas Renzo, a Romaine, being entred into a wonderful fauoure and credite with the people, toke vpon him the name and authoritee of emperour, writyng him selfe Nicolaus Seuerus et Clemens, Tribunus libertatis pacis et iustitie, et liberator illustris sacre reipublice Romanæ. At whose beginning al Italy was in such admiracion, that euery prince sẽt to salute him as emperour: thinking he shuld restore the Romaine empyre to his auncient astate.

But his owne foly destroied him. For he toke part with one of the factions that were than in Rome: so that where before he had no man against him, now had he a great noumber, which brought him at last into suche a feare, that sodenly he disguised hym selfe, and fledde from Rome to Charles the.iiii. than emperoure in Almaine, who toke hym as a lewde person, and for a present sent hym to bishoppe Clement to Auignion: and he cast him in prison, sendyng certaine Cardinalls to rome to settel the astate there: whiche by meanes afore sayde had been a certaine space disobedyent.

¶ In this bishops tyme fell the yeare of Jubiley, why- Jubiley.
che caused great noambres of people from al countreis to resort to Rome, by reason wherof there fell suche a Plague of pestilence.
plague of pestilence, as the like hathe not been heard of

For

For (as ſome aucthours affyrme) it endured continually the ſpace of three yeres throughout all Italy, and in moſt partes of the whole world, ſo vehemently, that of euery hundred there remaygned not .x. perſons alyue: and in many countreys not .x. of a thouſande. Some write, that this plague began in the eaſt parts of Aſia.

¶ Finally this Clement procured the reſtitucion of the realme of Naples to Queene Johan the fyrſte. For the whiche, and for his other good practiſes at hir beyng with hym in Auignion, ſhe ſolde the citee of Auignion with the dominion apperteignyng to the ſame, to the churche: and was contented to accept for paymente therof, the arrerages of ſuche tributes, as the byſchoppe pretended, that ſhe and hir predeceſſours did owe vnto the churche, for the realme of Naples: whereof they claimed to be lordes in chiefe.

¶ Innocence the .vi. was more geuen to religion than diuers of his predeceſſours. For he reformed the courtly pompe that the Cardinals and prelates before tymes vſed, and commanded ſpiritual men to be reſident vpon theyr benefices, with diuers other good ordres, whyche toke litle effecte. Innocentius, 6

The Romaines in his time toke on them theyr libertee: creatyng a Senatour of theyr owne: ſo that the byſchop, to recouer his eſtate, deliuered Nicolas Renzo out of pryſon, and ſent hym to Rome, where on the byſchops behalfe he preuailed. But throughe partiakynge he was againe conſtreigned to flee diſguiſed, and beyng mette, was knowen and ſlaine.

¶ This Innocence trauailed muche to haue appeaſed our king Edward the .iii. with the frenche kynge Johan

in the tyme of the sharpe warres betwene theim, truſting alwayes to haue brought theim to some good ende: till he heard that kyng Iohn was taken and ledde prisoner into Englande.

¶ He caused Charles the .iiii. to be crowned empereoure in Rome, and would haue quieted the Christian princes and powers, and united them in an enterprise agaynst the Turkes: but his purpose could not take place.

Urbanus .5. ¶ Urbane the .v. sent Giles a Spaniarde, as his legate into Italie, whiche Giles, with helpe of the other Italian princes, so sore oppressed the house of Visconti, that it was lyke to haue ben destroyed, had not the kinges of Englande, Fraunce, and Cypres by theyr ambassadours procured a peace.

¶ This Urbane withal his court went to Rome, where after longe serche (as they write) he founde the heades of saincte Peter and Paule.

Finally returnyng into Fraunce, he died by the waye, of poyson as some thinke.

Gregorye the .xi. remoued the seate of his bysshoprike from Auignion to Rome, after it hadde been holden in Fraunce .70. yeres. Some saye he did it because of the cruel warres that were among the princes and lordes of Italie: whych was ascribed to the bysshop of Romes absence: for theyr residence there stated the Italian nacion in peace.

Gregorius xi 1376.

Some saye he did it vpon a checke geuen him by a bishop, that was his familiare: whome he asked why he was not residente vppon his bisshoprike, as the Canon lawes commaunded: Wherunto the bisshop answered: And why holy father are not you resident vpon yours:

But whatsoeuer the occasion was, he conueighed hym selfe with all his court from Auignion to Rome: where of the Romaines and clergy, he was receiued with Iubilate.

¶ After whan he had pacified moste part of the Italyan princes, because the Florentines would neither be intreated, nor reformed by excõmunicacion, he made warre against theim: and durynge the same dyed of the stone.

¶ In his tyme John Acton, with .v. or .vi. thousande englishe horsemen, sought the aduenture of the warres in Italye, and fyrst serued the citesins of Pisa agaynste the Florentines, than the Visconti against the church in whiche seruice he was taken prisoner, but afterwardes the bishop of Rome made him his generall, whilest the byshop laye in Fraunce. And than dyd John Acton gette the townes of Faenza & Bagnacauallo, whereof he solde one to the Marques of Este for 20000 crownes, and the other he kept to hym selfe. But whan the byshop was come to Rome, & had not so rewarded him as he deserued, he forsoke the bishop, and was made generall of the Florentines. Under whome he serued verye honourablie, with suche a number of oure nacion, both horsemen and footemen, that all Italy feared him: and glad was that prince that might reteigne him. For in all his enterprises he behaued hym selfe so worthyly, that the Florentines after his death buried him honourablie in theyr cathedral churche, as a singuler defender of theyr common wealth. Sir John Acton.

¶ Urbane the .vi. was elected by .xvii. Cardynalles, whereof .xiii. were frenchmen, that woulde fayne haue chosen a byshop of theyr owne nacyon. But for feare Urbanus 6.

of the people that cried a Romaine or an Italian, they consented to this election, and did honour Urbane the space of.iii. monethes and more.

¶ The season than waryng hote, they desyred lycence to goe abroade into the realme of Naples: where by maintenaunce of Queene Johan. viii. of the frenche Cardinalles elected a new bishop of their owne nacio, namyng him Clement the.vii. wherof folowed a greate Schisme. For Germanie, Italie, and Hungarye, helde with Urbane, and the other realmes with Clemente. So that Urbane, beyng of nature a cruel man, to make his party the stronger, called Charles Durace oute of Hungarie to conquere Naples from Queene Johan.

This Clement vpon displeasure deprived Charles, & gaue the title of the realme of Naples to Lewys Duke of Angiowe, who with a puissant armie of frenchmen entred into Italie, purposyng not onely to expel Charles, but also to take Peters mantell from Urbane, but he prospered not. For after he had made warre in Pug lia about.xii. monethes, at last he was slaine in battaile Wherof Urbane ware so proud, that because Charles kyng of Naples wold not consent to make his nephew prince of Campania, he did excommunicate him, and if his power had been equal to his will, had deposed him of hys crowne. But Charles handled the bishop so sterelely, that he was faine to flee to Genoa: In whi che iourney he sacked.v. of his Cardinalles, and threwe theim into the sea, and caused two other to be baken to pouder, carryng their ashes in sackes vpon moiles before him for a terrour to the rest.

Cardinals sacked and baked.

¶ After this Charles death, he retourned to rome, and

did a

did as much as in him lay to deſtroy Charles children. wherin he preuailed not, but rather procured hym ſelfe a great daunger, if he had not preuented hys myſchiefe with creating of .xxix. Cardinalles, wherof .xxvi. were Napolitanes. And finally by moſt opinions he was poyſoned and died in Rome, to the peoples greate contentacion, that for his cruelitee much abhorred hym.

¶ Boniface the ix. of .xxx. yeares of age ſucceded hym, whiche had not ben ſeen before. And becauſe he woulde bridle the Romaines from the libertee that the people had vſed many yeres in choſing of theyr officers, he abſented him ſelfe with his court from Rome, and lay at Aſciſa: ſo that whan the yere of Jubiley came, the Romains could by no meane get him to rome, til they had promyſed to renounce theyr libertees vnto hym, which ſens that time they could neuer recouer. For incōtinētly as he was entred into the citee, he made Caſtel Sāt' Angelo ſo ſtrong, that it hath ben & ſhalbe a cōtinuall bridle to the people: and a great ſtay againſt emperours Boniface ix.

¶ This biſhop ordeyned the Annates, that all ſpirituall promocions ſhould pay to the churche of Rome, halfe a yeres value at euery chaunge: which decre toke place in all realmes, ſaunge in Englande. For the kynge and his barons would ſuffer none other but biſhops to be bound to this Annates. Annates

¶ In his tyme the yeare before the Jubiley, a certayne prieſt paſſed the mountaines into Italy clothed in lynnen, who drew a world of people after hym, called the white company, perſuadyng them, that a certaine crucifixe, which he caried before theim, dyd manye tymes weepe. All the day longe they ſhould trauayle on

theyr iourney, and at nyght like beastes lie them downe, wheras the date lighte fayled them. But the bishop fearing this multitude, as they were commyng towardes Rome, sent men of warre against theim, dispersed the company, and brought the priest to rome: where for his abusion he was burned. After whose death partly through this fonde assemblie, and partlye throughe the great resorte of people to Rome for the Jubiley, there folowed a wonderful great pestilence ouer all Italy.

¶ About this time Crisolora a Constantinopolitane, reuiued the Greeke letters in Italye, where they had not been vsed. 500 yeres before.

And like as this Bonifacius succeded Urbane in Rome, euen so did one Peter Luna succede Clement in Auignion, and was called Benedict the .xiii.

Innocentius, 7. Innocente gouerned the Romaines with so muche tirranny, that they openly murmured against him, and at length sente .xi. of theyr chiefe citesins to requyre theyr libertee, with ỹ fortresses that he held, as Campidoglio Castel Sant' Angelo, & Põte Molle, but al in vaine. For he kendled with yre thorough the message, caused those .xi. citesins to be put to death, and throwen oute at the wyndowes of his nephewes house. So that the romaines assembled, and not only caused the bishop to flee to Viterbo, but also sacked and spoyled the houses and richesses of all hys prelates and Courtisanes, and the Capitol wyth Ponte Molle, and woulde haue gotten Castel Sant' Angelo, had it not been impregnable.

¶ Than called they Ladislaus kyng of Naples to ayde them, but Paulo Orsino, with the bishops power, discomfited Ladislaus, & so constreigned the Romaines

to aske

to aske mercy, to receiue theyr bishoppe home againe, and to obey him as he would. Wherupon the byshoppe made his nephiew Lewis Marques of Ancona, and prince of Fermo, and so dyed.

¶ Gregory the.xii. was than chosen vppon condicion, that if Bennet the.xiii. than resident in Auignion, for the vnion of the churche, would consent to be deposed, he also shoulde depose hym selfe. Wherupon a counsaile was called at Pisa, in the whiche they two were deposed, and Alexander the.v. elected. But for all that the Schisme ceased not tyl the counsaile of Constance. gregorius 12.

¶ Whilest this Gregory was absent Ladislaus kynge of Naples came to Rome, and there was receiued of the Romains as their soueraigne lord. But he enioyed it not longe. For Paolo Orsino foughte wyth hym to so muche aduauntage, that Ladislaus was fayne to retyre into his owne realme: and diuers of the pryncipal Romaines were for this cause beheaded.

¶ Alexander the.v. gaue the title of the realme of Naples to Lewys Duke of Angiowe, and by his ecclesiastical auctho[r]itee deposed Ladislaus, and dyd what he could in helpyng Lewys to subdue hym: but it preuayled not. alexander. 5.

Iohn the.xxiii. succeded Alexander, more by force than by free election, by reason that he, beyng legate in Bononia, where Alexander died, and hauyng the men of warre at his commaundement, threatened so the Cardinalles, that they durst chose none other. Johannes 23

¶ He in deede resembled more a man of warre than a prelate.

¶ He moued warre against the kyng Ladislaus, but at length

lengthe he was repulsed, and constreigned to forsake Rome. And beyng by the whole consente of the estates of christendom called to the counsaile of constance, where diuers crimes were laied vnto hym, he fledde awaye thense: was taken, laied in prison: and finallye he wyth Gregorye the.xii. and Benedicte the.xiii. all three than liuyng, deposed of theyr pontificalitee, and Martine the.v. elected in theyr place.

Martinus.5 ¶ Martine the.v. rested.xii. monethes after hys election at the counsaile of constance, the better to establish his owne authoritee, and than went into Italy, where he pacified the warres betwene the Duke of Mylayne and the Venetians. By force he constreigned Braccio di Montone, a notable man of warre, to humble hym selfe at his feete: and to restore certaine townes that he before had taken from the churche: and finallye so behaued hym selfe, that he was euer all quyetlye accepted for supreame bishoppe: so that the Schismes, that had so longe continued ceased. And comyng to Rome, which was greatly decayed, he so disposed hym selfe to the repayryng of it, that in shorte tyme it became indifferent fayre and pleasaunt.

Eugenius.4 ¶ Eugenie the.iiii. had so great preasse of people at hys consecracion, that the bishop of Senegalia was stifled to death. And shortly after, beyng persuaded, that hys predecessour Martine, had lefte a great treasure hidde, he caused Oddo Poccio, that had bene Martines vicechamberlaine, to be set for, by his capitain stephē Colonna: who onely of the house of Colonnesi fauoured the byshop. And because the seruauntes of thys Stephen sacked Oddos goodes, and broughte hym lyke a

theefe

theefe to the biſhop, wheras he commaũded no violence to be vſed: therefore the biſhop fell oute with Stephen, ſo that Stephen fledde to Preneſte to the prince Colonna, enformyng him, that Eugenie purpoſed the deſtruction of theyr whole name and familie. Whereupon the Colenneſi made an army, came to rome, entred in at the gate called Appia, and goynge forthe as farre as ſaint Markes without hurt doyng, mette there with the biſhops power: and foughte a ſore battaile: ſo that at length, contrary to all mens expectacion the romaines toke the biſhops parte, & conſtreigned the Colonneſi to withdrawe. In whyche retyrynge they toke pryſoners and praies as in open warre: and after that vſed ſuch practiſes for poyſonynge of the biſhop, and betrayynge of Caſtel Sant' Angelo, wyth other lyke feates, that Eugenie was glad to entreate theim for peace, whych he eaſily obteined.

Than came Edmonde the ſonne of Charles the. 4. emperour to Rome, and there with great ſolemnitee and pompe receiued the imperyal crowne of Eugenie, and retourned into his countrey without attemptyng anye thing of importaunce.

Not longe after the Duke of Mylaine made warre againſt the biſhop, & ſent Nicolas Fortebraccio with a great noumber of choſen men to Rome: who arriued there wyth ſo muche dilygence, that he paſſed Ponte Molle, and came to the gate Flaminia, ere euer the byſhop was ware of hym.

This Nicolas Fortebraccio had ſerued the biſhop before in a certaine enterpryſe that was made at Verrala and Ciuita Vecchia: & becauſe he had gotten there

many faire bootes, therfore at his retourne the bishop refused to paye him his wages, sayeng, that his layre gayne ought to suffyse him. For the whych Nycolas departed: and nowe retourning vnder the duke of Milaine, with helpe of the Colonnesi, encouraged the romaines so to chalenge their liberty, that Eugenie was faine to disguise him selfe in a monkes habite, and to take his bote toward Ostia. And yet ere he were farre onwardes on his way, the people hearyng of his departure folowed him downe the riuer, with hurling of stones, and shotte of arrowes: & than created newe magistrates after their owne maner, deposing & chasing away all such as had ought to do in the byshops name: and layed siege vnto castel sant angelo, which was all theyr vndooing: For the capitayne thereof wrought this pollicy, he sent his mē forth dayly to skirmishe, and ordeyned certaine of thē to suffer thē selues to be taken: who for theyr libertie and money withall, should promise to slea theyr capitayne, and to betraye the castell. It came to passe as it was deuysed, so that after theyr retourne to the castell, they shewed out a dead mans head, and requiring theyr money offred to deliuer vp the castel. Wherupon certayne of the principall Romaynes entred, and so being taken, were occasion that within the space of .v. monethes after the Romaynes retourned to theyr former obedience: the byshop than being at Florence.

A wittye pollicye.

This meane while the princes & prelates of all christendome began to assemble for keping of the generall counsayle at Basyle: and by one agreement cited thre times Eugenie to come thither, with his cardinalles.

And

And becauſe he came not, they threatned to depoſe him Wherfore he ſent his apoſtolicall bulles thither wyth certaine Cardinalles to confyrme al thinges there determined.

Then ſent he the Patriarke Vitelesco, to Rome who there vſed many cruell tourmentes, & deathes againſt the enemies of Eugenie: & after went into the realme of Naples: pretending title thereunto in the churches ryght, In whyche quarell he foughte wyth the prynce of Taranto, and toke him priſoner with two thouſād horſe: and milled litle of taking the king Alfonſe vnder colour of trueſe.

In his retourne to Rome he vtterlye deſtroyed Preneſte, the chiefe towne belonging to the houſe of Colonna: but at laſt his chaunce was to be betrayed & ſlaine him ſelfe.

¶ After this Eugenie called a counſayle in Ferrara, whereunto Iohn Paleologo emperour of Conſtantinople, with the principall of the greeke church came, & diſputed certayne articles of religion, whyche were agreed vpon in the counſayle folowing at Florence.

¶ And albeit, that Eugenie had great aſſēblies at both theſe counſayles, yet were there a noumbre of biſhops that ſate ſtil at Baſile, alwaies ſommoning Eugeni to repayre thither: & at laſt for lacke of apparaunce (partly through inſtaunce of Philip duke of Milayne, than enemie to Eugeny) the counſaile of Baſile depoſed him and created in his place one Amideus, than beinge an heremite, that before had bene duke of Sauoye: naming him Felix. By reaſon whereof Chriſtendome was deuided into .iii. partes. Two helde wyth theſe .ii.

byſhops,and the.iii.with nother of bothe.

Than retourned Eugenie vnto Rome,where he was ioyfullye receiued of the people, and lodged the fyrſte night at the gate Flaminia:but the ſeconde daye,as he went in Pontificalibus toward ſainct Peters,becauſe the cuſtome of the citee was reyſed double, the people began to crie,downe with the cuſtomes, and with the inuentours of theim:ſo that the biſhoppe was fayne to promyſe theim it ſhould be no more leuied.

Shortly after he made warre in the Marke of Ancona,and recouered it oute of the handes of Franceſco Sforza:and finallye prouoked Charles than Dolphin of Fraunce,by plaine force to driue awaye the byſhops that helde the counſaile at Baſile:and ſo remaygned in hys eſtate tyl he dyed.

Nicolaus.v. Amideus. ¶Nicolas the.v.ſucceded Eugenie,vnto whom Amideus renounced his title by compulſion of the Emperour Frederike. For which renunciacio Nicolas created hym cardinal and legate in Germany. He crowned the ſame Frederike and hys wyfe with the imperyall crownes in Rome,and trauailed much,partly by fayre meanes,& partly by threatninges to appeaſe the warre betwene the princes and ſtates of Italye: but hys excommunicacions could not rule theim.

Calixtus.iii. ¶Calixt the.iii.incontinently after his election prepared an armie againſt the Turkes,armed.xvi.galeis of his owne,and vnder the leading of the patriarke of Aquilegia ſent theim into the Leuant ſeas, & ceaſed not to perſwade all Chriſtian princes,as muche as in hym laye,to that expedicion. Amongeſt whome Alfonſe kyng of Naples,and Lewys Duke of Burgoyne,toke

Alfonſe

ones

ones the crosse on theim towardes that wage: but thorough some occasions they chaunged purpose.

Not longe after the kyng Alfonse dyed. Where vpon Calixt, vnder pretence of the title to the realme of Naples, made great preparacion of warre agaynst Ferdinando sonne to Alfonse: but being preuented by death bothe the rumour and feare therof ceased.

¶ Whan he died, he lefte. 150. thousand dukates in hys coffers, which he sayde he had prepared for the warres against the Turke.

Pius. 2.

¶ Pius the secound, shortlye after his election called a counsaile in Mantua: Vnto the which came ambassadours from all Christen prynces. And all be it, that through the bishops persuasion, who was hym selfe an excellent Oratoure, it was there concluded, that to the expedicon against the Turkes, at the bishops deuyse, euery prince and astate should be contributour, as wel for sendyng of men and municion, as also for maynteinance with money, yet whan it came to the poinct there was nothyng dooen.

Durynge this counsaile, many rumours were reysed in Tuscane, yea & in Rome, that one Tiburtio, sonne of Angelo Massiano with certaine companions, had taken the temple of Pantheon, and there fortifiynge hym, disturbed the whole citee.

¶ The partye called Auersana, enemies to the byshop had also taken Viterbo: whych the bishoppe at his retourne recouered.

¶ All which thynges, with a noumber of commocions in the Marke of Ancona, in Vrobria, and in the confines there, at length the byshop appeased eyther by policye or by force.

He caused Lewes the frenche kynge to renounce certayne exactions, graunted him of the church in ỹ counsayle at Basile: & defended Ferdinando kyng of Naples agaynst John sonne to Raynold duke of Angiow Finally disposing him selfe altogether to the enterprise agaynst the Turkes, & being arriued in Ancona to meete with the Venetian galeyes and captayne, named Christofer Moro, for the same purpose, he dyed of a continuall feuer.

And leauing behind him. 4000. dukates, wyth certayne ships & galeys prepared for that viage: the Cardinalles deliuered both the one & the other to the Venetian capitaine. The money to be sente to the kynge of Hungarie, to relieue his neede, and the shippes to serue on the seas with the Venetian armye.

Paulus. 2. Paule the seconde so muche abhorred learned men, that he accoumpted al thẽ that were of Platos Academie to be heretikes: and deprined a noumbre of vertuous and learned men of suche offyces and promotions as his predecessours had called them to: amongest whom was Platina. And beynge entreated to be more gracious vnto them, considering they were olde men had folowed the court all theyr dayes, and manye also had bought theyr liuinges deare, so that nether by law nor yet by reason, he ought to depryue theym: he aunswered, that forasmuch as the lawe and reason rested in his brest, to allow or disalow what he thought good: his will being so, it is both sufficient, law and reason.

Then picked he a quarell to the familye of Auersa, and with helpe of certayne men of warre, sent to him by Ferdinando king of Naples, he assaulted them, and

toke

toke. nine of theyr Castels. Of the which some were so strong, that they seemed impossible to be wonne. And because the bysshop, through the kinges helpe had attayned these fortresses & possessions, the king requyred certayne small benefites at his handes: but the vncourteise bishop would graunt nothing: wherfore they squared a litle: and then agreed agayne.

After this the bysshop gaue him selfe to idlenesse and playes, and in the shrouing time deuised a noumbre of games & prices to be won, & distributed muche money amongest boyes, the better to maynteyne his passtime In the ende whereof hapned him such a feare, that he wyst not what to do. For it was told him that certaine yong men had conspired against him by the procurement of one Calimaco a simple man. And further, ỹ one Luca Totio a banished Romaine had ben seene wyth a noumbre of banished men in the woodes there by. Upon which enformacions he caused diuers men of reputation to be taken, aswel courtyers as other, and without any matter or good ground of suspicion, put theym to suche terrible tourmentes, that it would greeue any gentle heart to heare it.

He attempted the wynning of Tolfa, fyrst by treason, than by siege, and lastly, when he could not so get it, he purchased it for .7000. dukates.

Likewyse he assaulted the citie of Rimino, to haue taken it from the familie of Malatesta, but he fayled of that enterpryse.

He vsed very great Symonye: and when any bishoprike fel, he would translate the bishops from one see to an other, for the gayne of the fyrst fruytes: by reason

wher-

wherof he gathered a great treasure, and delited verye muche in Iewelles.

¶ Finally he persuaded all men to kepe their children at schole til they could write and reade: and no longer: and dyed sodeinly.

Sixtus. 4. Sixtus the. iiii. was bothe learned and eloquente, and contrary to his predecessours nature delited in learned men.

He dyd his best to succoure the pynces that were driuen out of theyr countreis by the turke, as the queene of Bosina, the Paleologi, the Despoti, and diuers other. And yet did he vnfaynedly bothe reise warres hymselfe, and also cause other pynces to dose the like. Fyrst he beganne with the Florentines, because they had empysoned his nephiew a Cardinall, and had hanged the archebishoppe of Pisa, for killinge Iuliano di Medici.

He made warre to Ferdinando king of Naples, because he had not ayded the Duke of Ferrara agaynste the Venetians.

He made warre also to the Venetians, and gathered all the estates of Italye into a leage against them: leauing them excommunicate when he dyed.

He leuied many dismes and subsidies of the clergye through all Christendome, and was very beneficial to his owne kinne and fryendes.

Finally by his time Macomet the. ii. emperour of the Turkes had taken Otronto in Puglia: and prepared him selfe to the conquest of Italye. Wherefore the bishop made him readie to flee into Fraunce, & had fledde in deede, if God by preuenting of that enterprise had not

had not set a staye to the Turkyshe furye with Mahometes death.

¶ Innocence the.viii. alloyled the Venetians, and trauayled much to agree the christian princes together. Innocentius, 4

Neuertheleſſe because his last predeceſſour had released to the king of Naples certayne pretended duties of the churche: therfore, procuring firſte certayne astates of the realme to rebell, he moued warre agaynſt Ferdinando, and at lengthe constreygned him to agree at his owne appoynctment.

¶ He pacified also a great contention betwene the families of Colonna and Orsina, whose variaunce had bene cause of no small fyre, bloudde, and spoyle. He had a sonne and a daughter, whom he lefte very ryche: and was neuertheleſſe reputed both liberall & pitifull.

Alexander the.vi. was a Spaniarde borne, and a great philosophier. He entred in leage with Alfonse kinge of Naples agaynſt Charles the.viii. Frenche kynge, who then prepared him ſelfe to come into Italy. alexander, 6.

Neuertheleſſe Charles power was suche, that the byshop not only gaue him passage, but also receyued him in Rome honourablye. And yet mistrustinge the french kinges high courage, seinge he feared but litle the eccleſiastical power, the bishop withdrewe hym ſelfe into Castel sant' angelo, though by kayre entreaty he came out agayne, and yelded all his dominion at the kinges will: and beſides that deliuered him Zizimo, brother to the great Turke, that before was the byshops prysoner.

But ere euer Charles retourned out of the realme of Naples, which was within leſſe then halfe a yere after

the bishop had wrought a newe league agaynste hym, wherin the emperour Maximilian, the kynge of Aragone, the Venetians, and the Duke of Mylaine were his colleges. So that Charles in hys retourne towardes France was fought withal, and sore handled.

Finally Charles beyng thus departed, this bishop beganne to ware hygh, and imaginyng how to ertol his owne name, he created his sonne Valentino Borgia duke, causing him fyrst to renounce his cardinal hatte, whiche at his fathers creacion was geuen him, & than made he hym capitaine of an armie sent into Romagnia: where fyrst he warred against Katherine ladye of Imola & Furli, and not onely toke hir iust possessions from hir, but also sent hir prisoner to Rome: and than proceded further against the other lordes theraboutes So that hauyng chased away the families of Maufredi, Ordelaffi, Malateste, Feltrani, Veranei, & diuers other, in maner of no lesse astate than princes, he gatte into his possession the countreis of Romagnia, and Marca d' Ancona, with the dukedomes of Vrbino, Camerino, and Spoleti. Of all the whiche his father entitled him duke, & entred into so greate a pride with hys sonnes prosperitee, that he would saye to hym, eyther a Cæsar or nothyng.

Through coumfort wherof, beynge geuen to ouermuche couetousneste, in hope of empyre, he poysoned diuers riche Cardinalles to haue theyr goodes, & amongest his other practises he appointed poysoned coumfettes for a cardinal that dined with his father, but the father hym selfe was serued of the wronge borc and dyed. And the sonne not long after slaine in the mid-

dest of all his glorye: notwithstandyng that by hys fathers time he was coupled in mariage with the daughter of the Duke of Ferrara.

Pius the.iii. died within a moneth, not wythout suspicion of venim. Pius.3

Julye the.2. beynge a man more geuen to armes than to prayer, more like Iulius Cæsar, than Symon Peter was wont to say, that Maximilian had been meete to be byshop, and he emperour. Julius,2.

Fyrste he procured such a league against the Venetians, that they had neuer a foote of ground leste theym on the maine lande, so that he had for his part Rauenna, with the other cities of Romagnio.

He destroied the familie of Borgia: and quieted muche the ciuile sedicion, that had longe time reigned in the Romayne nobilitee.

He made warre against the Bentiuogli, that thã were lordes of Bononia, & haupnge chased theim away, entred into that citee with lyke triumph, as the auncient Romaine conquerours were wont to doe into Rome. Many tymes he would goe armed hym selfe, specially in the enterprise against Lodouicus Picus of Mirandula.

Finally fearyng the frenche kinges to much prosperites, he entred in league with the Venetians, and the kyng of Spayne against the French kyng, which was occasion of the notable battaile of Rauenna fought on Easter daye: where on both sides were slayne aboute 30000, men. For as I haue bene credibly enformed, whã both battailes were ioigned, Spaniardes on the one side, & frenchemen on the other, the Duke of Ferrara

that came on the frenche part, shotte of his artillerye, amongest the thickest, and slewe a multitude aswell of his frendes as enemyes: but they were all straungers to him.

In conclusion the Frenchemen toke Rauenna, with diuers other cities of the bishops, whych they enioyed not long. For the bysshoppe immediately gatte into his league the emperour, the kyng of Englande, the Germaynes, and the Suizers. So that the frenche kynge being bered on all sides, was easely constrained to forgoe his conquestes and dominions in Italie: specially through force of the Suizers, that vnder the leadyng of theyr Cardinall Seduneſe, came in great noumbre to the bishops seruice: who rewarded them wyth the title of defendours of the church, & gaue them a gylt swordes and an hatte of maintenaunce.

Somewhat before his death he establyshed his cousin Francesco Maria Duke of Vrbine.

Leo. 10. Leo the .x. of the house of Medici, a Florentine borne, was a pleasaunte man of nature, and gaue him selfe more to humanitye and pleasures of this lyfe, than eyther to religion, or to encrease of dominion.

He encreased much the reputation of his house, but because he expulsed by force Francesco Maria, Duke of Urbine out of his estate, & placed in the same, first hys brother Julian, and after his nephewe Laurence, the world accused him of tirannye. For he attempted to doe the like vnto the Duke of Ferrare, but he preuayled not.

Some ill was suspected of him for his to muche delicatenesse in bryngynge vp of children, and for his opi-

nion of

nion of immortalitee.

Adrian the.vii. by contencion amongeſt the Cardinalles happened to be elected, reputed of theym for an ignorannt man, though ſome other had a good opinion both of his vertue and learning. But becauſe his lyfe was nothyng courtly or agreable to the Cardinalles, either through gods viſitacion, or (as moſt mē thinke) through theyr poyſon practyſes, he was ſoone dyſpatched. Adrian. 7.

Clement the.vii. brother vnto Leo the.x. immediatly after his election, toke part wyth the French kynge agaynſt the emperour. So that when the frenche kynge was taken before Pauia, the family of Colonna, which hath ben alwaies imperial, through helpe of Don Hugo Moncada, begaune to warre with the biſhop: and after diuers ſubtil practiſes and perſwaſions, ſo handled the matter, that they entred into Rome, and miſſed but a litle to haue taken the biſhop: who hearynge the rumour, ſodaynly fled to Caſtel ſant'angelo. Wherfore after the biſhop had drawen Don Hugo moncada to his parte, the Colonneſi endured cruell warre to theyr great domage. Clemens. 7.

Then came the duke of Burbone, who was ſlayne with the ſhotte of an handgun frō the walles of Rome but the emperoures armie, whereof he was capitayne toke the citee by aſſault, ſacked, ſpoiled, & burned it: and for the ſpace of.xb. dayes vſed ſuche triumphe, that for theyr paſſetime they would make ſuch cardinalles and prelates as were theyr pryſoners, ride ſcornfully about the towne vpon aſſes, with theyr faces to the tayle: and ſo ſtrictly beſieged Clemēt, that he was faine to geue

them.400000.dukates for his raunsome,and to yelde the castel into the emperours handes.

¶But wythin lesse than.3.yeres after,the Emperoure came him selfe into Italye, and hauinge made peace with the bishop,receiued of hym the imperiall crowne in Bononia,wyth so greate triumphe and pompe,that the like hath not ben heard of in our dates.During the whych there came ambassadours to Clement wyth letters from Peter John of great commendacions, desyre of amitee,and vnion of religyon.

Before theyr departure from Bononia,the emperour graunted the bishop his army against the Florentines and concluded the maryage of hys bastard daughter to Clementes nephewe,Alexander di Medici, that afterwardes was duke of Florence.But ere the Florentines would lose theyr liberties,they sustayned a notable warre for the space of.xii.monethes.

And like as by force he oppressed the Florentines,so by treason he subdued Ancona. For vnder pretence of amitee and counsayle,persuading thē that the Turkes armie by sea,was coming agaynst them,he sent a capitayne of his,called Bernardin,who with certaine men of warre was receyued into the citee, and so vsurped the dominion for the church.

In this bishops time happened such a sodayne rage of water in Rome,that the high toures were drowned and a great numbre of people, with infinite riches lost so that the bishop hym selfe had muche a doe to escape it:which may wel be thought a plage of god, sente for the abhominacion that reigneth there.

Finally Clement mette with the frenche kynge at

Par-

Marseilles in Prouaunce, and there concluded the mariage that folowed betwene Katherine Clementes neece, and Henry now french kyng, than but secounde sonne to tye french kyng. Shortly after whose mariage Clemente dyed.

Paule the.3. that now is byshop, before the tyme of his election, helde hym selfe so indifferent betwene the factions imperyal and french, that no man could know to whether part he was most inclyned. Paulus.3

In the beginnynge of his time he procured all Christian princes to warre againste the Turke, so that the emperour, the Venetians, and he made an army by sea vnder the leadyng of Andrea Doria, who mette with Barbarossa besides Corfu, but they fought no battaile though the Christians were more in noumber & better furnysshed than the Turkes: whether Andrea Doria were blame worthy I can not tell. But ones the Venetians Galeon, a notable shippe, was lefte alone in the middest of the Turkishe naule, that assaulted hir. 4. or .5. houres, and yet at lengthe came cleane awaye in despyte of them all.

This byshop went to Nisa in Prouaunce, where by his procurement the emperour and french king mette and concluded a peace, whiche dured not longe.

Than died the Duke of Urbine. Incontinently vppon whose death, the bishop made warre to the yonge duke Guido Vbaldo for the state of Camerino, and constreigned him for a little summe of money to gene ouer the estate. In the whiche the bishoppe established hys owne sonne Pietro Aluigi Duke.

After this vpon a lighte occasion the bishoppe made warre

warre to Ascanio Colonna, chyefe of that familye: and Peter Aluigi beyng generall of the byshoppes armye, handled Ascanio Colonna and his adherentes so cruelly, that they were faine to abandone theyr owne townes and castelles, and to liue in exyle as banished men, till by the emperours meanes they were restored to the bishops fauour and absolucion.

This Paule to exalte his owne blondde, by consent of his Cardinalles exchaunged the Duchye of Camerino, wyth the churche, for the cityes and territoryes of Placentia and Parma. Whereof he inuested his forenamed son as Duke: whose behauiour was suche, that he continued not fully two yeares: for the nobilitye of the same, detesting his wycked life and tirannye, conspyred agaynste him, and slewe him in his owne house in Placentia: yelding that citee the nexte daye into the emperours handes.

The byshop sent a fayre armye both of horsemen and footemen, to succour the emperour in his enterprise agaynst the Germaines: and made his sonnes sonne, called the Duke Octauio generall.

¶ Finally he is a great astronomer, and so olde a man that (as they say) for the most part he is nourished with the sucke of a womans brestes: and to helpe his colde nature hath two ponge gyrles to lye by him in his bed a nightes.

Anno do.	Nombre of by.	Names.	yeres.	monethes
33	1	Petrus.	25	7
70	2	Linus.	11	3
81	3	Cletus.	11	1
92	4	Clemens.	9	2
101	5	Anacletus.	9	2
110	6	Euaristus.	9	10
119	7	Alexander	10	7
129	8	sixtus.	10	3
139	9	Thelesforus.	11	
143	10	Iginius.	4	3
147	11	Pius.	12	
159	12	Anicetus.	9	4
168	13	sotherus.	9	3
177	14	Eleutherius.	21	6
198	15	Victor.	10	3
208	16	zeferinus.	9	2
217	17	Calixtus.	5	2
222	18	Urbanus.	8	2
230	19	Pontianus.	5	2
239	20	Antherus.	3	1
242	21	Fabianus.	14	
255	22	Cornelius.	3	
258	23	Lucius.	3	2
261	24	stephanus.	3	2
264	25	sixtus. 2.	2	9
266	26	Dyonisius.	6	
272	27	Phelix.	4	3
276	28	Eutitianus.	8	10
284	29	Caius.	11	4
295	30	Marcellinus.	9	4
304	31	Marcellus.	5	6
309	32	Eusebius.	2	7
311	33	Melchiades.	4	7
315	34	siluester.	21	8
336	35	Marcus.	2	
338	36	Julius.	16	4
354	37	Liberius.	16	7
370	38	Phelix. 2.	1	4
371	39	Damasus.	18	2
389	40	siritius.	15	11
404	41	Anastasius.	3	
408	42	Innocentius.	15	2
424	43	zosimus.	1	8
425	44	Bonifatius.	3	4

Anno dñi.	Numbze of kby.	Names.	Yeres.	monethes
		Celestinus.	8	
428	45	Sixtus. 3	8	
436	46	Leo	21	1
444	47	Hilarius.	6	3
465	48	Simplicius	15	1
471	49	Phelix. 3.	8	11
486	50	gelasius	4	8
494	51	Anastasius. 2.	1	10
498	52	Simacus	15	6
499	53	Hormisda	9	
514	54	Johannes	2	8
523	55	Phelix. 4.	4	2
525	56	Bonifatius. 2	2	1
529	57	Johannes. 2.	2	4
531	58	agapitus.	1	
533	59	Siluerius	1	5
534	60	Vigilius	17	6
535	61	Pelagius	11	
552	62	Johannes. 3.	13	
563	63	Benedictus.	4	1
576	64	Pelagius. 1.	10	2
580	65	gregorius.	13	6
590	66	Sabinianus	1	
603	67	Bonifatius. 3.		8
605	68	Bonifacius. 4.	6	8
606	69	Deodatus	4	
613	70	Bonifatius. 5.	5	
617	71	Honorius.	12	11
622	72	Seuerinus	1	
634	73	Johannes. 4.	1	9
635	74	Theodorus	6	5
936	75	martinus	6	1
643	76	Eugenius	3	
650	77	Vitellianus	14	6
653	78	adeodatus	4	7
667	79	Donus	1	2
672	80	agatho	2	6
673	81	Leo. 2.		10
676	82	Benedictus. 2.		10
677	83	Johannes. 5.	1	11
679	84	Conon		
682	85	Sergius	14	8
684	86	Johannes. 6	3	3
698	87	Johannes. 7.	2	7
701	88			

Anno do.	Numbre of ky.	Names.	yeres,	monethes
707	89	Silimus.		20, daies
713	90	Constantinus	7	
729	91	Gregorius. 2.	2	9
740	92	Gregory. 3.	10	8
752	93	Zacharias.	10	2
757	94	Stephanus. 2.	5	1
768	95	Paulus.	10	10
769	96	Constantinus. 2.	1	1
772	97	Stephanus. 3.	3	5
796	98	Adrianus.	23	10
817	99	Leo. 3.	20	5
820	100	Stephanus. 4.	3	7
827	101	Paschalis.	7	3
830	102	Eugenius. 2.	4	
831	103	Valentinus.		40. daies
846	104	Gregorius. 4. 16.	16	
848	105	Sergius. 2.	2	3
858	106	Leo. 4.	2	5
860	106	Johannes. fe. 7.	2	5
863	107	Benedictus. 3.	9	1
871	108	Nicolaus. 9.	5	9
877	109	Adrianus. 2.	10	
887	110	Johannes. 8.	1	5
888	111	Martinus. 2.	1	3
890	112	Adrianus. 3.	6	
896	113	Stephanus. 5.	5	6
901	114	Formosus.		15. dayes
901	115	Bonifatius. 6.	1	3
902	116	Stephanus. 6.		3
902	117	Romanus.		20. daies
902	118	Theodorus. 2.	2	
904	119	Johannes. 9.	3	4
907	120	Benedictus. 4.		40. daies
907	121	Leo. 5.		7
907	122	Christopherus		3
914	123	Sergius. 3.	7	2
916	124	Anastasius. 3.	2	6
917	125	Lando.		
930	126	Johannes. 10.	13	2
930	127	Leo. 6.		6
933	128	Stephanus. 7.	2	1
937	129	Johannes. 11.	4	10
941	130	Leo. 7.	3	6
	131	Stephanus. 8.	3	4

Anno do.	Numbre of by.	Names.	yeres,	monethes
944	132	Martinus.3.	3	6
948	133	Agapitus.2.	9	7
958	134	Johannes.12.	4	10
962	135	Benedictus.5.		2
962	136	Leo.8.	1	4
963	137	Johannes.13.	6	11
969	138	Benedictus.6.	1	6
971	139	Donus.2.	1	6
971	140	Bonifatius.7.		6
973	141	Benedictus.7.	8	5
981	142	Johannes.14.		8
982	143	Johannes.15.		4
982	144	Johannes.16.	10	6
991	145	Gregorius.5.	2	5
994	146	Johannes.17.		10
995	147	Siluester.2.	4	1
999	148	Johannes.18.		5
1000	149	Johannes.19.	4	4
1004	350	Sergius.4.	2	6
1006	151	Benedictus.8.	11	11
1018	152	Johannes.20.	9	
1027	153	Benedictus.9.	10	4
1038	154	Siluester.3.		2
1038	155	Gregorius.6.	2	3
1040	156	Clemens.2.		9
1040	157	Damasus.2.		1
1040	158	Leo.9.	13	2
1053	159	Victor.3.	1	3
1055	160	Stephanus.9.		4
1060	161	Benedictus.10.		8
1061	162	Nicolaus.2.	3	6
1063	163	Alexander.2.	11	6
1073	164	Gregorius.7.	12	1
1085	165	Victor.3.	1	4
1086	166	Urbanus.2.	12	4
1100	167	Paschalis.7.	18	3
1118	168	Gelasius.2.	1	5
1120	169	Calixtus.2.	5	10
1126	170	Honorius.2.	5	5
1131	171	Innocentius.2.	14	8
1145	172	Celestinus.2.		5
1146	173	Lucius.2.		11
1147	174	Eugenius.3.	8	7
1155	175	Anastasius.4.	4	4

1158

Anno do.	Numbre of by.	Names.	Yeres.	moncthes
1158	176	Adrianus.	4	10
1161	177	Alexander.3.	21	
1181	178	Lucius.3.	4	2
1185	179	Urbanus.3.	1	11
1186	180	Gregorius.8.		2
1186	181	Clemens.3.	2	
1188	182	Celestinus.3.	6	7
1195	183	Innocentius.3.	18	4
1214	184	Honorius.3.	10	7
1225	185	Gregorius.9.	14	3
1240	186	Celestinus.4.		18.dayes
1242	187	Innocentius.4.	11	6
1254	188	Alexander.4.	6	6
1262	189	Urbanus.4.	3	1
1265	190	Clemens.4.	3	9
1271	191	Gregorius.10.	1	2
1273	192	Innocentius.5.		5
1273	193	Adrianus.5.		40.dales
1273	194	Johannes.21.		8
1273	195	Nicolaus.3.	3	8
1276	196	Martinus.4.	4	1
1280	197	Honorius.4.	2	1
1284	198	Nicolaus.4.	4	1
1286	199	Celestinus.5.		5
1290	200	Bonifatius.8.	8	9
1291	201	Benedictus.11.		9
1300	202	Clemens.5.	8	10
1302	203	Johannes.22.	19	3
1317	204	Benedictus.12.	7	3
1336	205	Clemens.6.	10	8
1343	206	Innocentius.6.	10	
1353	207	Urbanus.5.	8	5
1362	208	Gregorius.11.		8
1371	209	Urbanus.6.	11	8
1379	210	Bonifatius.9.	14	9
1380	211	Celestinus.6.	15	
1390	212	Benedictus.13.	21	
1399	213	Innocentius.7.	2	
1404	214	Gregorius.12.	2	7
1407	215	Alexander.5.		8
1409	216	Johannes.23.	4	10
1410	217	Martinus.5.	14	3
1415	218	Eugenius.4.	15	
1430	219	Pheliz.5.	9	
1439				

Anno do.	Numbre of by.	Names.	yeres.	monethes.
1447	220	Nicolaus. 5.	8	
1455	221	Calixtus. 3.	3	3
1458	222	Pius. 2.	5	11
1464	223	Paulus. 3.	6	
1471	224	Sixtus. 4.	13	
1484	225	Innocentius. 8.	5	11
1492	226	Alexander. 6.	11	
1503	227	Pius. 3.		1
1503	228	Julius. 2.	9	4
1513	229	Leo. 10.	9	3
1522	230	Adrianus. 6.	1	7
1523	231	Clemens. 7.	11	
1535	232	Paulus 3.	14	

¶ Authoures do varye somewhat in the tymes of these byshoppes, but I haue agreed the best togethers, and so haue set it forthe.

BEcauſe the maruaylous ſituacion of the citee of Venice, amongſt other thinges ſeemeth vnto me moſt notable, I therefore haue thoughte good fyrſt to create therof: and than conſequently to proceede vnto the declaracyon of the Venetians aſtate, theyr cuſtomes and proceadynges.

☞ Of the meruailouſe Site.

VVhan I conſider what thinges neceſſitee cauſeth (hauyng an earneſt preſente for my parte therof) I nothynge meruayle, to ſee the wonders that it worketh. For he that beholdeth the place, where Venice ſtandeth, and would imagine it to be without any buildyng or habitacion, ſhould ſaye it were the rudeſt, vnmeeteſt, and vnholſomeſt place to builde vpon or to enhabite, that were againe to be founde thorowghoute an whole worlde: It ſtandeth open vppon the mayne ſea, foure miles from the neereſt maine land, in ſuch a mariſh, as at euery loiw water leaueth the muddy ground vncouered, and at euery ful ſea drowneth it cleane. And yet men (conſtreigned of neceſſitee) haue brought this mariſhe to ſuche a paſſe, that it is nowe not onelye excedyng ful of people, and riche of treaſure and buyldynges: but ſo holeſome withall (throughe the muche haunte of people and the great noumber of continuall fyres) that I thynke none other citee able to ſhewe ſo

many olde men. But were it not, that as it seemeth nature hath of purpose made a banke two or thre miles of, betwene it & the sea, it were impossible to be enhabited: Because the citee standinge equall with the water, the floudde by reason shold passe through the houses at every full sea. But this banke, that beginneth at Chiozza, and stretcheth towardes the citee of Concordia, 60. miles of lengthe, doeth so defende the water floudde, that within those marisshes it hath nothing the like force as on the other sea costes. For it is a great matter whan the sea swelleth in Venice. iiii. or v. foote aboue the lowe water marke: Notwythstandyng that the citee seemeth to be rather in a part of the sea, than in a marisshe. For euerye chanel (as who wouldе say every streete) is full of water, and the chanels are so many, that you may row through al partes of the citee, though there be waies also, to goe on lande if you list. Which streetes for the moste part are verie narow, and the houses nothyng so faire as on the water side. And in the marisshe, betwene the citee and the maine lande, whan the water is low, the most part of the chanels are so shalow, that the botes haue much a doe to passe to and fro. For the mudde encreaseth dayly, by reason of the lande flouddes, that a nomber of riuers fallynge into the same, doe carye with theim. And a wonderful treasure the Venetians spend in continuall diggyng and caryng away of that mudde, to preserue theyr foresated chanelles, and to defende, that theyr citee ioygne not to the maine lande.

¶ The banke before rehersed, is broken in. vii. places, through the whiche botes maie come in: but no shyppe

can passe

can passe to Venice, sauing at the porte of Malomoco or at the two Castelles of Lio. The entrye whereof is so daungerous (by reason the sandes are mouable here & there) that when any shippe cometh in, she taketh first pilottes to sounde the waye: which in effecte is reputed to be one of the greatest suretyes, that the Venetians haue for defence of theyr citee, agaynst all enemies by sea: and than by land it is impossible to hurt or besiege it, vnlesse the enemie were hable to occupie 150. myle compasse with his armye.

Of buildynges.

NExte vnto the situacion, the maner of theyr buildynge is most to be meruailed at. For almoste euery mã that buildeth an house, maketh his foundacion lower than the water: & euer he set in hande withal, is constreigned to make suche a stronge pale of pyles and mudde betwene his buildyng and the water as shall be able to defende his woorke, whan (after he hathe closed it well) the water and mudde that resteth wythin, is clensed and emptied oute. Than causeth he strong pyles of timber of a great length, to be driuen in, and therupon wyth stone and grauel beginneth his foundacyon. So that whan he hathe brought it to the ful sea marke, he reckeneth to haue furnished one halfe of hys buildyng: notwithstandynge that aboue water I thynke no place of all Europe, hable at this daye to compare with that citee for noumber of sumptuouse houses, specially for theyr frontes. For he that would rowe through the Canale grande, and marke wel the

frontes of the houses on bothe sydes, shall see theim, moze lyke the doynges of pzynces then pzinate men. And I haue been with good reason persuaded, that in Uenice be aboue.200. palaices able to lodge any king

¶ But now to the particuler of theyz notable buildinges: The new Castell, at the mouth of the hauen Lio, foz strengthe and beautie is one of the rarest thynges dooen in these dayes.

¶ The church of .S. Marke is a verye antike thynge, furnished with goodlye pillers of fine marble, (to the noumber of.900. as they saye) besides the flooze vnder foote of smal marble stones, wzought in knottes of diuers colours, and foure faire bzasen hozses ouer the fronte.

¶ The Dukes palaice is a very sumptuouse building, and not yet finished.

¶ The strete called, La piazza di San Marco, is verie fayze and large, and the one syde is builte of harde stone, all vnifozmely with faire glasen wyndowes, and the streets by low, paued ouer with bzicke.

¶ Sainct Markes steeple is a verate hyghe and fayze toure of bzicke, so wel built, that withinfozthe an hozse maye be ledde vp vnto the belfroy.

The Rialto is a goodly place in the hert of the citee, where the merchauntes twyse a day assemble.

¶ The schooles of S. Rocke and .S. Marke, are two notable thynges: the frontes whereof are the fayzest and costliest that euer I haue seen.

¶ Finally, the Arsenale in myne eye excedeth all the rest: Foz there they haue well neere two hundzed galeys in such an ozder, that vpon a very smal warnyng

they

they may be furnyshed out vnto the sea. Besydes that for euery daye in the yeare (whan they would goe to the coste) they should be able to make a newe galey: hauinge such a staple of timber (whyche in the water wythin Th'arsenale hathe lyen a seasoninge, some.20 yeare, some.40. some an.100. and some I wot not how longe) that it is a wonder to see it. And euerye of these galeys hath his couerynge or house by hym selfe on the drye londe: so that the longe lyyng vnoccupyed can not hurte theim. Their masses, cables, sailes, ankers, roodders, ores, and euery other thyng are redy in houses of offices by theim selfes, that vnseen it is almost incredible: with suche a quantitee of artillerie, bothe for Sea and lande, as made me to wonder, besides the harneise and weapons, that suffise (as they saye) to arme an 100000 men. Finallye the noumber of woorkemen waged for terme of life aboute those exercises, is wonderfull. For by all that I could learne, theyr ordinarye is neuer lesse than.600. woorking in the Arsenale, be it peace or warre. And because they haue suche a number of botemen, that continually liue by gaine vpon the water within the citee: they neede not to seeke further for mariners to furnisshe their galeys wythall. For it was credible tolde me, that there are no lesse than 12000. botes dayly seruinge in those theyr chanelles: and almost no bote rowed, but of a sufficient mariner. So that if the Venetians had ben men, as the romains were, geuen as wel vnto chiualrie by land, as vnto the exercise on the water: no doubt thei might many yeres agoen haue subdued the worlde. But sure theyr power hath been more warely gouerned, than valiantly enlar

ged. For sens Constantinople was gotten by the turkes, theyr dominion hath decreased, both by reason (as the same goeth) they rather practise with money, to bie and sel countreys, peace and warre: than to exercyse deedes of armes: and for that moste Venetians are at these dales become better merchauntes than men of warre.

And now me thinketh it conuenient to speake in this place, of the armory that is in an hall of the dukes palaice, called La Sala del Consiglio d'i dieci, whyche surely is a very notable thing.

¶ There be (as they recken) a thousand cotes of plate, parte couered with clothe of gold and veluette, wyth gilt nayles so fayre, that princes myght weare them: besides diuers other fayre harneises made of late, whyche are bestowed in so fayre an order, with theyr diuers kyndes of weapons, furnished of the beste sorte, that a great while lookynge on, could not satisfie me. This hall is diuided into diuers seuerall porcyons, as the house doeth geue it, and euerye porcion hathe his sorte by him selfe very handsomely.

¶ Finally for prouision of freshe water it is a wonder to see theyr noumber of costly welles, made only to receiue the raine that falleth from the houses. I call them costly, because syrst euery well hath his bottome as low as the salt water, and must therfore be so surely walled and stopped with sande on the vtter syde, that it defend the salte water from sokynge in. And on the inner side it muste haue his vent to receiue the water, that falleth from the houses, grauel within to passe the rough, and last of all a fayre pauing of bricke or stone

in the

in the bottome closed about lyke a cesterne, to preserue the purged water.

And though they haue a great noumber of those welles, and plentie of raine, yet the poore men, that dwell in the countrey, doe gaine yerely aboue, 20000. crownes, by bringing theyr botes laden with freshe water from the riuers to Uenice. Yet all this notwithstanding, you shal many times heare much lamentacion among the poore folke for lacke of water.

☞ Of the dominion.

BEsides all those townes and habitacions that are in theyr marishes, & on that long banke betwene them and the sea, as Murano, Mazzorbo, Torcello Malamoco, Chiozze, and others, they haue on the maine land the countrey of Friuli, anciently called Forum Iulii, the citees of Treuiso, Padoa, Vicenza Verona, Bressa, Bergamo, and Crema, with theyr appurtenaunces.

The most part of the countrey of Istria, and vpon the costes of dalmatia (now called Schlauonia) they haue Zara and Zebenica: In the mouthe of the Adriatike sea the ile of Corfu, and in the Leuant seas, otherwyse called Mare Mediterraneum, the notable ilandes of Candia and Cyprus. So that if the ground that they be lordes of, were in one mans handes, he should be no lesse worthie to be called a kyng, than most kinges that are knowen at these dayes. For not long agoen Cyprus (a parte of this) hath had a kynge alone. And how and whan they gotte these thinges, this briefe history hereafter folowing particularly declareth.

Of reuenewe.

As I haue been crediblye enformed by some gentilmen Venetians, that haue had to doe therein, they leauy of theyr subiectes little lesse than .4. millions of golde by the yeare, whiche (after oure olde reckenyng) amounteth to the summe of tenne hundred thousande poundes sterlyng. A thing rather to be wondred at than beleeued, considerynge they reyse it not vpon landes, but vpon customes after so extreme a sort, that it would make any honest herte sorowful to heare it. For there is not a graine of corne, a spoonefull of wine, a corne of salte, egge, byrde, beast, foule, or fysshe bought or solde, that paieth not a certaine custome. And in Venice specially the customers parte in many thinges, is more thā the owners. And if any thing be takē by the waye uncustomed, be it merchaundise or other, neuer so great or small, it is forfeited. For those customers kepe suche a sorte of pyollers to serche al thinges as they come to and fro, that I thynke Cerberus was neuer so greedye at the gates of hell as they be in the chanelles about Venice. And though they in serchynge abote, finde no forfeiture, yet would they not departe wythout drinkyng money. And manye times the meanest labourer or craftesman throughout al their dominyon, payeth a rate for the Poll by the moneth. In so much that a Candiote my friende (one that had dwelled in Constantinople) sware to me by hys faieth, the Christians lined a great deale better vnder the Turke, than vnder the Venetians. It is almoste incredyble what gaine the Venetians receiue by the vsury of the Iewes, both pryuately and in common. For in euerye

cities

cites the Jewes kepe open shops of vsurie, taking gaiges of ordinarie for .xb. in the hundred by the yere: and if at the yeres ende, the gaige be not redemed, it is forfeite, or at the least dooen away to a great disaduantage: by reason wherof the Jewes are out of measure wealthie in those parties.

¶ Of dignitees and offices.

They haue a duke called after their maner, doge, who onely (amongest al the rest of the nobilitee) hath his office immutable for terme of life: with a certaine yerely prouision of .4000. duckates or theraboutes. But that is so appointed vnto him for certaine ordinarie feastes, & other lyke charges, that hys owne aduauntage therof can be but smal. And though in apparaunce he seemeth of great astate, yet in veray deede his power is but small. He kepeth no house, lyueth priuately, & is in so muche seruitude, that I haue heard some of the Venetians theim selfes cal him an honourable slaue: For he cannot goe a mile out of the towne without the counsails licence, nor in the towne depart extraordinarily out of the palaice, but priuately and secretely: And in his apparaile he is prescribed an order: so that in effect, he hath no maner of preeminēce but the bare honour, the gift of a few smal offices, and the libertee, Di mettere vna porta, which is no more, but to propound vnto any of ỹ counsailes his opinion, touching the order, reformacion, or correction of anye thyng: and that opinion euery counsaile is bound taccept into a trial of their sentences by Ballot: (the ma-

ner of the whych ballotting ſhal hereafter appeare, and this priuilege, to haue his onely opinion ballotted, no man hath but he. And wheras many haue reported, that the Duke in ballotting ſhould haue two voices, it is nothinge ſo: for in geuyng his voice he hath but one ballot, as all others haue.

Next vnto the Duke are three called the Signori Capi, or Cai, whyche outwardlye ſeeme inferioure to the Duke, and yet are of more auctoritee than he. For theyr power is ſo abſolute, that if there happen cauſe why, they may arreſt the Duke. And all ſuche proclamacions as concerne ỹ maieſtee of theyr cõmon welth goe forth alwaies vnder theyr name: Lyke as we vſe to ſaye in the kinges name, ſo ſaye they, Da parte de i Signori Cai. Two of whych Cai, or one of them, with one of the Auogadori, haue power. Di metter vna parte, ſuch as is before reherſed of the Duke.

Than haue they .vi. counſaillours of the moſte worthy amonge theim, who are ioygned with the Duke to ſitte in the college for audience of ambaſſadours, and other mattiers of importaunce: and theſe ſpecially are called La Signoria. For notwithſtandynge there be diuers ioygned in the ſame college with them, as, Gliſanii della terra ferma, and other moe: yet thoſe .vi. counſaillours are of moſt reputacion in that place: and accordyngly go alwaies apparailled in ſkarlet or crimſen ſylkes.

In dede, La Signoria, is commonly vſed as the name of theyr whole maieſtee, and principally it doth include the Duke, with the reſte of the chiefe officers or ſenatours (to the number of three ſcore) that accompanieth

him,

him, whan in his solemnitee he cometh to churche, or goeth vnto any of the ordinarie ceremonies abroade in the citee.

¶ Nowe of suche as haue auctoritee to consulte vppon matters of importaunce (as we should say, the kinges maiesstees priuye counsaile) they haue .xvii. persons appointed, called Il Consiglio di dieci: Of whyche the Duke, the three Cai, and the .vi. counsaillours are part.

¶ For matters of conclusion of peace, of warre, of astate, or of other lyke greatest importaunce, they haue a counsaile called, Pregadi, into the which entreth the Duke, with the Consiglio de dieci, and of the other principal officers, to the number of .200. or therabouts.

¶ For matters of iustice, there be diuers other offices, as Il Consiglio di Quaranta, Il Consiglio di trenta gl' auogadori, i Signori di notte, gl' Auditori necchie nuoui, and many moe: whyche haue theyr degrees and orders so appointed, that not one of theim woulle meddel with an others office: beinge a thynge no lesse fearefull vnto theim than poyson. For theyr principall profession is liberree: and he that shoulde vsurpe vpon an other, shuld incōtinently be reputed a tiranne: whyche name of all thynges they cannot abyde. For whan a subiecte of theyrs saieth: sir, you are my lorde, you are my maister, he taketh it for the greatest villany of the worlde.

The Signor della Sanita hathe the charge to see the citee kepte cleane, and the sicke prouyded for. And as for other particuler officers, that haue the ouersight of all maner prouisions and assise of vittailes, it shal suffise to say, that there cometh nothinge vnto theyr citee,

but it is viewed, and an ordinarie price appointed vnto the seller, to the entent the byer be not deceiued.

¶ Of the great counsayle.

NOwe it behoueth me to saye somewhat of theyr great counsaile, whiche seemeth to be the whole stay of theyr common wealth.

There be about. 200. families of name, as Contarini, Morosini, Donati, Badoeri, Foscari, and suche others: of whych families be welneere the noumber of 2500. gentilmen. And all they that are of the age of 25. and vpwardes, doe enter into the greate counsaile: the order of whose admission into the same is: When a gentilman is growen vnto. 20. yeare olde, hys father or frendes doe present him vnto the Auogadori, who taketh his name, & with other names of the same sorte, putteth it into a boxe, vntill the. iiii. of December: beynge the daye appointed, that all they of that age resorte vnto the Duke, vnto whome (besides this boxe) there is brought an other boxe, with so many balles, as the names amount vnto: of whyche euerye fifte ball is golde, and all the rest syluer. Than taketh the Duke a bil out of one boxe, and a ball out of an other, and yf the bil meete with a golden bal, than is that gentilman allowed: and if he meete not, than must he abide a better chaunce the next yere, or els the age of. 25.

¶ This foresayed greate counsaile maye be lykened to oure parliament. For vnto it many matters of importaunce are appealed, and that that it dooeth, is vnreformable. By it all offices are geuen. And into it entreth

treth the Duke, and all the other officers. And synallye there passe so many thinges through that great counsaile (specially offices) that ordinarily euery holy daye, and many times the workendaies, the same sitteth from diner til nyght. The order beyng this.

¶ They haue an hall verie fayre and large, in the principal parte whereof, at the tone ende, sitteth the Duke with certayne counsailours. And ouer agaynst hym at the other end the Cai: and on the sides the Auogadori, with the other magistrates. Than in the body of the hall there be tenne longe benches from the one ende therof vnto the other, and so made, that the gentilmen maye sitte by two rewes on a benche backe to backe. And so euery man being set, in what place it shal please him to take his coming in, the doores are shutte: and the chauncelloure standeth vp, & readeth the office that is voyde, with the names of theim that desyre it: and he that in the election hath most ballottes (so that they passe the halfe noumber) is admitted officer. If there be none that hathe more than halfe the voices as of a 1000. to haue. for: than is the election put ouer tyll an other daye. This maner of geuyng theyr voices by ballotte, is one of the laudablest thinges vsed amongest theim. For there is no man can know what an other dooeth.

¶ The bores are made with an holow place at the top, that a man may put in his hand, and at the ende of that place hange. ii. or. iii. bores, into whiche if he wyll, he may let fall his ballot, that no man can perceiue hym. If there be but two bores (as commonly it is in election) the one saieth yea, and the other sayeth naye: And

if there be.iii.bores(whiche for the most parte happneth in cases of indgement)the one saieth yea,thother sayth naye,and the thyrde saieth nothynge: and they are all well enough knowen by theyr dyuers colours. By this order of ballottyng they procede in iudgement thorough al offices,vpon all maner of causes:beynge reputed a soueraigne preseruation of iustice. For oftentymes the iudges may graunt theyr voices,and neuertheleste(whan they come to the hearing of the matter) doe as theyr consciences shall leade theim: aunswearynge afterwardes, that they did theyr beste,but they could not preuaile.

¶Finally in the disposyng of theyr offices they vse this order:that all offices of preeminence,as of the Signoria,that are before rehersed, or the beeynge Potestate, Capitaine,or Gouernour of anye citee,castell, towne, or countrey,may be geuen to none other,but vnto gētilmen Venetians.All offices,that be vnder commandement,as chauncellour,secretaries,and suche others, are bestowed amongest theyr best knowen citesins. For though there be many of those offices of commaundement verie profitable, yet can no gentylman haue the benefite thereof.Either because they wouil maynteine in theyr personages a certeine maiestee, with theyr lybertee,or els because they woul auoide the inconueniences that maye growe of perpetuitee. For all maner of gentilmēs offices,from the highest to the lowest(the Dukes dignitee onely excepted)ar remouable,some frō yere to yere,some euery.iy.monethes,some more,some lesse(for no gentilman may long enioy one office):So all offices,that appertaine vnto theyr citesins, are durable

rable for terme of life without any chaunge.

¶ Amongeſt al other, this notable order they haue, that two gentilmen of one familie cannot be in one magyſtrate or hygh office together at ones. By reaſon wherof thoſe gentilmen, that of one name are feweſt in number, grow a great deale ſoner and oftner to authoritee, than they that be of the moſt: whiche is thoughte a wonderful helpe of their vnitee and concorde. For if many of one name ſhoulde rule at ones, they myghte happen ſo to agree, that it ſhould be an vndoing of their common wealthe.

☞ Of the proctours and treaſure.

There be certeine principal officers, which ſhould ſeeme exempted from their common wealth and be neuertheleſſe heades of the ſame, that is to wete xii. of the principalleſt called Procuratori di Sã Marco out of whiche number the Duke is alwaye choſen: and thoſe haue their offices for terme of life, with a certeine ſtipende of an hundreth dukates a yere, or there about. Their charge is, ſome to gouerne the reuenewes and treaſure of the common wealthe, and ſome the rentes and treaſure of ſainct Markes church.

¶ As for the treaſure of their common wealth I could neuer fynde the meane to ſee it: but I haue been credible enformed, that it is a great ſuume of ready money locked vp in cheſtes, (that no man may come at) which is ſometime more and ſometime leſſe, as their wealth or charges encreaſe. And thoughe their reuenewe be very

verie great, yet consideryng the often warres that they haue, the great wages that the senatours and officers receiue, the noumber of straunge capitaynes that they wage for terme of life, the noumber of castels and fortresses that they maintaine, fortified with watche and warde, theyr continuall costly buildynges, and finally the vnreasonable charge of theyr Arsenale, & of theyr galeys abrode, I thinke they cannot laye vp any great some at the yeres ende.

The other treasure of saincte Markes churche, I haue seen: the principal thing whereof is a table on the high aulter, plated ouer with siluer, grauen and enameled, and set full of precious stones of all sortes. And than in a little stronge corner on the southside of the church are certeine plates of golde much like womens partelettes set ful of riche stones, a goodly imperial crowne for theyr duke, two kayre vnicornes hornes, and diuers other thinges, the value wherof consisteth onely in the precioule stones: For the golde that is aboute theim is but smal in quantitee, but the stones are many in number, excellent great and kayre, and almoste inestimable of pryce.

Finallye to retourne vnto the Procutours, theyr reputacion is the greatest nert the dukes, and there is none can climbe vnto that dignitee, but either he muste be so worthy, auncient and notable a man, as fewe lyke are to be found amongest theim: or els so riche, that in time of nede he hathe before his election released the common wealth with the lone of a notable summe of money. Whiche seconde sort of election is also commen vppe of late, sens money (as some say) hathe entred in more reputacion than vertue.

Of

¶ Of lawes.

THeyr aduocates (as we shoulde saye oure men of law) studye principally the ciuile lawes, and beysdes that the statutes and customes of the citee, whiche are so many, that in maner they suffise of theim selfes. But he that substancially considereth the maner of theyr procedynges, shal plainly see, that al mattiers are determined by the iudges consciences, & not by the ciuile, nor yet by theyr owne lawes. For in euery office there be dyuers iudges, and that parte that hath most ballottes, preuaileth euer: be it in mattier of debt, of title of lande, vpon life and death, or otherwise. And in euery trial of theefte, murder, or suche other, the partye him selfe is neuer suffred to speake. But there be certeine aduocates waged of the common reuenew, whiche with no lesse study pleade in their defence, than the Auogadori, in the contrarie. One daye the Auogador cometh into the court, and laieth against the felon that, that either by examinacion, by torture, or by witnesse hath been proued: And an other day cometh in the aduocate, and defendeth the felon with the best aũswere he can deuise: so that many times the prisoner tarieth, 2. 3. and sometyme. iiii. yeares, er euer he come vnto his triall of life and death.

¶ This order they obserue in Uenice onely. For oute of Uenice the gentilmã Uenetian, that is Potestate of the citee, towne, or place, hath absolute power to iudge vpon all mattiers hym selfe alone: how be it euerye of theim, hath a counsaile of learned men, to aduyse hym what the lawe commaundeth. Beysdes that, euerye. v.

yeres there be certaine inquisitours, called Sindici, sēt forth to reformme extorcions, and all other things that they fynde amisse, throughout theyr whole dominion.

¶ Finally there is a law in Venice, that no gentilman Venetian may speake with any ambassadour, without licence of the Signoria, for feare of intelygence, or of daungerous practise. And because they feare, least ciuile sedicion might be the destructiō of their commō wealth, as of dyuers other it hath been, therefore they haue prouided an order, that whan any two gentilmen happen to fall out, either they doe so dissemble it, that theyr malice neuer appeareth to the worlde, or els they agree within theim selfes. For if it come to the Signorias knowlage, it cannot be chosen, but he that is most faultie receiueth a great rebuke, and many tymes in those cases diuers are banished, or sharply punished. As for theyr other lawes, thoughe I were sufficientlye expert in them, yet partly for briefenesse, and partly because they are not so much necessarye to my purpose, I passe theim ouer. But this is cleere, there can be no better order of Iustice in a common wealth than theirs if it were duely obserued. How be it corrupcion (by the aduocates meanes) is so crept in amongest the iudges, that poore men many times can wante no delaies in the processe of theyr matters.

☞ Of warre.

I Finde two sortes of warre, one by sea, an other by lande.

¶ By sea the Venetians theim selfes-gouerne the whole

whole, and by lande they are serued of straungers, both for generall, for capitaines, and for all other men of warre: because they? lawe permitteth not any Venetian to be capitaine ouer an armie by lande. (Fearing I thynke Cæsars example) Neuertheless with they? armie by lande, they sende for the dyuers of they? gentylmen, some as legates, some as payemaysters. So that they? generall, (what noble man soeuer he be) hath alwaies a counsaile of the Venetians about him: by whō in maner all thynges are dosen.

And by sea euery Galey hath one gentylman Venetian for capitaine, by the name of Sopracomito; and ouer a noumber of galeis one Legate (as it were an admyrall) that may hange and punisshe at hys pleasure. Thys is ordinary both in peace and warre, For though the peace be neuer so sure & quyet, yet faile they not to send forth yerely certaine armed galeis to kepe the seas againste Corsales, & Pyrates: not onelye because they? merchaundise may passe saufely to and fro, but also for the honour that they claime in the dominion therof.

For yerely on the ascension day, the Duke, with the senate, in they? best aray vse to go into the hauen at Lio, and there by throwyng a ryng into the water, to take the sea as they? espouse.

¶ Finallye whan they happe to haue any daungerouse warre by sea or lande, they creat a Proueditore, who (out of Venice) is of no lesse authoritee, thā the Dictatour was wont to be in Rome: specially by sea. And lightly they neuer make a Proueditore, but either they be in great feare, or peril. And throughout all they? dominion, within any citee or walled towne, no man may

carie weapon without a speciall licence.

¶ Of common prouision and charitable deedes.

THeyr diligent vse in prouision for graine is notable. For be it deare or good cheape theyr common graner (whiche is a myghtie greate house) is in maner alwayes furnished. So that lyghtly in the citee can be no great dearth, because many times of their owne common purse, they are contented to lose for the poore peoples relefe (though another time they pay theim selfes the double).

¶ They haue also certaine schooles or felowships gathered together for deuotion, as one of saincte Marke, an other of saincte Rooke, one of this saincte, an other of that: which (beyng for the most part substanciall men) doe releeue a noumber of the poore after this sorte.

Poore people. ¶ They geue theim ones a yere a course liuery, with a certaine smal stipende, for the which the poore man is bound to carie a taper at one of the bretherne or sisters burial, and besides that to attend certeine holidaies at the schoole, where the principal bretherne assemble, to dispose vnto the mariage of poore younge women and in other good woorkes, that parte of money that theyr rate for the time doeeth allow: and afterwardes (wyth theyr prieftes and clerkes) goe a procession a certayne circuite, in the which the pore men lykewyse cary their tapers before theim.

Hospitals. ¶ Furthermore there are certaine hospitalles, some for the sicke and diseased, and some for poore orphanes, in

which they are nourisshed vp til they come vnto yeres of seruice: and than is the man childe put vnto a craft: and the maidens kepte till they be maried. If she be fayre, she is sone had, and little money geuen with hir: if she be foule, they auaunce hir with a better porcion of money.

For the plague, there is an house of many lodgeings, two miles from Venice, called the Lazaretta, vnto the whiche all they of that house, wherin one hath been infected of the plague, are incontinẽtly sent, and a lodgeyng sufficiente appointed for theim till the infection ceasse, that they may retourne.

¶ Finally for prisoners they haue this order: Twise a yere, at Christmas, and Easter, the Auditon doos visite all the prisones in Venice, and there geue audience vnto all creaditours that haue anye debtour in prison for the summe of .50. duckates and vnder. If the partye be hable to paie, dates are geuen, and sureties founde: and if the debt be desperate, than doe they theim selfes agree with the partie for moze or lesse, as the likelihode is, and pay hym of the common purse. So that ere euer they departe, they empty the prisones of all theim that lie for that summe. Prysoners.

¶ Of customes in theyr lyuynge.

TO speake of the gentilmã venetians priuate likes and customes, I wot not whether it be best to follow the common reporte: or to dissemble the matter. And yet me seemeth I cannot doe moze indif-

ferently than recite what is vsed to be said on both sides. ¶ If any man would saye, there were no woorthy men amongest the Venetians, he should greatly erre. For (as I beleue) there be some, and specially of those olde fatherly men, as wyse, as honest, as faithfull, as honorable, and as vertuous, as in any place can be found. Lykewise some of the younge men, as gentill, as liberall, as valiaunte, as wel learned, as full of good qualities, as maye be. But to speake of the greatter numbre, straungers vse to report, that the gentilman Venetian is proude, disdeinful, couetouse, a greate nygarde, a more leachour, spare of liuing, tyranne to his tenant, finally neuer satisfied with hourdyng vp of money. For though (saie they) he haue. viii. or. ix. or. x. thousand duckates of yerely reuenew, yet would he kepe no moe persones in his house, but his wife and children, with ii. or. iii. women seruauntes, and one man., or two at the most, to row his Gondola. He would goe to the market hym selfe, and spend so miserablie, that manye a meane man shal fare better than he. Of hys. 10000. duckates a yere, if he spend three or. iiii. C. in his house, he esteemeth it a wonderful charge. Beside all thys, he hath. ii. or. iii. Iewes, that choppe and chaunge with him dayely: by whose vsury he gaineth out of measure. And yet would he rather see a poore man starue, than relieue hym with a penie. It is true, he woul haue hys wyfe go gaie and sumptuously apparailed, and on his womã besides, if he be a louer (as in maner they be al) he would sticke for no coste. To the mariage of hys daughter. 30. 40. or. 50. thousande duckates is no mervaple. Finallye hys greatest triumphe is, whan

sainct

saincte Marke hath nede(for vnder that name is comprehended theyr commou welth)to be hable to disburse an huge summe of money in lone,to receiue yerely till he be repaied.10.12.or.15.of the hundreth.

¶This kynde of prest the Signoria vseth to take(borowyng of all them that are hable to lende)whan they happen to haue warres. And they that may,doe the more willyngly lende:because they are not onely well payed againe with the vsurie,but also the more honoured and fauoured as long as theyr mony is out of their handes.

¶This is theyr trade,saieth the straunger. But the Venetian to the contrary defendeth hym selfe on thys wyse.

¶Admitte(saieth he)that this reporte were true, If I be proude,I haue good cause,for I am a prince and no subiecte.If I be spare of liuyng,it is because my common wealth alloweth no pompe,and measure is holesome.If I kepe few seruantes,it is because I nede no moe. If I bie my meate my selfe,it is because,I would eate that,that I loue,& that(hauing little a do)I woulde exercise my selfe wythall. As for my tenaunt,he lyueth by me,and I am no tyranne for husbanding mine owne. If I gaine,I gaine vpon my money,and hyde not my talent in the grounde. If I loue,I hate not, if she be fayre, I am the more woorthie. If I spende little,I haue the more in my purse. If I spende largely with my daughter,it is because I would bestow hir on a gentilman Venetian,to encrease the nobilitee of myne owne bloudde, and by meane of suche alyaunce to atteine more habilitee to rule and reigne in my com

mon

mon wealth : Besydes that, my money: if hir housbande die, his hirs and no mans els. If my wyfe go gaie, it is to please myne eye, and to satisfye hir. In keping my money to lende vnto saincte Marke, it is both an helpe to my common wealth, and a profite vnto my selfe.

¶ And thus defendeth the Venetian it, that in maner al the world laieth vnto his charge.

¶ But surely many of theim trade and bring vp their children in so much libertee, that one is no sooner out of the shel, but he is hayle felow with father and frend, and by that time he cometh to.xx. yeres of age, he knoweth as muche lewdnesse as is possible to be imagined. For his greatest exercise is to go amongest his companyons, to this good womans house and that. Of whiche in Venice are many thousandes of ordinarye, lesse than honest. And no meruaile of the multitude of their common women, for amonge the gentilmen is a certeine vse, that if there be diuers brethern, lightlye but one of theim doeth marie: because the number of gentilmen should not so encrease, that at length their common wealth might ware vile: wherfore the reste of the brethern doe kepe Courtisanes, to the entent they may haue no lawful children. And the bastardes that they begette become most commōly monkes, friers, or nunnes: who by their friendes meanes are preferred to the offices of most profite, as abbottes, priours, and so forth. But specially those Courtisanes are so riche, that in a maske, or at the feast of a mariage, or in the shrouynge tyme: you shal see theim decked with iewelles, as they were Queenes. So that it is thought no one citee a-

gaine

gaine hable to compare with venice, for the number of gorgeouse dames. As for theyr beaultie of face, though they be fayre in deede, I would not highlye commende theim, because there is in maner none, old or yong vnpeincted . In deede of theyr stature they are of the most parte verie goodly and bigge women, wel made and stronge.

The libertee of straungers.

ALL men, specially strangers, haue so muche libertee there, that though they speake very ill by the Venetians, so they attempt nothinge in effect against theyr astate, no man shal control theim for it. And in theyr Carnouale time (which we call shroftide) you shal see maskers disguise theim selfes in the Venetians habite, and come vnto theyr owne noses in derision of theyr cuskomes, theyr habite, and misery.

¶ Further, he that dwelleth in Venice, may recken him selfe exempt from subiection . For no man there marketh an others dooynges, or that meddleth with an other mans liuyng. If thou be a papist, there shalt thou want no kynde of superstition to feede vpon . If thou be a gospeller, no man shall aske why thou comest not to church. If thou be a Iewe, a Turke , or beleeuest in the diuel (so thou spreade not thyne opinions abroade) thou arte free from all controllement. To lyue maryed or vnmaried, no man shal aske the why. For eating of flesshe in thine owne house, what daye so euer it be, it maketh no matter. And generally of all other thynges, so thou offende no man priuately, no man shal of-

ſende the: whyche vndoubtedly is one principall cauſe, that draweth ſo many ſtraungers thither.

¶ An abbridgemente of the Venetian hiſtories from the edificacion of the citee vnto thys day.

OMitting the diuers opinions of manye men touchinge the beginninge of the Venetian name, I will recite that whyche moſte writers agree vpon, (that is to ſay) either they are deſcended of certayne people called Heneti, (which after the deſtruction of Troie came with Anthenor into Italie: and landyng in thoſe marſhes of the Adriatike ſea, enyabled the countrey theraboutes) or els of certaine Britons called Veniti, part of thoſe Frenchemen that fyrſt paſſed the mountaines, whoſe habitacion in Britaine, at that time called Veneti, is ſuppoſed to be now called Vanes. So that whether it be of Heneti, or of Veneti, at length they were called Venetiani.

Now to come to the foundacion of theyr citee, I finde, that betwene the yeeres of grace. 422. and. 466. (about the tyme that Attila plaged the whole region of Italy) the gentilmen and citeſins, principally of Padoa, and generally of all the countrey about, betwene the Alpes and the Venetian Goolfe (to flee the fury of the Hunni, that wyth fyre and ſwoorde conſued all thinges

thinges before theim) resorted with theyr goodes and richesse into the marisches, where Venice, with hir other membres now standeth: and perceiuyng what a commoditee or sauegarde those marisches were against the enemies rage (Italy beyng so ofte scourged with warres at that tyme) they vpon agreement beganne the edification of that citee, in the place Riuo alto, now called Rialto: where was builded the churche of saincte James, that yet vnto this daie remaineth. And albe it, that before this tyme the bankes within those marisches had been occupied and enhabited: yet because the inhabitaantes were pore fisshermen: the place merited not to be writen of or mencioned, vntill suche tyme as those gentilmen and citesins resorted thither. Wherefore I saie, that the Padoanes (moste of auctoritee amongest the rest) after this fyrst buildyng of the citee, ordeined certaine consules for the gouernyng therof: who for a few yeres, now one, now other ruled ỹ same: vntill the citee beganne to ware greate and populous: and that (because the situacion of the places in the water, would not suffer the citee to be one whole thing together, but diuided into diuers ilands, as the water did geue) they were faine to appoincte yerely ouer euerye Iland one Tribune to gouerne them: and for matters concernyng the whole cõmon wealth, they ordeined a generall counsaile, wherunto all the Tribunes, with certeine of the chosẽ citesins, shold repayre. And so vnder these Tribunes began theyr common welth to encrease, theyr citesins to make shippes, as wel of warre as of merchandise, & so to trafficque abrode the worlde. But pryncipally the diligence of theyr fisshers yelded

theim no ſmal gayne, by reaſon that theyr ſaltfiſhe, caried into otyer places, was bought as a ſpecyall merchaundiſe. So that in proceſſe of tyme theyr reputacion, wealth and force began ſo much to growe: that in the defence of Italie, and fauour of the Emperoure Juſtinian (whoſe capitaine Belliſario had beſieged the Gottiſhe kyng Vitige in Rauenna) they made out certaine ſhips and botes, and vpon the riuer of Po, mette with parte of the Gottiſſhe armie, fought with theim, and diſcomfited them. Againe, in company of Valeriano, gouernor of Rauenna, they were part of thoſe. 40 ſhips, that diſtomfited other. 40. ſaile of the king Totila before Ancona: taking & drowninge the moſte part of them. For the which doinges they were both embraced of themperour, & alſo much honored of his capitains: in ſo muche that the famous Narſes, being ſent of the emperour to defend Italy againſt the foreſaid gotes, what to thanke the Venetians, and to ſee the maner of theyr citee, went in perſon vnto Venice, where he commended much the diligence of theyr goodly building: and in that meane while ſent his armie by land to Rauenna: in which iourney at the paſſage of the Po, the Venetian ſhyppes dyd hym great ſeruice.

¶ Thus whyle Narſes was in the Rialto of Venice, the Padoanes ſent ambaſſadours vnto hym, complaynyng, how the Venetians had vſurped vpon them thoſe mariſhes, whiche time out of mynde had been theirs: together with the hauen of the riuer of Brent. Whervnto the Tribune of the Rialto made ſuch an anſwere that Narſes curteſely told theim, that mattier required longer debatyng, than his haſtie iourney wold as than permitte.

permitte: wherfoze erhoztiug the Padoanes to take ap-cience foz the tyme, he deſired theim, in the defence and foztifiynge of their countrey, to ſhewe like diligence, loue, and fayth towardes the empyze, as the Venetians had doen: and than ſo much the moze ſhould he be glad to aduaunce them.

¶ And ſo vnder the fauour of diuers emperours thoſe ſlandes of Venice, as Grado, Eraclea, Equilo, & Malamoco were gouerned of pziuate tribunes, & by a generall counſaile foz the ſpace of .200. yeres and moze, without any greate incident, wozthy to be mencyoned: excepte that betwene the biſhoppes (afterwarde made Patriarkes) of Aquileia, which ſtandeth in the maine lande: and of Grado, that lieth in the mariſches, there was muche warre, ſtrife, and feighteyng foz the intereſt of theyz iuriſdictions.

¶ Finally in the time of Conſtantine the .iiii. after Italie thzough diuers warres had been ſoze afflicted, and that from all partes the perſones that were of power (foz theyz ſauegarde) fledde thither: Venice encreaſed ſo much, that Luipandro, Duke of Friuli, either foz enuye, oz foz feare of their towardneſſe, pzouoked certeine of hys neighbours to oppzeſſe Venice. And ſecretly on a night made out a certeine noumber of botes downe the water, and ſodeinely aſſaulted Grado, Eraclea, and Rialto: where they toke certeine ſhippes, laded with merchaundiſe, lately commen out of the eaſte partes. But incontinently as the rumour was reyſed, theſe aſſaulters fledde, and were ſo purſued, that many of theim were ſlaine, many hurt, and the moſte parte of theyz pzay recouered. Neuertheleſſe the noyſe of the

people

people continued, & specially the lamentacion of them that had lost theyr friendes or goodes. Wherefore in Eraclea they called a counsaile, and muche a doe there was through diuersitee of opinions: because the people laied all the fault in the ill gouernaunce of the officers But at last the Patriarke of grado, an ancient learned man, of auctoritee, was praied to say his mynde. Who with a longe oracion persuaded, that without concorde it was impossible to liue surely or quiet, and that wher as were dyuers heades, there coulde be no concorde. Wherfore his opinion was, that they shuld chose them one only prince, to gouerne theyr common wealth, and preserue theyr unitee. For where any astate (saide he) is not gouerned with one consent & will, there nother haboundaunce of money, strength of place, noumber of people, worthinesse of capitaines, nor helpe of frendes or neighbours can auaile. So the whole counsaile agreeyng to his opinion, resolued vpon the election of a Duke: that shoulde haue auctoritee and charge ouer al matters of importaunce, to call the counsaile, and to haue priuate thinges referred vnto him by the Tribunes: that the counsaile of the clergie should not assemble, but by licence of the Duke: and that the benefites geuen by the people and clergie, shoulde be confyrmed by hym.

Paolo, Lucio.

To whiche dignitee they fyrste elected a worthy citesin Paolo Lucio of Eraclea, geuinge him an othe for the administracion of iustice, and for the quiet rule ouer them without tyrannie.

Thus whan Paolo had taken the gouernaunce into his handes, he beganne to agree those persons, that be-

fore

fore contended: whiche was so muche the more easie to doe, by as muche as at that time there was almost continuall warres betwene the Lumbardes, & some of the Dukes, either of Friuli, Spoleti, or Beneuento: that in maner all theyr neighbours were in armes.

When he had thus wel quieted his citezins, he ordeined watche and warde to be kept at the mouthes of the riuers: fortifying some of theim with castles, as tyme and place would serue him.

He commaunded euery towne to haue a certaine number of botes in a readinesse, whan the Duke shold geue them any token: and restored the Venetian dominion vnto his olde lymites, now called La piaue Secca.

He maynteined amitee with the kyng Ariperto, and made peace with Luipandro, wyth condicions of aduauntage. But amongest all his other doynges the worthiest of memory, was, that he reformed the lawes and brought theim into such a playne and briefe order, that eche man might be his owne lawyer: Affirming, that nothyng can more hynder a man, than the folowyng of longe suites and greedy lawyers. Wherefore in those dates they vsed none imperiall lawes: but besides those theyr fewe lawes written if there happened any doubte, incontinentlye they resorted vnto the lawe of nature, cholyng that, which semed vnto theim moste iust and honest. Lawes.

After Paolo, an other citezin of Eraclea, named Marcello, a very sober & wise man, was elected Duke, but in diligence he was nothing comparable vnto Paolo. Marcello.

In the tyme of this Marcello (excepte the stryfe and contencion betwene the patriarke of Aquileia & Gra-

do, whi-

do, whiche I esteme not woorth the writynge) I fynde no woorthy mattier of memorie.

Next hym succeded Orso, a man not onely noble of blondde, but also woorthie of dedes.

Orso.

He first vsed to bryng vp the youthe of Venice in the exercise of armes. He augmented the number of souldiours in the shippes of warre, and thorough his valiauntnesse restored Paolo, one of the Grekish emperours cayptaynes, vnto the astate of Rauenna. In which enterprise Perendio, Duke of Vicenza was slayne, and Ildeprandro, nephewe of Luipandro taken prisoner: who by commission of the same Luipandro, had (by syege) gotten the sayd citee from the foresaid Paolo.

This victory was one notable thing that first exalted the Venetian name.

Finally vpon contencion spronge betwene the Eracleani and Equilesi, for the lymites of theyr confines, for the which was dayly feightinge betwene theim the space of two yeres: This duke Orso supposed to be the authour of that sedicion, in a tumult of the people was slayne.

Surely a lamentable ende, of the glorioule and happie begynnynge of so worthie a man. The more because of an other inconuenience that folowed, that the Patriarke of Aquileia toke from the Venetians the townes of Mossone and Centenara: though afterwardes thorough the menaces of Gregory, bishop of Rome he restored Mossone, whan he had vtterlye destroyed Centenara.

737 After the death of Orso, there beganne a new rumour for chesing of the Duke, and many grudged, that Eraclea a-

clea alone had so long time enioyed the honour therof. Wherfore now bothe the seate and election was translated vnto Malamoco, whiche at that tyme was very muche encreased bothe in people and richelle. Nevertheleſſe the counsaile of this election coulde not agree amongeſt them selfes, & therfore at length concluded, to chose a new maner of officer, namyng him, Maister of the souldiours, whose authorites was remoueable from yere to yere.

The first was Domenico Leone, and succedyng him was Felice Cordacchino, the. iii. Deodato sonne of the Duke Orso, who continued in that office, as some saye, two yeares. The fourth Iuliano Ipato, and the v. Giouanni Fabritiaco, who before the ende of his yere, was put out of his office, and loſt both his eies. In which meane time the olde ſtrife, betwene the Equileſi and Eracleani, renewed, in so much that meeting together, neere vnto the chanel, now called dell' arco, so many on both sides were slaine, that almoſte they came to naughtes.

¶ The Venetians (wearied with these and suche other businesses) retourned to theyr old gouernance, electing the forenamed Deodato to theyr Duke: who finallye beeyng occupied aboutes the fortifiyng of Brondolo, was assaulted by Galla, a citisin of Malamoco, & beynge taken prisoner, had his eies put out. The naughtie dooyng whereof so muche offended the Venetians, that ere the yeare passed, they toke Galla, put oute hys eies, deprined him of his vsurped astate, and at last toke from his life: chosing Domenico Menicaccio or Monagario, in his place. Deoday. 737

Domenico Menicaccio. 747

¶ This Domenico had not so great auctoritee at hys predecessours, for to abate the power of their duke, whiche by the passed experience the Venetians thoughte to be ouerlarge, they ioygned in company wyth hym two of theyr Tribunes, whych so much offended thys Domenico, that at length he openly contended, to recouer the wonte absolute power. And therfore was not onely deprined of his dygnitee, but also for a punyshment hys eies put oute.

mauritio. 752

¶ And than in his place was created a worthye ryche man called Mauritio of Eraclea: who in hys time pacifyed muche bothe the secrete grudges, and also the open contencions betewene his priuate citesins: and obteined the see of a bishop to be placed in Venice, in the Churche of sainct Peter. Whych bishop was afterwardes exalted vnto the degree of a Patriarke, by Nicolas the.v. byshop of Rome.

¶ Duringe the rule of this Mauritio the Venetians (after great debating of the matter in counsaile to and fro) graunted to ayde kynge Charlemayne with. xxv. vesselles wel armed and prueysed, whych did Charlemaine great seruice in the assaulte of Pauia, whan he toke Desiderio king of Lumbardye prysoner.

Finally Mauritio obteining of the Venetians to haue hys sonne Giouanni, ioygned in the astate with hym, and hauing ruled. xi. yeres alone, and vii. yeres ioynctly with his sonne, he dyed.

Giouanni 768

Giouanni likewise ruled alone a certaine space: and obteined his sonne Mauritio to be ioygned wyth him: who bothe togethers bare them selfes verye ill towardes theyr citisins. And amongest other thynges Mauritio, be-

ritio, beyng sent of his father vnto Grado, caused the Patriarke of that place to be throwen downe out of a toure: because he was wonte to warne bothe the father and sonne of theyr ill behauyours. Wherfore they became hateful to their citisins: so that a conspiracy was wrought against theim, the chefe wherof was named Obelerio, that before tyme had been Tribune of Malamoco.

This conspiracie came so to passe, that the people proclaimed Obelerio duke, & the rumour was suche, that Giouanni, with his sonne, and one Christofer a bishop theyr friende, fled all three vnto Mantua.

Than was Obelerio placed in the astate, who shortely obteined his brother Beato to be ioigned with hym. Obelerio 788

In theyr time the aūcient malice betwene the Eraclea ni and the Equilesi renewed, in such wise that it made a sowle slaughter amongest theim. Wherfore it was finallye concluded, that both the one and other towne should be destroied, & the inhabitauntes reduced vnto Malamoco and Rialto. And so was it quickely done, the rather because euen than kynge Pepine, sonne of Charlemaine was determined to assayle the countrey and hauēs of Dalmatia, against the grekish emperour Nicefero: towardes whyche enterprise Pepine required passage and bytailes of the Venetians. But they wolde not consent therto though Obelerio their duke fauoured the frenche parte. For in consultyng vppon this matter were great disputacions, & manye reasons laied bothe for the one parte and the other: but finallye this opinion of Agnolo (a worthie citesin of Eraclea) was best allowed: that for the neweltee of kynge Pe-

pine, they should not shewe theim selfes vnconstaunte to breake theyr auncient amitee with the Grekish emperour: not withstandyng that Pepine by reason of the hauen of Rauenna, might in maner vndoe their traffique by sea.

¶ So Pepine to be auenged, made an armie to Rauenna, and comming towards Venice, toke Brondolo, Chiozza, Pelestrina, Albiola, & came so nere, that he cõstreigned the duke & senatours of Malamoco, to flee vnto Rialto with theyr richesse and chyldren. Finally Pepine was discomfited by the imperial capitaine Micea, sent as wel to succour the Venetians, as also to defend Dalmatia: so that incontinently there folowed a peace betwene all three, that is to say, the imperial army, king Pepine, and the Venetiãs, to their great contentacion. For if Pepine in that voyage had preuayled, they had bene in a daungerous case.

Angelo Particiaco. 792

This meane while the Venetians had banished Obelerio and Beato as partiall of the frenche parte: and elected to theyr duke Angelo Particiaco, that before had dissuaded theim from Pepines amitee. Who obteined of the French king a confirmacion of the passed peace: and after reedified the towne of Braclea, where he was borne, callinge it Citta nuoua, and in it began the palaice of the Signoria, that the dukes hitherto vse to dwell in. And obteinynge his sonne Giustiniano to be ioigned with him (after he had builded dyuers fayre churches, and doen many good deedes) he dyed.

Giustiniano. 810.

¶ Giustiniano thus confyrmed Duke, incontinentlye called home his brother Giouanni, that for his yll behauiour had been before banished, and toke him as his

compa

companion in the astate. In whose time at the instance of the Greekishe Emperour, the Venetians sent an armie by sea against the Turkes, to defend Sicilia.

And certaine merchauntes of Venice coming from Alexandria in Aegypt, brought with them (as they say) the bodye of S. Marke, vnto whose honoure the sayed Giustiniano began the church of sainct Marke before rehersed: and the whole cites euer sens haue taken him for their aduocate.

Finally, vpon his death bedde, he toke an order for the continuance of that buyldyng and dyed, Leauyng his brother Giouanni alone in the astate, who ioygned the church of Saint Marke vnto the Dukes palaice: and founde prouision for prieskes to synge and serue in the same. And the warre beyng begunne betwene the Venetians and the Narentani, he made an armie, & went vnto Veglia in the Ile of Corcia, & toke it with Obelerio before named in it: who had begunne a preparacion there to recouer hys olde astate. Wherefore Giouanni caused hym to lose his head, and afterwards burned Malamoco, because certeine of Obelerio hys olde fryendes fledde thither for refuge. Giouanni. 813.

¶ Finally this Duke Giouanni had two conspiracies made against hym: the first was occasion that he fledde into Fraunce: the secound (after he was reconsiled ones againe vnto hys astate) made hym to forsake the worlde, and become a friere in Grado, where he dyed. Pietro Gradenico 826

After Giouanni succeded Peter Gradenico, who ioigned hys sonne Giouanni in the astate wyth hym: and at the requeste of the Greekyshe emperour sent .60. saile armed, against the Poores, that were than newly lan-

ded beſydes Rome. Whych.60. ſayls were all taken or drowned. In followyng the victorie the ſame Pooc res ſcoured all the Adriatike ſeas euen to Candie & in theyr way toke certaine Venetian ſhippes, laden wyth merchaundiſe, comyng out of Soria. So that whether it were for this ill lucke, or through ſedition that than reigned in the citee, a conſpyrarye was made againſte this Pietro, & was finally ſlaine in the church of ſainct Zacheria, hearyng of euenſong. Whych ſodeyne death troubled not a little the citee, & cauſed the office of the chief Anogadori to be made, to purſue the trial of man-ſlaughters and murders. An office vnto this daye of no ſmal auctoritee amongeſt the Venetians.

Anogadori

Than was Orſo Particiaco made Duke: who with helpe of his ſonne Giouanni, diſcoumfited the Saraſi-nes, that a little before had gotten Candia, robbed a-longeſt al the coſtes of Dalmatia, and had ronne euen vnto Grado. For the worthy and valiant doyng wher-of the Greekiſh emperour Baſilio rewarded Orſo with much honoure, who for his parte againe not to ſeeme vncurteyſe, ſent. xii. brazen belles vnto the Emperoure for a preſent: beyng (as they ſaye) the fyrſt belles that euer were vſed amongeſt the Greekes.

Orſo Particiaco 865

Belles.

After Orſo, his ſon Giouanni as wel for his fathers merites, as for his owne worthyneſſe, was confirmed Duke. In whoſe tyme the Rauennates receyued ex-treeme damages by the Venetians, and the cytee of Comacchio was gotten. Finally this man beyng fal-len ſycke, and hauyng his brother ioigned with him in the aſtate (a man not the meteſt to rule ſuch a common wealth) depoſed both him ſelfe and his brother remyt-

Giouanni. 884

tyng

tyng the counſaile to the election of a newe Duke.
An acte ſurely not onely rare and meruailouſe, but alſo worthy of high commendacion.

Than Pietro Candiano was elected, who proued ſo worthy in armes, that twyſe he fought with the Schlauone armies, and ouercame theim, although in the laſt battaile he was ſlayne. Pietro Candiano 890

After whoſe death Giouanni Particiaco, before named, was ones againe called vnto the dignitee, & continued in the ſame til the Schlauone warres were fully quieted, and than againe was contented that Pietro Tribuno ſhould be choſen in his place.

This Pietro diſcomfited the Hungariens, that before had ouercomen themperour Berengario, & ouerranne all Lumbardy, & approched ſo nere to Venice, that they wanne Eraclea, Equilo, & Capo d'aggere, and were mynded to paſſe vnto the Rialto: geuyng ſuch cauſe of feare to the Venetians, as afterwardes bothe doubled the glory of Peters victory, and exalted highly the Venetian name. Pietro Tribuno 893

Some write, that after this enterprice Pietro fortified the citye with a wal from Santa Maria in Zubenico, vnto the Rio del Caſtello, and that he caſt chaines of yron ouerthwart the Canale grande, but at this daye there remaineth no memory therof.

After Pietro folowed Orſo Baduaro, that fyrſte coygned money in Venice, a man ſo muche geuen to religyon that at length, renouncyng his eſtate, he became a frier, and ſo dyed. Orſo Baduaro 915

Thã ſucceded Pietro Candiano, who conquered manye townes of Iſtria, and other places: and ouercame Pietro Candiano 938

Alberta

Alberto sonne of the emperour Berengario, which being lord of Rauenna, used to spoyle and take the Venetian shippes in their passage.

The recouered certaine gorgeous damselles rauyshed by the Schlauons at a feaste in the Churche .S. Peter Di Castello, and for memory of that victory ordeined yerely certeine plaies, called Le Marie. And (as some write) in hys tyme the Schlauons were made tributaries to the Venetians, to paye them yerely an hundreth barrelles of wyne.

Pietro. Baduara 956.

After his death folowed Pietro Baduaro, in whose tyme no natable thyng happened.

Pietro. Candiano 958.

Than was Pietro Candiano, sonne of the other Pietro, reuoked from exile: whyche for hys naughtye life was before banyshed by his father. And albeit that in the helpe of Alberto di Rauenna he had shewed himselfe enemie to his owne countrey (the vnkyndenesse wherof was cause of his fathers deathe) yet did the Venetians create hym their Duke. But finally his procedynges were such, that the people rose agaynst hym, sette fyre on the palayce: and as he fled with his sonne in hys armes they slewe hym. Wherwyth theyr furye was sooner appeased than the kendeled fyre quenched. For ere it ceased, it burnte a great part of the churche of .S. Marke, with two other churches, and aboue three hundreth houses.

Pietro Orseolo 973.

This rumour beyng pacified, Pietro Orseolo, a man muche geuen to religyon, was elected Duke. The notablest thyng in his tyme was, that the Venetians succoured the citee of Bari, thã besieged of the Sarasines. Finally, after he had dooen many charitable deedes in

Venice,

Venice, he was persuaded by a pilgrimme monke of Gascoygne to forsake the world. And so habandonyng wife, children, and frendes stale away: and died a frier in Gascoygne.

Than folowed Vitale Candiano, who fallynge sicke, renounced the estate, became a frier, and so dyed. Vitale. Candiano. 975

After whom Tribuno Memmo succeded, whiche either for feare of the emperour Ottone, or throughe the greate debate betwene the famylies of Morosini, & Caloprini (than the chiefe of Venice) forsoke the dignitee, became a frier e, and within. vi. dayes after sickened and dyed for sorowe. Tribuno Memmo 975

Than folowed Pietro Orseolo, who conquered Dalmatia, with the slandes loygnyng therunto. And therfore obteined the fyrst tytle of Duke of Dalmatia, and Venetia. Pietro Orseolo 987

The emperours Basilio and Alesso graunted hym free passage for the Venetians through theyr domynyons, without custome paiyng. And the emperour Ottone held his sonne at the crisme, and for his sake granted many lybertees vnto Venice.

¶After whose death, as a recompense of the fathers merite, Ottone Orseolo hys Sonne, of the age of. 18. yeres, was elected duke, who ouercame the Adrianesi with the kyng of Coruatia, and so retourning victoriously out of Dalmatia, fel into the handes of Domenico Flabenio, wyth others, that had cõspyred against hym, who shaued his beard for despite, and finally confyned hym into Greece: where shortly after he dyed. Ottone Orseolo. 1007. Pietro Barbolano 1026

¶Than folowed Pietro Barbolano, who endeuoured hym selfe to pacyfye the rumour of the people, offended

for the oultrage dooen vnto Ottone: but all in vayne. For at length, by meane of Dzso Patriarke of Grado, brother vnto Ottone, Barbolana was taken, his beard cutte of, clothed in a friers weede, and banished.

Dzso Dzseolo 1037

¶ And because the death of Ottone was than vnknowen, the Patriarke Dzso supplied the place as his lieutenaunte. But incontinently vpon knowlage of hys death, the Patriarke called a counsaile, & after a longe Dzation, lamentyng the iniurie doen vnto his brother, surrendzed the astate.

Domenico Dzseolo 1031

Wherupon craftily and in maner by force, Domenico Dzseolo toke the dignitee vpon hym. But fynallye beyng expulsed of the people, he fledde vnto Rauenna, and there myserably dyed.

Domenico Flabenica 1031

¶ Than succeded Domenico Flabenica, who made a lawe, that from thensforthe no Duke shoulde take a companyon to hym. He was the pzyncipall cause of Ottones exile, as it wel appeared after. For he founde the meane, that the familie of Dzseoli was clerelye put beside the counsaile. And finally, hauynge well pacyfied and refourmed all thynges, he dyed.

Domenico Contarini 1042

¶ After whom succeded Domenico Contarini, that in his tyme recouered Zara, whiche before rebelled, by returnyng vnto the obedience of the kyng of Cozuatia. He ouercame Roberto Guistardo in Puglia, and reedified the citee of Grado, that was halfe destroied by Pepo Patriarke of Aquileia: and after dyed.

Domenico Siluio 1068

Than was chosen Domenico Siluio the greatest man of reputacion that thitherto had ruled Uenice. He maried the sister of the emperour Niceforo, and at his request sente an armie vnto Durazo, against Roberte

Duke of Puglia and Calabria: which army kyll prevailed, but at length was so discoumfited, that Domenico was therfore deposed. Thoughe some wryte that he dyed in the astate. His wife was so delycate a woman, that she woulde haue dewe gathered to make hir bayne wythal, with many other curiouse perfumes and trickes, to longe here to reherse: and yet ere she died, hir flesche did rotte, that no creature could abide hir.

Domenico beyng thus deposed Vitale Falero was elected, who in favour of Alesso, the Greekishe emperour, renewed an armie againste the forenamed duke Robert, whych army was also discoumfited. Neuertheless he caused the Venetians to be called lords of Dalmatia, because he valiauntly conquered the same bothe by sea and lande. Vitale Falero 1082

After whose death succeded Vitale Michele, a worthy warriour on the sea, in whose time the Venetian navie was rekened. 200. saile armed of shippes and galleis, which beyng sent into Asia, with Michele his sonne, fel out with the Pisant a littel beside Rodes, and foughte with theim, and toke. 22 of their galleis. Vitale Michele 1095

¶ After which victorye he and many other Christians went against the Infidels, and gatte Smirna, Soria, and Jerusalem.

Finally this armie beyng retourned vnto Venice, was againe sent out into Puglia, and there toke Vzundizi, and ouerranne all those seas aboute, and so retourned loded wyth glory and ryche praye.

¶ After hym Ordelaffo Falero was created duke. In whose time the Venetians sent an other army into Soria to succour Bawdewyne kynge of Jerusalem to Ordelaffo Falero 1098

gette Ptholemaida, otherwyſe called Acres.

¶ About the ſame ſeaſone the emperour Hedrye the.4. agreed the Venetians and Padoanes togither for theyr conſynes, after the Padoanes wyth greate ſlaughter had ben ones diſcomfyted.

There chaunced alſo a fyre, begun in the houſe of one Henry Zeno, that burned a great parte of Venice. Which fyre was no ſoner ceaſed, but newes came, that Calomano, kyng of Hungary, had paſſed the mountaines of Coruatia, and conſtreygned the citee of Zara to rebel. Wherfore an army was made out, vnder the leading of Mydelaſſo, who not only recouered zara, but alſo paſſed the mountaynes, & conquered the countrey of Coruatia, and ſo victoryouſly retourned to Venice: where he reſted not longe, but wooꝛde came, that the Hungaryens were commen agayne befoꝛe zara. To the ſuccour wherof he ſped hym, and there in the fyghte was ſlayne with a darte, and hys army diſcomfited, ſo that the Venetians were fayne to ſue to the Hungaryens foꝛ truce, which foꝛ.v. yeres (wyth muche a doe) they obteyned.

Domenico Michele. 1115

¶ Nexte folowed Domenico Michele, who at the interceſſion of Calixto biſhop of Rome, with.200 ſaile toke hys way into Soria, to reſcue Joppe, that tyme beſyeged wyth.700. ſayle of Infydelles: againſte whome he obteyned the victoꝛye. And folowyng the ſame, wente vnto Tyꝛo, toke it, and gaue it vnto Haimondo Patriarke of Jeruſalem.

¶ The pꝛoſperouſe ſucceſſe of whyche victoꝛyes was occaſion, that Emanuel emperour of the Greekes ſent and foꝛbadde him, to pꝛocede any further. But he being offended

offended wyth that commaundement, bent hym seke agaynste the emperour, and by force toke from hym the ylandes of Scio, Rodes, Samo, Metellino, and Andro, and so wyth greate honoure retourned to Venice, where he dyed.

Than was Pietro Polano chosen his successour, who brought the citee of Fano vnder the Venetian obedience, and fought stirke with the Pisani, and after wyth the Padoani, bothe whose armyes he ouercame: so that of the Padoani he brought .350. prisoners vnto Venice, and after released them wythout raunsome. Pietro Polano 1130

¶ This Duke fauouryng the parte of the emperoure Emanuell against Rogier duke of Puglia, went in his owne person vnto that enterprise, recouered Corfu, and ouerronne and sackes all Sicilia. And thorough hys great trauayle sycknened and dyed, was brought to Venice and buryed.

After him Domenico Morosini entred into thaskate, who besieged Pola, because the inhabitauntes had hindered the Venetian passingers: and at lasse vpon agreement, ordeyned, that in maner of a trybute the Polani shoulde yerely paye to the churche of Saincte Marke a thousande weight of oyle. The like wherof he constreigned theim of Parenzo to doe. Finally, hauyng made a leage with william kyng of Sicilia successour vnto the forenamed Rogier, of whom he obteyned dyuers priuyleges for the Venetian merchauntes commodytee, he dyed. Domenico Morosini 1147

¶ Than entred Vitale Michele: by whose dayes the Veronesi, Ferraresi, & Padoani, through prouocacyon of the emperour Federico Barbarossa, did no small Vitale Michele, 1154

domage

domage to the Venetians. For the reuengeyng wher-
of they made one an armie, and toke the Patriarke of
Aquileia, wyth xii. of his canons (of the imperiall fac-
tion) prisonere: who were after set at libertee, vppon
couenaunt to paye yearely tribute vnto the Venetians
at Shroftyde, a fatte bull, and xii. hogges.

This meane whyle the emperour Emanuel entrynge
secretly into affinitee with kynge William of Sicile,
toke Spalato, Trau, and Raugia from the Venetians.
Wherfore they armed, & Vitale in person went for the
recouered Trau, threw it to the earth, with parte of the
walles of Raugia, and so went to Negropone: where
by counsaile of the gouernor, he concluded a peace with
the emperour. Notwythstandyng, the emperoure had
a lyttle before taken Scio. For concludynge of whych
peace, and for the pestilence that his infected souldiours
brought home with them, the venetians at his retourne
slewe hym.

Much adoe was made for his death, but notwynge
to effect: saue a certeine noumber were than apointed
vnto the election of the Duke: some wryte xx. and some
xl. but howe so euer it were Orio Malipiero was cho-
sen, who refusynge it, preferred Sebastian Ziani, for
his auncientie, rychesse, and wysedome. So his refusall
was accepted, his modestie highly commended, and Se-
bastiano accordyngly elected.

Sebastian ziani. 1171

This Sebastian erected the two notable pyllers of
marble, that are yet seen in the markette place of saincte
Marke: whiche with an other greatter than eyther of
them, were brought oute of Candia, but the biggest fell
into the water (and for his vnmeasurable weight) can
not

not be gotten vp agayne.

¶ The emperoure Emanuell, who secretelye hated the venetians, conssreigned Henry dandola their ambassadour, to stand so longe daryng in an hotte basen, that he lost his syghte. For what cause he wrought thys, I finde not. And though it muche offended the Venetians, yet the tyme serued not to reuenge it. For they had taken part with Alexander bishop of rome against the emperour Federike Barbarossa: & with an armie by sea Sebastian in person tooke Ottone the emperours sonne, with certaine galeis, & brought him prisoner to Venice. So that throughe the practise of Ottone there folowed a peace betwene Federike, the bishop, and the Venetians. And the duke was rewarded of the saide bishop with licence for him and his successours to seale in leade, to haue a canoppe borne ouer hym, a ware taper before hym, with trumpettes and standardes, and finally ones a yere to espouse the sea, with throwyng a golde ryng into it. All whych ceremonies the Venetian dukes vse vnto this daye.

Emanuel. Cruelter.

¶ After the deathe of Sebastian the forenamed Orio Malipiero was created duke, who went vnto the enterpryse of Zara, that lately had rebelled.

Orio Malipiero 1180.

¶ He also sent an armie into the holy lande, that recouered the citee of Ptholemaida, with those other places that the Venetians before tyme had gotten there. Finally he became a frier, and so dyed.

¶ Than succeded Henry dandolo, who banyshed the Veronesi frō the trads of Venice, so that the Veronesi for their parte wolde suffer nothynge to passe downe the ryuer of Adice. But at lengthe they were faine to

Arrigo Dandolo 1194

agree

agre with the Venetians, & to restore certaine goodes that they before had taken.

The Pisani also enuiyng the Venetian glory, made an armie against them, and gatte Pola, whych by the Venetian army was incōtinently recouered, the walls rased to therth, and the enemies ships burned: and before Modone they toke two other Pisane ships, laden with merchandise, and made Trieste & all Istria, tributors.

¶ After this they recouered Zara also, and semblably rased the walles thereof to the earthe, in so muche that many of the inhabitantes (beyng fled before) with the helpe of the Hungariens, renewed an army, and ouerran all Dalmatia. But at length they were constreigned to make peace with the Venetians, geuynge theyr children in ostaige, submittyng theyr churche vnto the Patriarke of Grado, and bindyng theim selfes to geue yerely three thousand conye skynnes to the Duke for a present.

This meane while came Alesso, sonne of themperour Isaac (than lately expulsed out of Constātinople) vnto Venice for succours: who obteined, that the duke with an army, ioignyng hym selfe with an other armye of Frenchmen, went to Constantinople, and after many prosperouse successes by the waye, toke it, and restored bothe Isaac and his sonne vnto the empire. But the emperour liued not long after: and his sonne, courting to kepe his promyse with the Venetians, was betraied & strangled by Mirtillo or Murcifone one brought vp by his father from lowe degre, vnto so great reputacyon, that after he had murdered Alesso, he toke the Empire vpon him. Wherfore the venetians & frenchemen

abhor-

abhorryng this vnnatural cruelitee, enforced theyr powers of new, reuenged the death of Aiello, toke Constantinople by assaulte, and diuided the dominion betwene them: so that of the Frenche part Baldewine a Flemmyng was made capitaine or emperour, & of the Venetians, Thomas Morosini was made Patriarke: adioignynge vnto the Venetian dompynyon the ile of Candia, with the other ilandes of the seas Jonium and Egeum.

So whan they had recouered Raugia, and established the Greekishe empyre, this duke Dandolo dyed. And was buryed in Constantinople.

¶ The Venetians beyng thus entred into an empyre, beganne to contende amongest theim selfes, whether they were better to remoue theyr common wealthe to Constantinople, for the encrease of theyr name and power: or to remaine stil in Venice. But finallye it was concluded, that better it was to truste to the perpetuitee of the Site of Venice, than to the brittell chaunge of Constantinoples glorye.

Than was Peter ziani elected Duke in Venice, and the armie in Greece on the other side elected Marino ziani Potestate of Constantinople: on condicoon that he should receiue hys confirmacion from Venice. Pietro ziani. 1203

¶ This Peter proued an excellente man: he encreased the armye in Greece: by meane wherof Corfu, Modon Coron, Galipoli, Nasso, Paro, Molo, Erma, & Andro were gotten: Negroponte was made tributarye, and the Genowaies armye fought withall, and discomfyted.

¶ He sent also a Colonia of Venetians to enhabyte

Candía, with officers vccoꝛdyng: whyche many tymes after rebelled.

¶ He ouercame the Padoanes, and bꝛoughte. 400. of theim pꝛyſoners to Venice: Finally he waryng verye religiouſe, renounced the aſtate, and withdꝛew him ſelfe into the monaſterie of ſainct Geoꝛge, where he dyed.

James Tiepolo 1225

After hym ſucceded James Tiepolo, who wyth the helpe of Marke Samuto, reſcued Candía, than moleſted by the Greekyſhe Corſales.

Wyſe he reyſed the ſiege of Conſtantinople (Teoſtilo Ziani beyng Poteſtate there) and gatte many of the enemies ſhyppes. And after makynge truce wyth the Genowaies, in the fauoure of Gregoꝛye the. ix. byſhop of rome, he ſent an army againſt Federike Barbaroſſa gat Terma, Campo, Marino, and Beſtice: and in the hauen Pãfredonia, burned the Cetea: a notable ſhippe that the emperour had made foꝛ hys owne perſon, and there ſlew a thouſand men of warre:

¶ About this time Ezelino di Romano gatte Padoa from the Venetians, and entred into the Venetian maꝛiſhe as farre as ſainct Ellero and the Bebbe.

¶ This duke vnder the gouernance of his owne ſonne, ſent. 60. galleis to Duraꝛo to ſuccour the Genowayes againſt the emperour & the Piſani, who in his returne recouered Pola and Zara, and than peace was made with the kyng of Hungarie, vpon condicion, that from thenſfoꝛth he ſhould neuer pꝛetend title to Zara.

Marino Moꝛoſini 1247

¶ Nexte this James folowed Marino Moroſini, who whs choſen of the counſaile called Pꝛagadi, and beyng pꝛouoked by the Romiſh legate, made warre vnto the foꝛenamed Ezelino, & recouered Padoa, wherof Auſe-

dino

dino, nephew of Ezelino was capitaine, whilest Ezelino laye at syege before Mantua. For whyche losse and for hys labour spent in vayne before Mantua, Ezelino retournyng to Verona, fel in such a rage, that he caused. 12000. Padoanes, part of his armye, to be hewen to peeces. Such a cruelitee as hathe not ben hearde of, sens the tyme of Silla, who did the like vnto. 12000. pyreneites, frendes of his ennemie Marius. Crueltee

¶ Of this name Ezelino were foure, one after another that caused no small trouble in Italye.

¶ The fyrste Ezelino, a Doucheman borne, came into Italie with the emperour Otho the thyrd, and by hym was made Conte di Onara, a towne of the Marca Triuigiana. But afterwardes he gate hym selfe the lordship of Bassano vpon the riuer of Brent, with many faire territories theraboutes, and so became greate, both of dominyon and also of aliance by mariages.

His sonne was called Ezelino Balbo, and the. iii. Ezelino Monaco, all three crewell men of nature. But the. iiii. Ezelino di Romano passed all thother, & dyed rather for choler and despite of the discomfiture, geuen him by the Vicentines, than for the hurte that he receiued in his legge. Whome Peter Gerardo a Padoan writer, describeth thus: He was harde of fauour, terrible in worde and dede, scarce of laughter or speche, ful of despite, suspicious, takyng euery thing to the worse, daungerous to enterprise, prompte to all euil, cruel to al persones, and out of measure delited in their death and tourmentes, prisons, pyon, hunger, colde, fyre, and other suche. So that to extirpe the whole stocke of so cruell generacion, after his death there was no cres- Ezelino di Romano

ture of hys blood suffered to lyue.

Rinieri zeno 1250

¶ After the death of Marino succeded Rinieri zeno, who sent an armie into Soria against the Genowaies, that discomfited them betwene Ptholemaida & Tyr̃ot besides .vi. other Genowaye shyppes, that were lefte in Candia, and nere vnto Tyr̃o in the secound and .3. battayle.

¶ In this meane tyme Baldewyne the capitayne, and Pantaleon Iustiniano patryarke of Constantinople. were betraied of the Grekes, and constreigned to flee to Negroponte, leauing the citee & empire vnto Sigbell Paleologo, that afterwardes through helpe of the Genowaies, gat manye Ilandes: trauailing to extend hys dompnion vnto Morea. Wherevpon the Venetians made forth moe galeys by .30. at a tyme, to encrease their armye, that than was commen out of Sotia in hope to finde theyr enemies about Sicilia: But al in vayne, wherfore retournyng into Soria, they toke the Cetea of the Genowaies, and began to assaulte Tyr̃o. In which businesse, the Venetians lost a notable shippe called Castel forte, with .x. others laden with merchandise. Neuertheleſſe renewyng their armie with part of their staple, that lay in Candia & Dalmatia, they mette agayne wyth the Genowayes in Sicilia, where after a long fight, they toke .24. Genoway Galleis, burned the reſt, slew aboue .1200. men, toke .1500. prisoners, and drowned al the reſt.

This notable victorye brought the emperoure Paleologo in such feare, that he sued for truce to the Venetians: and obteined it for .v. yeres.

This meane while was a great muttering in Uenice

for

for the treasure spent, because the chamber was found emptie, and that for the maintenaunce of those warres they were aboute to leuey subsydyes. So that the people assembled, and furiously assaulted the Dukes palaice, hurlyng stones at the wyndowes, with other despiteful deedes.

Finally the armie was renewed, and in an other conflict with the Genowaies, they toke .v. of their shippes: About which tyme Rinieri dyed.

¶ Than folowed Lorenzo Tiepolo, in whose tyme happened a wonderfull dearth of corne in Venice: by reason their neighbours, for enuie of their prosperitee, 1267 woulde suffer no corne to come to theim. For remedye wherof the Venetians made a law, that al merchaunt-shippes, passyng betwene the Goolfe of Fano, and the mouthe of the ryuer Po, should paye theim custome after a certaine rate of their merchandyse. Whereby to their great gaine, they reuēged them selfes vpon their ennemyes. But the Bologneisi moste of all others, being offended with this law, made out an army against the Venetians, and were ouercomen, constreigned to aske peace, to ouerthrowe a castell that they had made at Primano on the Po, and to graunte the Venetians free entrie into their riuers at all tymes. Lorenzo Tiepolo

¶ About this time, by meane of Philip the french king, who trauayled to succoure the Christians in Soria against the infidelles, the Venetians, Genowayes, and Pisani made a league together for .v. yeres.

After Tiepolo, Iacopo Contarini was Duke, in whose tyme the warre was well neere renued betwene the venetians and Genowaies, for certeine goodes that 1273 Iacopo Contarini.

the Genowaies had taken: whyche beynge restored, the armie prepared for them, turned agaynste Istria, that than newly rebelled, through the prouocacion of the patriarke of Aquileia: who by force were reduced to their wonted obedyence.

They of Ancona beynge offended wyth the forelayde law of custome paiynge for theyr merchaundice, began to robbe and spoyle alongest the costes of Istria: so that the Venetians, to correcte them, besyeged the cytee of Ancona: whyche dured not longe: for the bysshoppe of Rome entreated the Venetians, to agree wyth them, and breake vp theyr siege.

Finally this Contarini perceiuyng hym selfe beraye sickely and vnapte to rule the astate, did wyllinglye renounce it.

Giouanni Dandolo 1281

Than succeded John Dandolo, in whose tyme the water in Venice swelled so hyghe, that in maner the citee was drowned: and after that folowed a wonderful earthquake.

They also fyrste coygned duckates of golde. And at the request of Nicolas, than bishop of Rome, prepared a new armie to saile into Soria: but it went not forthe so that the kyng of Babylone in Aegypte, toke and sacked Ptholomaida, and after rased it to the earth.

Pietro Gradenigo 1290

After Dandolo Peter Gradenigo was elected duke. At whose entryng the truce with the Genowaies expired: so that a new armie, vnder the leadynge of Roger Morosini proueditore, was sent into the east partes: where they toke Pera, & Castello delle foglie vecchie and abode there so longe, that the yere folowyng John Zoranzo, wyth .25. fresshe galleis, was sente thither: who

who toke the citee of Casa in Chersonesso.
The Genowaies this meane while prepared an armye of.70.galeys,and vnder their capitaine Lampado d' oria,entred into the Adriatike seas,entendyng to come to Venice.But the venetian armie(beyng the greatest that euer they made)caused them to retyre:yet metyng together vpon the coste of Dalmatia,they foughte,and the venetians were discomfited,and Andrea Dandolo Proueditore taken prysoner,who so muche despayred, that beatyng his head against the galey bordes,he slew hym selfe. And albeit that the losse of this armye was of great importaunce and peril vnto the venetians,yet incontinently they renforced theyr power, and in the streict of Gallipoli,sometyme called Hellespontus, mette with the Genowaies againe, and were there agayne ouercomen. But the Genowaies for all their victoryes were so wearied,that they graunted the venetians peace,and laied warre aside for a season.
Thus the thynges ferre of,beynge appeased, their busynesse at home beganne to awake. For one Marino Bocconio conspired against the duke & Senate, which beynge dyscouered, he and dyuers of hys complyces, were put to death betwene the pillers of.S. Marke.
The Padoanes began than also to fortifie at a certaine place,betwene Chiozza,& Albano,called Petabubula which was no lyttel trouble vnto the venetians,for the tyme,how be it at length they remedyed it.
¶After this they made out an other army by sea vnder Belletto Iustiniano,who prospered muche in Greece. For after he had ouercome all those costes,he returned home with.15000.prisoners,& with a great summe of money

money recouered of the Greekysh emperoure that before tyme the Venetians had lente hym. Which was no smal coumforte to the common wealth that longe time had suffered.

Shortly after Clement bishop of Rome excommunycated the venetians, for aiding of Azo da Este vnto the astate of Ferrara, and wrote his letters throughout al Europe, condemnyng theim as enemies of the church, and geuynge their goodes as a lawfull praye vnto all men, whych caused theim to sustaine greate losse.

Besides this, Baiamõte Tiepolo, their owne citesin, entendyng to make hym selfe lord of venise, enterprised to assaulte the Duke and Senate in the palaice, where after muche bloudshed, at laste he was slayne, and hys parttakers accordynglie punysshed, parte in Venice, and part at a place there besydes, called Malpasso.

Zara aboute this tyme rebelled agayne, and shortlye after this duke dyed.

Marino Giorgio, 1312

After whom succeded Marino Giorgio, that lyued but .r. monethes, in whose time an army was made out to besiege zara.

John Soranzo, 1313

Than folowed John Soranzo, who recouered zara and brought Noua, Spalata, Trau, and Sibenzani, townes of Dalmatia, vnder the Venetian dominion. This meane time Fraunces Dandalo, ambassadoure with bishop Clement, vsed such humilitee, that Venice was not only assoiled, but also priuileged to be no more on that wyse accursed.

These thynges kynysshed, they sente oute, 50. galleys against the Genowaies, because they had taken the venetians goodes. But after they had besyeged Pera,

and

and were promysed amendes and restitucion of theyr goodes, the armie retourned without other expedicion. Than was Iustiniano, that had been capitaine therof, sent Proueditor into Candia, where with hys wysedome he quieted the countrey, that beganne to rebell.

Finally, after the Venetians had preserued the Padoanes from the fury of Mastino della scala, that wold haue oppressed theim, this duke Soranzo dyed.

After hym entred Fraunces Dandolo, in whose time hapned a great dearth of corne in Venice: whyche was relieued afterwardes with prouision brought out of Sicilia by Nicolas Falero, for that purpose sente thither, This duke accepted the Polani and Valesi vnder the venetian dominion: and euer after defended them from the power of the Patriarke of Aquileia. Fraunces Dandolo 1329.

He caused Thomas Viaro Proueditor of the armie against the Genowaies, to die in prison: because he had not borne hym selfe prudently in that enterprise.

He sent Peter zeno with an armie agaynst the Turkes, that than had newly chased the Christians oute of Sozia. Whyche Turkes were foughten wyth, and finally discomfyted.

Than beganne the warres against the Signori della Scala, the chiefe whereof was Mastino before named: who chasing the Rossi from Parma got Feltro, Belluno, & Ceneda, before time taken by the said Rossi, from kynge John of Boeme. The Mastino thus growynge great, attempted to trouble the Venetians with buildyng of fortresses and bastilions about Peta bubula. Wherfore the venetian entred in league with the kynge of Boeme, and with the most parte of al the

states of Italie, specially with the Florentines, against this Mastino: and made Peter Rosso generall of that league: who (assemblynge an armie, of the Venetians, Florentines, Bolognese, Ferrarese, & other theyr colleges (after many skyrmyshes, takyng of fortresses and townes: finally did discomfite Mastino in two seuerall battailes, and broughte hym by force to requyre peace: whych was graunted on this wise, that he should leaue Feltro, Ciuidale di Belluno, and Ceneda vnto Charles sonne of the kyng of Boeme: Bergamo and Brescia, vnto the Visconti of Myllaine: Treuiso, with the appurtenaunces, Castelbaldo, and Bassano, to the Venetians, and .viii. castelles to the Florentines.

¶ After the happie succesle of these warres, Dandolo dyed.

Bartholomeo Gradenigo 1340

¶ Than Bartholomeo Grandenigo, succeded, in whose tyme, the water in Venice for the space of three dayes, dyd swel foure yardes higher than his wonted course: so that they thought to haue been all drowned: but at laste sainct Nicolas, sainct George, and sayncte Marke came into a poore fisshers bote, and in the mouth of the hauen drowned a shippe of diuels that wrought al this myschyefe. For proufe wherof, this poore fysscher the next mornynge after the water ceased, presented vnto the duke and senate a golde ring that sainct Marke had geuen hym. Thys was taken there for a myracle, though I thinke no man would beleue it.

The feare of this water was no sooner ceased, but newes came, that the Candians rebelled. Wherefore a power sent thither, assaulted theim on three sydes, and with the correction of the principall rebelles, reduced

theim

theim to their former obedyence.

¶ Shortly after happened a great dearth of corne, and Gradenigo dyed

Than folowed Andrea Dandolo, a man for his wisedome and ciuilitee much commended of Petrarcha. Andrea Dandolo 1343

In whose name Peter Zeno (in companye of other Christian princes) was sent with an armie against the Turkes, whom at the firste they discomfited, and toke Smirna: but afterwardes the turkes assembled againe, and with great slaughter ouercame the Venetians, the Cypriotes, and the Rodianes.

¶ This Duke procured licence of the kynge of Babylone, that Venetian merchauntes might freely trafficque in Aegypt, and sent an armye vnto zara than yelded vnto the kyng of Hungarie, who beynge come thyther with. 120000. men, was foughte with by the Venetians discomfited, and zara recouered.

This duke ordeined the office of the three Auditours, for the better expedicion of matters, because the Auogadori had to much charge on theim to dispatche wel: and he hym selfe wrote a worthy history of the Venetian astate and lawes for the tyme than passed.

He sente .vi. shippes into Sicilia for corne, wherof two peerysshed by the way, the other .iiii. releeued the citee in their great dearth. After folowed suche an earthquake, that .iii. or .iiii. steples, with diuers other buildynges in Venice were shaken to the earth: and than such a pestilence that in maner Venice became voyde. Neuertheleste a newe armye was made out against the Genowaies, that foughte with them at Caristo beside Negroponte, where firste the Genowaies were discomfy-

led, than the Venetians, and thirdlye in Sardegna the Genowaies againe: and thereby brought so lowe, that they became subiectes to John Uisconti, archebishop & Duke of Myllayne, who sente the famouse Petrarcha ambassadour to venice, to obteine peace from hym and the genowaies. But the venetians wolde not graũt it. Wherfore the Uisconti sent his armie into Dalmatia, sacked the townes of Faro and Corfu, toke Parenzo in Istria, and spoiled a venetian shippe, goynge into Candia, of value (by reporte) of. 80000. duckates.

¶ Thus while the Venetians for ease of this trouble were makyng a leage with the king of Boeme, to bring him against the Uisconti, this duke Dandolo dyed.

Marino Falerio 1354

Marino Falerio succeded him, in whose daies the common wealth lacked littel of vtter vndoyng. Fyrst their army was sore discomfited by the genowaies, Pagano Doria being capitaine, at the Ile of Sapientia, besides Pozea. After this, the Duke him selfe conspired againste the citees libertee, entendyng to make him selfe absolute lorde therof, by puttynge the nobilitee and senate to death. But his purpose was discouered by Beltrame a skinner, one of the confederatz so that the duke was beheaded, and diuers other punyshed, besydes a noumber that fled, and were banished.

¶ Finallie this Beltrame for his reward, was made a gentilman of Venice, with a thousand ducates of yerely reuenew. But after a certaine space, thinkynge hys reward ouer littel in respect of so greate a seruice, he lamented him selfe vnto the senate, and was so importunate, that they not onelye toke from hym his forsayde reuenew, but also depryued him of the gentilmans dignitee

nitee, & made hym a skinner againe, as he was before
¶ After this Marco Cornaro as Vice Doge, ruled for a certeine space.
¶ Than John Gradenico was elected duke, who sendyng out .xii. gallets against the Genowaies, was occasion of the peace, that immediatelyfolowed betwene them. John Gradenico. 1355

In his time Lewis kyng of Hungary entred in leage with certeine princes and nobles of Lumbardy against the Venetians: so that after he had beene before Zara, Spalato, Trau, and Nona, with other places in Dalmatia: he besyeged Treuiso: duryng which siege Gradenico dyed.

Than John Delfino was chosen, who being that tyme besieged within Treuiso, and aduertised of hys election, requyred the kynges saueconducte to passe: which woulde not be graunted. Wherfore at lasse incompany of certeine men of armes, he secretly departed, and came to Venice: and was no sooner in the auctoritee, but he reuoked the Potestate of Padoa, and toke from the Padoanes the trade of salte. A matter vnto them of great importance. This did he to be reuenged on Carraro, a principal of the Padoanes, who was entred into intelligence with the Hungariens. John Delfino 1356

Finally this king prospered so much against the Venetians, that they were constreygned for a peace to graunt hym al Dalmatia, from the goolfe Fanatico, to Durazo, with certeine other townes aboute Ceneda and Treuiso, that he had than newly gotten.
¶ To this peace the Venetians at that tyme, were glad to agree, for eschewynge of more daunger. And not

longe after thys Delfino dyed.

Lorenzo Celso 1360

Whom Lorenzo Celso, than capitaine of the armye vpō the goolfe, was elected, who being aduertised therof, incontinently repayred vnto Venice: where he was receiued with such pompe as the Venetians vse. But his owne father, would in no wyse goe againste hym: thynking it vnmete, that the father should vse anye reuerence to hys sonne.

In his time, fyrst the Duke of Austriche, and after the kynge of Cyprus came to see venice for their pastetime where they were receiued and honoured accordyngly. Than of new Candia rebelled, for the great taxes that the Venetians leuyed of theim. Wherfore fyrste one, and than an other army was sent thither, whiche wyth much adoe (by reason of the Greekes defence) at laste recouered it: and so with triumph retourned to venice.

¶ About this time the kyng of Cyprus toke and sacked Alexandria in Aegypt, from whens he retourned laden with a wonderful praye. And not longe after thys duke Celso dyed.

Marco Cornaro 1365

His successoure was Marco Cornaro, who forthwyth had worde that Candia againe rebelled. Against whom a newe armie was prepared, with priuilege obteined of the bishop of Rome, of clere pardon and remission of synnes, for all theim that shoulde beare armes in that enterprise.

¶ Finally the Candiottes were so oppressed, that they were constreigned to aske peace, and with sharpe punishementes were brought to their wonted obedience.

¶ The businesse of Candia being thus wel quieted and reformed, Cornaro lyued not longe after.

Than

Than entred Andrea Contarini, notwithstanding that he oftentymes refused the dignitee, perchaūce through forsyghte of thynges to come. For fyrste they of Triestе through succour of the duke of austria, rebelled and beyng in a sharpe battaile ouercommen: were constreigned to retourne to the Venetian obedience. Andrea contarini 1367

Than beganne a new bickering betwene the Carrari, lordes of Padoa, and the Venetians, for the interest of certeine confines, betwene whome were many skirmishes with variable fortune on both sides, But the venetians had euer the better, vntil the Carrari had gotten in leage the kyng of Hungary, the duke of Austria, the Genowaies, and the Patriarke of Aquileia, who on all sydes by lande and sea, oppressed the Venetians sore. For notwithstandyng that in this meane whyle, with helpe of the kyng of Cyprus on the one side, they fyrste discomfited Andronico sonne of the emperour Caloianni with the Greekes in the Ile of Tenedo, and after that diuers of the Genowaies by sea. And than on the tother side with the helpe of Bernabo Visconti, by lād discomfited the Carrato on the Padoan territory, with getting of some townes: yet fortune tourned so againe them, that at Pola they lost .xv. galleis at one time, and by littell and lyttell losse Vmago, Grado, Caorle, Chiozza, Loreo, Le Bebbe, Capo d'aggere, Malamoco, & Pauigila: lokyng euery foote, whan they shuld be assaulted in Venice. Insomuche, that they sente a blancke Charter vnto Peter Dozia, than capitaine of the Genowaies armie, besechyng him to prescribe them what condicions he would, and they gladly woulde accept them: but as it happeth commonly in prosperitee,

men

men are not contented with reasonable aduauntage: he would not haue theim but at his owne descrecion.

And so droue forth the tyme till Carlo zeno, with the Venetian armye, scoured all the leuaunte seas, toke many riche shyppes, of theyr ennemyes: and wyth the slaughter of. 300. Genowaies, restored the fortresse of Constantinople vnto Calosanni emperour of Greece, besieged Pera: & finally after manye worthy victories in those partyes (aduertysed of the peryll that Venice was in) retyred homewardes: ioigned wyth Vettorio, Pisani capitaine of the rest of the Venetian armie, and neere vnto Brondolo, Chiozza, and those other places theraboutes, fought diuers tymes with them, with dyuers fortune, and at last slew theyr capitaine beforenamed, recouered Chiozza through famine, and toke 80. Padoan botes, with. 19. Genowaie galleis, besides certeine shippes laden with salte, and noumber of prysoners.

This great victory thus obteined by Vettorio Pisani and Carlo zeno, was not yet enough to end this warre For the rest of the Genowaies armie discoumfited at Chiozza, departed to Trieste, causyng it to rebel.

And than leauing Istria in gouernaunce of the Patriarke of Aquileia, retourned againe to attempt the gettynge of Brondolo and Chiozza. But findynge the passages closed againste theim, they made towardes Pirano and Parenzo, doynge theyr best to gette them: wherin they preuayled not, and so at laste wythdrewe them into the hauen of Marano.

¶ This meane while the Venetians endeuoured themselues to recouer againe Bebbe, & the other place nere

about

about theim. All which they obteined, Capo d' aggere onely except, that was holden by the Carraro.

Than came newes, that Pola was taken, and that the Genowaies, renuyng theyr armie, had also taken Arbe in the Ile of Scardona. Wherefore a newe power was made out, which passing into Istria, sacked Iustinopoli, and besieged Zara. In whyche enterprise Vetorio Pisani died, so that Carlo Zeno rested captaine alone: who with .viii. galleis of newe, scoured all the costes of Dalmatia, toke .xii. Schlauon shippes, and wente forth into the riuer of Genoa, where he wrought wonders: whilest the Genowaies and theyr colleges on the other side sacked Capo d' Istria, toke Conigliano, Nouale, and Treuiso before yelded to the duke of Austria: besides .xiiii. Venetian shippes, that the Gnowayes toke in the porte of Pesaro.

And so longe contended they thus warring one vpon another, that at laste both parties were wearied, and by meane of the duke of Sauoie, accorded. In the concluding of which peace the Venetians rendred the Ile of Tenedo with the Genowaies (that by the meane of the emperour Caloianni, came before to their handes.)

Finally, after the Carraro of Padoa had gotten Treuiso by force from the Duke of Austria (the kynge of Hungary being dead) this duke Contarini finished his lyfe.

Michele Morosini 1383

Than followed Michela Morosini, that liuyng but .4. monethes, made a newe lawe for the triall of murders and manslaughters.

Antonio Veniero. 1383

Next succeded Antonio Veniero, a pleasaunte wyse man, that in the gouernaunce of Tenedo, had behaued

hym selfe prudently.

¶ He bare so earnest a zeale to Justice, that hearinge a complainte against his owne sõne, for certain dishonest partes plaied about a gentilmans doze, of whose wyfe he was enamoured, caused hym to be layed in prison, where he miserablie dyed of the plage. And thoughe he knewe, that the infection was entered into that prison, yet wolde he not at no friends intercession remoue his sonne into any other. Whyche acte one way semeth commendable, an other way vnnatural and cruel.

Aboute this tyme the Venetians entred in leage with Giangalezo Visconti, duke of Millaine, and with the marchese Da Este of Ferrara, agaynste Carraro of Padoa: so that betwene these thze the territozy of Carraro was diuyded.

Fyrste the Venetians had Treuiso, the marches of Este had certaine castels, that he had befoze lofte, & the Visconti had Padoa, Feltro, & Ciuidale di Belluno: which with Vicenza and Verona, that he had also gotten a lyttle befoze, set the Visconti of Millaine on suche a height, that immediately he moued warre agaynst the Bolognese and Florentines, whereby he began to be had in Jalousie, and mistruste, of all the other astates, about him. Wherefoze the Venetians, with those other two befozenamed, the Mantoan, the Ferrarese, Carlo Malatesta, & Robert duke of Bauiera (vnto whome the yonge Nouello Carraro wasfled foz succours) entred all into a leage against him: by reason wherof Verona was sacked, Padoa besieged, and the Visconti at length in such wise discomfited, that he was fayne to requyre peace, whych was graunted foz .x. yeres folowyng.

After

¶ After the death of Veniero succeded Michele Steno in whose tyme. iiii. Venetian galleis, laden wyth merchaundise were lost in the Arcipelago. michele, Steno 1400

¶ Than Zeno, wyth. xi. galleis was sente oute againste the Genowaies: who had ben in Sozia, sacked Barutti, and taken certeine Venetian shippes. But in theyr retourne, betweene Modone, and Giunchio, Zeno discoumfited them: notwithstandyng that in maner they were double as many.

This meane tyme the young Carraro beynge (partely through the Venetians fauour) restored vnto the dominion of Padoa, besieged Vicenza, and streigned it so sore, that in despite of hym they yelded theim selfes to the Venetians: who toke occasion of vnkyndnesse towardes Carraro, because he had ben the principal mouer of the Genowaies agaynste theim: and that also he had counsailed william Scala to take on hym the dominion of Verona. Insomuche that the Venetians armed, & fyrste chastised Alberto da Este of Ferrara for parttaking with Carraro, and finally by playne force, gat bothe Padoa and Verona: and led this Nouello Carraro, with hys two sonnes prysoners to Venice, where by nyght they were all thre straungled.

¶ And albeit, that the Venetians were estemed to haue spent in those Padoane warres better than two mylyons of golde: yet this victorie ouer theyr approued enemie was so grateful vnto them, that forgettynge al expences, they triumphed with feastes and banekyers so longe, that they set the toppe of saincte Markes steple on fyre: whyche afterwardes (to theyr coste) was made vp againe and cleane gylt ouer.

THus the Venetians rested not long, but that Ladislao, kyng of Naples and of Hungarie, warred on them in Dalmatia, and toke zara: whythe they redemed of him for the summe of an. 100000. duckates, takynge also truce wyth him for. v. yeres. And than died Steno.

Thomas Mocenigo 1413.

Nexte folowed Thomas Mocenigo, that reformed certaine offices in the Rialto.

He also recouered certaine townes in Friuli, that one Pippo, a capitaine of the kynges of Hungarye had in the last warres before taken from theim. And was authour also of the renewyng of the palaice of Saincte Marke, for the mocionyng wherof, he willyngly payed a thousand duckates, forfaited by an ancient law made againste him that should firste mocion the alteracion of that palaice from his olde facion.

Fraunces Foscaro 1424

Whan Mocenigo was deade, Fraunces Foscaro entered into the astate, who being prated therunto, entred in league with the Florentines, against Philip duke of Myllaine: and sente Carmignuola their captayne to Brella, whiche by meane of intelligence was sone gotten: though the forteresse helde a certeine space. On the other syde the florentines toke Nicolos da Este, marchese of Ferrara for their capitaine, and sente him into the territorie of the Genowaies, where was gotten no small booties. So that Duke Philip thus troubled, fearynge leaste the countrey of Romagnia shoulde returne to the Florentines dominion, yelded up the same to the vse of the churche of Rome, into the handes of the legate of Bononia, and for auoidyng of further inconuenience, caused the same legate to procure him a peace, whych was sooner obteined than well obserued. For

Philip

Phillip encouraged wyth the money and large offers of the Mylanese, wolde not suffer the articles to be obserued, and inuading the Mantuane territory, prouoked his enemies the colleges, to renewe their power, wyth which, and by the power of the general Carmignuola, the duke receiued such a discomfiture, besides Terentiano, wyth losse of his cariage, plate and money, that if Carmignuola had folowed the victory, he had ben like enough to haue driuen Phillip out of his Duchie.

¶ Finally after sundrye conclusions and breaches, at last a ful peace was concluded, that Bergamo & Brescia, wyth their appertenaunces, shoulde remayne to the Venetians, Cremona, with his territory should be geuen to Sforza for the dower of his wife Biãca, doughter to Phillip Romaningo, wyth the fortresses of Giradadda to be restored to Phillip by the Venetians (Peschiera and Lanado onely excepted) that Conzaga should haue the rest of the Mantuane confines, and that in those quarters Legniago, Porto, Riua, Torboli, Penetra, and Rauenna, shoulde remayne to the Venetians. That within the terme of two yeres Nicolas Piccinino should restore Bononia to the churche. That Astorre di Faenza shuld deliuer vnto the Florentines their fortresses, and finally that Phillip shuld no more meddle with the Genowayes.

¶ This peace satisfied, all the colleges (the bysshop of Romes legate onely excepted) whose part in Bononia semed nothyng honourable in this behalfe.

¶ Duryng these businesses in Lumbardie, the Turkes assaulted Thessalonica, a citee of the Venetians in Macedonia, and by force toke it, wyth James Dandolo, and

Andrea Donato, gouernours of the same.

Not longe after Andrea Dandolo was sent ambassadour vnto the Soldan of Aegypt, to excuse the senate of Venice, for the takynge of certayne of hys vesselles, wythout theyr consent.

In this time the water in maner drowned all Venice, so that whan the floudde was past, the hurt that it had doen, was esteemed aboue a myllion of golde.

¶ The daughter of the kyng of Arragon, wyfe of Lionello da Este of Ferrara, came to see Venice: and the furye of the people was so greate to see hir, that they brake the brydge of the Rialto: in the fall whereof .xx. men were slaine, besides a noumber maimed and hurt.

¶ Eugenius the bishop of rome, impacient that Piccinino shoulde so longe kepe Bononia, entred in league with Alfonso kyng of Naples, and with duke Philip, against Sforza: and so renuyng the warres in Italie, the Bolognese, thorough helpe of the Venetians and Florentines, recouered theyr libertee, and for aduauntage, gatte dyuers of theyr enemies castels. By meane wherof Philip fel in hand againe with the Venetians and Florentines, that came to theyr succoure: so that theyr capitaine Michelle Attendulo fought wyth him besides Casale Maggiore, put him to flight, toke fourtie thousande horse of his, ranne to the gates of Pyllayne, and brought Philip so lowe, that besides Pyllayne he had no more lefte, but Crema and Lodi. Wherefore he sought peace of newe: but it woulde not be graunted hym.

This meane time James Foscaro, son vnto the duke, for certeine his ill demeanours, was twise cõfined into

Candia,

Candia, and there dyed.

¶ Than Sforza takynge parte with duke Phillip lost Casale Maggiore, and the Marca d' Ancona, that the bishop of Rome toke from him, but finally Phillip dyseased both with a feuer and the flixe, dyed.

Incontinently vpon whose death Lodi and Vicenza, submitted them selfes to the Venetians. Wherefore Sforza, capitaine of the Milanese, came with an army to Vicenza, toke it, and sacked it. And Attendulo on the other syde wasted a great part of the Milanese, vntyl suche tyme as Sforza agreed hym wyth the Venetians, to haue 4000. men, and 130000 duckates of yerely prouision, vntyll he myght gette the state of Myllaine: promisyng them, whan he were Duke, he would be contented to renounce to theim all that, that Philip had gotten on that syde the ryuer of Adda. So that whan Sforza obteyned the state of Myllaine (whyche happened shortly after) he obserued his promyse, and peace folowed.

¶ About this time a certaine Greeke, called Stamato, robbed the treasure of sainct Markes churche, after he had been two yeres in cuttyng an hole through a verye myghtie stone wal: but beyng bewrayed through a taylour, that he trusted, the treasure was recouered, the Greeke taken, and for hys longe pacyence and worthy thefte, hanged with a golden halter.

¶ Than came newes oute of Sicilia, that Loredano, capitaine of the Venetian army, had foughten with the Genowaies and Sicilians: and had burned 47. of their shyppes. After whych victorie a generall peace folowed for a tyme.

The

¶ The kyng of Bosina sent for a present to the Venetians certaine vesselles of Siluer .iiii. goodlye horsed, and manye Faulcones.

Liberalitee

¶ Frederike the emperour, retournyng from hys coronacion at Rome towardes Almaine, passed the Venice, where the Senate presented to the Empresse: a ryche crowne, sette with the iewelles, wherof some one stone was estemed at .3000. duckates, and besides that gaue hir two couerynges for a cradell, richelye embrodered with stone and perle: because she was at that time great wyth chylde.

¶ A new leage made betwene the Venetians, and the Senesi, the duke of Sauoie, the marques of Monferrato, and the lordes of Corregio, agaynst Sforza, than newly made Duke of Millaine. For defence whereof Sforza had secret helpe of the Florentines: so that the Venetians, with their colleges, procured Alfonse kyng of Naples, againste the Florentines, who after made warre vpon them in Tuscane, whilest the gentill Leonesto, capitaine of the leage on the tother side, toke Lodi, Gotolengo, Manerbio, Pontoglio, and ranne euen to the gates of Millayne.

About this tyme the Turke wonne Constantinople, in the takyng wherof the emperour of Grece, with diuers gentilmen Venetians, valiauntly resistyng their ennemies, both by sea and land, were slaine, besides a number of others taken prysoners, with the losse of theyr nauye and substaunce. Wherefore the byshop of Rome toke vpon him the appealynge of the Italyan warres: agreyng the parties on this wise: that Sforza shoulde restore vnto the Venetians all that that he had taken

from

from them in these warres (the castels of Gieradadda onely excepted) that the kynge of Naples should do the like to the Florentines (Castiglione excepted) and the Florentines to do the like to the Senese, And that whē any controuersie should happen of newe betweene them, the bysshoppe of Rome shoulde order the matter wythout any businesse of warre.

The Genowayes were left out of this peace, by meane of the king of Naples.

¶ Federike emperour of Almayne requyred ambassadours from all the princes of Europe, to make a newe league against the Turke.

But this meane whyle Bartholomeo Marcello returned from Constantinople with an ambassadour of the Turkes, that broughte certeyne articles of agreemente to the senate, which the Venetians accepted: and therupon was confyrmed amitee betweene the Turke and theim.

Pasquale malipiero, 1457

After the death of Foscaro succeded Pasquale Malipiero, of whom I fynde nothynge of importaunce, sauynge that in his time hapned the terrible earthquake in Italy, that specially in the realme of Naples dyd so much hurte: and that empryntynge was than fyrste inuented.

Christofero moro. 1462

After him succeded Christofero Moro, in whose time the Turkes wanne by force, and rased to the earth the Venetian walle, made vpon Istmus of Morea, and after did in maner what they would thoroughout al that region.

morea.

¶ This Morea, auncyentlye called Peloponnesus, is the chiefe parte of Greece, a very riche countrey, com-

passed about with the sea, except in one narowe place, that it seemeth tacked vnto the maine lande: in whyche place beynge aboute syxe myle ouer, was suche a walle made, as with reasonable furniture had been sufficient to resist a wonderful power. But the venetians (because they fyrst of Christian princes, entred in amitee with those infidelles) truskyng to much in theyr newe frendshyp, attended more to the vndoing of theyr neighbours at home, than to the earneste prouysion that so worthy a countrey, agaynste so puissaunte an enemy, the Turke, requyred. So that shortlye after the losse of that wal, they were shamefully discoumfited at Parasso, Iames Barbarico beyng theyr Proueditore. And than also they losse Negroponte, where was suche a slaughter of Christians, as would make any Christian herte wepe to heare it. Besides a huge summe of money, that they were constreigned to geue to the king of Vngarie, to resist the Turkes passage, that with an other armie by lande was than coming towardes Dalmatia.

Than succeded Nicolo Trono, who was cause of the establishmēt of Ercole da Este in ỹ duchie of ferrara. He entred in league with Vsnucassan king of Persia (whose successour is nowe called Sophie) againste the Turke.

Nicolo Trono. 1471.

In his time the Venetians gatte the realme of Cyprus by this meane. Iames, laste kynge of the same, for the great amitee betwene hys forefathers and the Venetians, came vnto venice, and requyred the Signoria to adopte one of theyr daughters, as daughter of theyr common wealth: and than woulde he be contented to

ted to accepte hir vnto hys wyfe.

¶ This large offer was soone accepted, and Katheryn Cornaro, a goodly yong gentilwomā espowsed to the kynge, who therupon retourned into his realme continuyng in peace the tyme of hys lyfe. At his death, (leauyng his wife great with childe) he ordeyned, that she and hir child not yet borne, shold enioy the realme, But the chylde after the birth lyued not longe. Assoone as the Venetians hearde of the kynges death, they armed certaine gallets & sent them with Georgio Cornaro, brother to the Quene into Cyprus, to comfort hir on the Signorias behalfe: wyth this wyle, that whan Cornaro shold arriue before Famagosta (the principal citee of Cyprus) he should feigne him selfe so sicke, that he myght not goe out of the shippe, and whan hys sister the Quene, with hir barons should come to visite hym, than should he kepe them sure from retournyng, and sodeinelye enter the citee, subduynge it wyth the whole realme, vnto the Venetian obedyence. As it was deuised, so it happened from poinct to poinct, albeit that the Quene was counsailed not to go abourd the galey, and that some businesse was made after for it, yet in effect the Venetians preuailed, & the quene was brought to Venice, where she passed the rest of hir yeres. Some esteme this doing treason, but many men allow it for good policie. Cyprus wonne.

After Trono folowed Nicolas Marcello, in whose tyme happened no notable thyng, other than the victorious defence of the towne of Scodra in Albania against an infinite number of Turkes. Nicolo Marcello 1473

Next hym succeded Peter Mocenigo, whyche at the Pietro Mocenigo. 1474.

tyme of hys election, was capitaine of an armie by sea, wherwith he had in Cyprus quieted a great rebellyon, preserued Scodra from the Turkes fury, and restored the kyng of Carramania to hys astate.

¶ For these worthy deedes, and for hys other vertues was in hys absence first made Proctour of. S. Marke, and than (as I sayde) created Duke. And beynge called home from the army, to gouerne the dominiõ, Antonio Loredano was sente forthe in hys stede: who delyuered Lepanto from the Turkes siege, and vsed greate dylygence in the conseruacion of the countrey of Morea.

Andrea Vendramino, 1476

After Mocenigo, Andrea Vendramino was elected duke. In whose tyme the Turkes retournyng into Albania, came fyrst before Croia, & after ouerran all the countreis betwene that and the ryuer of Tagliamento in Friuli: so that the Venetians were faine to cal backe the capitaine Carlo Montone, who not longe before put out of wages was than gone into Tuscane.

¶ This Duke attempted a peace with the Turkes, but hys purpose was interrupted by meanes of the kynge of Hungary and of Naples.

John Mocenigo 1478

After Vendramino folowed John Mocenigo, brother to Peter before named.

¶ Thys man agreed wyth the Turke, after they had warred wyth hym. 17. yeares. The articles of accorde were, that the Venetians should yelde into the Turkes handes Scodra, the principal citee of Albania, with the ilandes of Corfu, Tenaro, and Lemno, and besides that should pay him. 8000. duckates a yeare. In consyderacion wherof the Turke for his parte graunted theim safe passage for trafficque of merchaundise into the sea

now

nowe called Mare Maggiore, and aunciently named Pontus Euxinus: and that the Venetians ſhuld haue power to ſende an officer of theirs vnder the name of Bailo to Conſtantinople, to iudge and order all their merchauntes buſyneſſe.

¶ Not longe after this agreemente, the Ile of Corritta in Dalmatia, was brought vnder the Venetian dominion.

¶ And in the .iiii. yeare of this mans rule, warre was moued againſt Ercole duke of Ferrara, for the breache of certeine articles betwene hym and the Venetians.

After that Robert of S. Seuerino was ſent wyth an armie againſt Ferrando kyng of Naples, in which enterpryſe the Venetians diſcomfited Alfonſe Duke of Calabria, ſonne of the foreſayde kynge. But thoſe warres, by meane of other Princes of Italye, were ſoone appeaſed, whan the duke of Ferrara (beſydes the loſſe of Comacchio) had ſuſteined very great damage for hys parte takynge.

¶ Merte to Vendramino ſucceded, Marco Barbarico who neuer ſeikng to be auenged on his enemie, woulde ſay. It ſuffiſed a diſcreat prince, to haue power to reuenge, wherby his enemy ſhuld haue cauſe to feare him. Therfore he vſed ſeueritee againſte the tranſgreſſours of the common wealth, & not againſte them that priuately offended him. In his daies hapned litel adoe. Marco Barbarico 1485.

The contrarye whereof folowed in the tyme of hys ſucceſſour Agoſtino Barbarico. agoſtino Barbarico 1486

Firſt by reaſon of the warres with Edmonde duke of Auſtriche, for the intereſt of certaine mines of pr̃, in which enterpryſe the Venetian capitaine Robert of S.

Seuerino died: than thorough the comyng of Charles the.viii. frenche kynge into Italye, who at lengthe, partly through the Venetian force was constreigned to retyre into Fraunce: but most of al they were troubled with the Turkes, who fell out with them, ouerranne al their countreis as farre as Tagliomento, slew aboue. 7000. persons of the Venetian parte, and toke from them Lepanto, Modone, Corone, and Durazo. Neuertheless this meane whyle the Venetians gatte Cremona, and diuers other townes in Italy, which is rather a repproche to thē, than an honor that wold rather warre vpon their christen neighbours, than bend their power to resist the Turkes.

Leonardo Loredano 1501.

¶ After Barbarico, Leonardo Loredano was elected to the astate: in whose tyme all Christian princes about the Venetians, conspyred by one accorde vtterly to destroye theim. And the league was suche, that in one selfe time the emperoure Maximilian, Lewys the.xii. frenche kynge, Ferrando kyng of Spayne and of Naples, Iulius bysshop of Rome, with the Dukes of Mantua and Ferrara, should warre vpon them, beginning about the yere of grace. 1509 So partelye by force, after many discoumfitures of the venetians power, partly by accorde: in maner all the venetian dominion with in the maine land was diuided amongest these princes. The french kyng had Brescia, Bergamo, Cremona, and Crema: the emperoure Maximilian, Verona, Vicenza, Padoa, and part of Friuli: The kynge of Spayne, the cities and portes in Puglia, that the venetians before had gotten: The bisshop of rome, Arimino, Faenza, Ravenna, and Cerula, with the rest of Romagnia, and the

Duke

Duke of Ferrara the Pollisene di Rouigo. So that the Venetians had so litrel dominion left on the maine lande, that ỹ emperour Maximillian came to Maestre .v. little myles from Venice, as neere as the sea woulde sucker hym to approche: and there for a triumphe or despyte, shotte of his artillerie to Venicewardes: thoughe he coulde doe it no hurt. Wherefore the Venetians, prouoked in maner by despayre, & throughe an oracyon made by theyr duke, that encouraged theim rather to die lyke men, than to sucker theim selfes thus vilye to be eaten vp and despysed, renued an armie by land, recouered Padoa, than negligentlye kepte, fortifyed it and Treuiso, fought dyuers times with variable fortune against theyr enemies, sought to be reuẽged on the duke of Ferrara, againste whome they sent .xbii. galleis and 400. botes to assaile the Ferrarese dominion by the riuer of Po: and fynallye behaued theim selfes so mansfully, that the kyng of Spaine, and the bishop of Rome, made a new leage with them against the frenche kynge: who at that tyme, besydes the state of Pyllayne, had gotten Bononia, & was become so greate in Italy, that they were all afearde of hym. Vppon conclusyon of whiche league the citesins of Bressa retourned to the Venetian obedience, so that for defence of that citee against the frenchemen, Andrea Gritti, with certeine other noble venetians and capitaines, and a conuenient nounber of souldioars, were sente thither: where after a sore conflict with the frenchemen, they were all discoumfited, slaine or taken, and the principall prysoners sent to Pyllaine to Mounser du Foys, thã gouernoure there, who sent Andrea Gritti, as a singuler presente,

prysoner.

prysoner to the frenche kynge.

The Venetians not a little troubled for this losse, caused the campe of the league, that than lay before Bononia to draw towardes Ferrara: and in succour of that campe made a new army by water, wherwith they sacked Argenta, toke Mirandula, and did muche hurte to the Ferrarese dominion, tyll at lasse the Vice Roy, of Spaine generall of the sayd campe, came before Bononia, and from thense to Rauenna for feare of the frenche host, that from Pyllaine pursued hym. Unto whyche Frenche armie the Duke of Ferrara united his power, and so together followed the armie of the league to Rauenna: where on Easterdaye in the morninge was fought the blouddiest battaile betwene theim, that hath ben heard of in our dates: and so many thousandes slaine on bothe sydes, that it coulde scarcelye be iudged whd had the better: Sauynge that the Frenchemen obteyned the victory, toke Rauenna, put it to sacke, and after gatte dyuers other townes in Romagnia.

Douchemens hall in Venice.

¶ Whilest these thinges were doing, the Douchemens hal in venice, called Il fondago di Tedeschi, was redified a very faire and great house: and of a meruaylouse rent. For they affyrme, that it yeldeth to the Venetians aboue. 100. duckates a day: whyche after ours old reckenyng amounteth aboue. 7000. pounde sterlynge by the yere.

Antonio Grimani.

¶ After Lozedano succeded Antonio Grimani, who beyng in exile, was called home, made proctour of saincte Marke, and finally Duke.

Andrea Gritti.

Than Andrea Gritti, before named, newlye retourned out of Fraunce, was elected Duke: by whose meanes

the

the Venetians entred in league with the frenche king: and so recouered Bressa, redemed Verona for a great summe of money, and ayded the frenchemen to recouer Pyllaine, and to doe many feates in the realme of Naples: how be it, the frenchemen not longe after, loste all againe through theyr ill gouernaunce and tyrannie.

¶ Finally practisyng now with fraunce, now with the emperour, now with the bishop of Rome, as best serued for the common wealth: this duke left it in good order, tranquillitee and peace, and so died, greatlye bewayled of his citesins.

¶ Than folowed Peter Lando, in whose dayes the Turke made warre to the Venetians, because they toigned with the emperour against him: so that they to obteine peace, were faine to geue hym the strong and notable citees in Napoli, and Maluagia in Greece: and besyde that the summe of .300000. duckates. Petro Lando

¶ It was thonghte, that the Turke woulde haue bern appeased with a muche lesse gifte, but beynge secreatly aduertised by the frenche ambassadour, how the Venetians had geuē theyr Bailo or ambassadour commyssion, that rather than the warre should continue to make this offer: he would none other wyse agree with them.

¶ This knowlage came through intelligence, that the french ambassadour had with one of the Venetian Secretaries, who throughe corruption of money, disclosed all the procedynges of the priuie counsayle: whyche at length beyng discouered, the same Secretary fledde into Fraunche, and .ii. other Venetians of his confederacie were taken and hanged.

By this mans time Andrea Doria, with a great nauy

of the Emperours, of the bysshop of Romes, and of the venetians together, enterpzised a iourney against Barbarossa, admiral of the Turkysh naule: and yet meting with him at great aduauntage, both of power, & place, Dozia refyzed: for what cause no man can tell. Ye lefte the Uenetian Galeon, the notableft vessell of the wozlde, in the middeft of the Turkes naupe. And yet after she had been assayled .v. houres on all sydes, she came hir wates safe, in despite of them all, leauynge an infinite number of hir shotte in the Turkish beten shippes and galleis.

Francesco Donato.

After Lando Francesco Donato was elected vnto the astate, about two peres and an halfe before the wzityng hereof. And because in his time hitherto hath not hapned anye wozthy thynge to the Uenetian, I would referre the reft to theim that hereafter shal synde occasyon to wzyte.

The

THe citee of Naples (some tyme called Parthenope) is one of the fairest cytees of the worlde, for goodly streetes and beautiful buildynge of temples & houses, specially the Castel Nouo, wherin the kings were wonte (as the Vicere now is) to be most commonly resident: beyng one of the rarest buildyngs (for greatnesse and strength, that any where is lightly to be found. Castel Nouo.

The countrey aboue is so pleasant, that in maner euerie village deserueth to be spoken of, aswel for sumptuouse buildyngs and noumbre of commodites, namely haboundaance of delicate fruites, as also for the holsesome ayre. For in most places it semeth alwaies (yea at the deadest of the winter) to be contynuall spryngetyme. In deede the heate of sommer doeth somewhat greue them, but they are so prouided of large and open buildynges, that it doeth not much annoye them. Temperature of Naples.

And one thyng amongest al the rest is to be meruailed at, whereof it should procede, that manye tymes the fyre breaketh out of the earth in diuers places vpon the sea costes, like to the flambes of Mõgibello, aunciently called Ethna in Sicile, as in the first yere of the emperour Titus, it hapned besides Naples in the hil Vesuio, now called Summi, where Plinie the same time (seking the cause therof) ended his life, not by violence of the fyre (for he approched not so nere) but by the vehement opilacion of the sulfure, that stopped his breath Plinies death.

It is true, that the natural hote baines (whereof there Hotte baynes.

Eg ii be ma-

be many in Italy, and namely, in the realme of Naples come of the naturall heate that is in the sulfure, thorough the veynes wherof the water maketh his course: but what shuld be cause of this flambe, that (as it were against nature) ascendeth out of the cold earth: almosse no man can make any reason. In deede, the best opinion that I gather, is, that the veyne of sulfure in the earth, receiuyng sometymes through the extreme heate of the sonne, a certaine kynde of fyre, kendleth: and as the veine is great or smal, so worketh it the effect. If it be nere the vpper parte of thearth, & haue vent, it breaketh oute in fyre or smoke, if it be so deepe, that for the great weyght of the earthe, it cannot issue, than doeth it cause thearth to quake: as in those parties (most subiect to the sonne) earthquakes are commō, and somtime whole townes and countreys are destroyed withal.

Fire breakyng out of the erth.

Some thinke the fertilitee of the realme shoulde procede muche of the heate that this sulfure geueth the ground (seyng there is more plenty than elswhere) but whereof soeuer it cometh the countrey is surely replenished of all thynges necessary for mans lyfe, & so pleasaunt withal, that Pandolfo Collenuccio (a notable writer of the Neapolitane histories) thinketh, the wonderfull mutacions that haue happened in the same, to procede of the desire that men had vnto the pleasers and commoditees of the countrey. And further speakynge of the inconstancie of the people, he sayth these wordes: It seemeth, that the realme of Naples is predestynate to haue in it continuall tyrannies, seditions, falshead, rebellions, warres, destruction of citees, rauishmentes, and flambe, with all the other calamitees that of auarice and

Fertillitee of Naples

rice and ambicion (true mothers of such plages) maye growe. And allegeyng the auctozitee of diuers auncient wziters, affirmeth, that the pzouinces of the realme which he calleth Regnicoli, doe perseuer withoute rebellion as longe as they fynde none to rebel against. Neuertheleſſe Titus Liuius, & the auncient Romayne hiſtozies shewe, that Naples it selfe was of all other citees moſte constant in their faieth towardes the Romaines, aswel in tyme of daunger as of pzosperitee. And foz the space of these. 30. yeres and moze they haue perseuered in quyete obedience vnder their pzinces. Neuertheleſſe in this the abbzidgement of their hiſtories ye shal see, that sens the decay of the Romaine empire, no realme in al the wozld hath ben so much subiect to alterations and warres, pzincipally thzough occasyon of the inhabitauntes them selfes, who alwaies were diuided in partetakynges to their owne confusion. And you shal yet to this houre see, that the Neapolitanes are scarcelye trusted on their wozdes. Not that I thynke they deserue lesse credyte than other men, but because the wonted general ill opinion of their vnstedfastneſſe, is not taken oute of mens hertes. Yet is the Neapolitane foz his good entertetment reckened to be the verate courteſie of the wozlde, thoughe moſte men repute him to be a great flatterer and ful of crafte. What wol you moze? They are rych, foz almoſt euery gentylman is lozde and kynge within hym selfe, they haue veray fayze women, and the wozlde at wyll, in so muche as Naples contendeth wyth Venice, whether shoulde be pzeferred foz sumptuouſe dames. Finallye the court about the Vicere, was wõt to be very pzince-

lye, and greatter than that of Pyllayne for trayne of gentilmen: but now it is somewhat diminished as you shal perceiue in the ende of this history.

¶ The saiyng (of theim that best can gesse) is, that it yeldeth the emperour. iii. millions of gold by the yeare, which after our reckenyag is about. 700000. pound. A great parte wherof is consumed in mainteining the Uiceres astate, and keping of manye fortresses, & in the wages of. 300. men of armes, continually mainteigned there, that muste kepe euerye one hys. iii. horse, for the whych he hath as good as. 50. pound stipende yearelye, and many of theim haue more. And one greate saute there is, for almost no straũger can trauaile the realme vnrobbed, specyallye betwene Rome and Naples. It is in maner closed about with the sea, except. 150. mile. that is cutte ouer from the mouth of the riuer of Vfente now called Maseno, vnto the mouth of Tronto, and is of compasse in all, measuryng it by the banke, about. 1400. miles, hauing vpon the sea costes such a number of hauens and good townes, as few realmes christened haue the lyke.

¶ The historie of Naples.



After Charlemayne had taken on hym the occidentall empyre, and agreed wyth Nicefore Emperoure of Constantinople for their confynes, leuing (as I sayd before) the Duchy of Beneuento for a mere betwene both, wherin he placed Grimoalde a noble man descen-

ded

ded of the Lumbards nacion, the realme of Naples re-
sted in peace about the space of 27. yeres, til the coming
of the Saraſines into Italye, who landed at Ciuita 829.
Vecchia, raſed it to the earth, went to Rome, ſpoilyng The fyrſte
and burnyng there what they wolde, paſſed by Monte comyng of
Caſino & by the monaſtary of S. Bennet, deſtroiynge the Sara-
all before them, and laded with wonderful rycheſſe, re- ſines into
tourned to their naule in the riuer Garigliano, and ſo Italye.
paſſed home into their owne countrey agayne.
Not longe after the Saraſines vnder their Capitayne 845
Sabba, retourned into the realme, & beſieged Taranto
to the ſuccours wherof the Greekiſh emperour ſent his
capitaine Theodoſius, with a great army by ſea, of the
whyche. 60. ſayle were Venetians, who metynge wyth
the Saraſines, fought with them, were diſcoumfyted,
many taken, ſlayne, and drowned: and finally Theodo-
ſius him ſelfe put to flyght.
¶ Than the Saraſines toke the ile of Candia, and the 864.
moze part of them arriuyng in Italy, toke all the tow-
nes on the ſea coſtes from Ancona to Otranto, and
ſo about to Taranto, ſpoiling and burning ouer al, vn-
till at laſte, the Venetian armie mette with theim, diſ-
coumfited theim, and droue them cleane away.
Within a while after Conſtantine a childe, ſonne vnto
Leo late emperour of Conſtantinople, was depriued of
his eſtate by one Romano, general of his fathers army
And this Romano (being alſo a Romaine borne of vile
condicion) vſurped the empyre by force, whyche cauſed
much ruffyng, & namely the countreis of Calabria and
Puglia rebelled againſte hym. But he to be auenged
on them, cauſed the Saraſines againe to come into Ita-
lye, who

lie, who not onely ouerronne those two countreys, but also al the rest of the realme of Naples, and Campaine almost to rome: entendyng to assaulte and sacke it, had not John the.x. than bishop of the same made a greate armie, that so fought with, and discoumfited them, that they were fayne to flee vnto the mounte of Gargano, now called saincte Angelo: where they fortifyed theym selfes & dwelled many yeres, renuyng now here nowe there throughe the realme, burnyng, spoylyng, and kyllynge in suche wyse that whan they came before anye towne, and promised, not to kyl the people nor to burne the houses, incontinently the inhabitantes would yelde them selfe: because they had been so often beten, that they thought resistence naught auayleable.

¶ And thus triumphed the Saracines in one parte and an other of the realme, but most in Calabria & Puglia, til the comyng of Otho, the fyrste of that name, emperour of Almayne, into Italye. Who being arriued at rome (from pacifiyng of certaine rumours moued against John the.xiii. than bishop there) was persuaded by Pandolfe, prince of Capua, to send the armie he had brought out of Germany into the realme: it shoulde be an easie matter for hym to dryue all the Saracines awaye. And so it proued: for the emperour had no sooner sent his sonne (also named Otho) with hys power into those parts, but incontinently the Saracens made what they coulde to carye with theim, and so departed. By reason whereof, this Othe the secounde, helde the realme as his owne certeine yeres, til the Greekish emperour Basilio, sent a mighty army of Grekes and Saracines into Puglia, & there discomfited Otho in suche

Otho the fyrst.

964.

Otho the.II.

wyse

che wyse, that if the Greekes had knowen how to haue vsed theyr victorie, they myght easilye haue recouered Rome and all Italye. But they contented with the recouerey of Calabria and Puglia, fortified the same and kepte it, not withoute warre, sometyme of one prynce, sometyme of an other, and many tymes of the Sarasines, that (stil enioyng the ile of Sicilia) wold by stelth, here and there, be doyng mischiefe agaynst their Christian neyghbours.

¶ Finally Henrie the fyrst emperour of Almaine, Mi- 1008
ghel Catalasco emperour of Constantinople, and Sergius the .iiii. byshop of Rome, the realme of Naples stode thus diuided into sundrye dompnions, Calabria and Puglia (as I haue sayde) was in possession of the Greekes: the romaynes some here, some there in Campayne and therabouts, had theyr partes, and some other vnder the name of princes, occupied the rest.

Than one Tancredi, Conte d'altavilla, a Normain borne, came into Italie, who hauyng .vii. sonnes of hys owne, and a certaine noumber of other Normaines besydes, toke wages of Pãdolfe prince of Capua, to serue in his warres againste Guaimaro prince of Salerne: in which warres the Normains serued so wel, that Pandolfe preuailed as he woulde wyshe hym selfe. But because he seemed to set little by those Normaines, after he had obteined his purpose, therfore whan the tyme of they appoinctmente was expired, they lefte Pandolfe, and wente to serue Guaimaro, whose estate by theyr helpe was shortly after much encreased. Tancredi the Normayne.

Finally Tancredi being dead, his sonne Guglielmo Ferrabach, was made generall ouer the normains, that Guglielmo Ferrabach

were than a great noumber: insomuch that the empe rour of Constantinople determynyng vtterlye to driue away the Saraſines, that than occupied the Ile of Si cile, required his helpe, promiſyng for his reward, the iiii. parte of all that ſhould be gotten . But whan the Saraſines were all dryuen away, Molocco the empe rours capitayne, toke the whole realme of Sicile into his owne handes to the emperours vſe, & wold aſſygne no parte thereof to the Normains . Whyche wronge Ferrabach diſſembled for the time, & ſo withdrew hym wyth all his into Puglia, takyng the moſte part of the countrey by force, and entrynge into Melfi (a verye ſtrong place before fortified by the Normans, for ſafe garde of their goodes, wifes and children) he prepared all thynges neceſſarye for the warre . And taryed tyll the forenamed Molocco came to beſiege him wyth a notable army, and than (as an expert captaine) conſi dering the Grekes to be werie of their greate trauayls from Sicile thither, incontinenly yſſued oute agaynſte them, and diſcomfited Molocco, ſlew the moſt part of his army, and draue hym in maner cleane out of Pug lia, takyng the poſſeſſion of it into his owne handes, and naming him ſelfe Erle of puglia, and ſo continued the reſt of his life, whych was not longe.

Drogone

¶ This Guglielmo Ferrabach than beyng deade, hys brother Drogone, ſucceded in the dominion of Puglia, who had diuers conflictes with the Grekiſh armyes, & diuers fortune withal, but finally in a great battle, be twene the ryuer Ofanto and the caſtell Oliuetto, the Grekes were ouerthrowen and from that tyme forth, the Normains enioyed the whole countrey of Puglia,

as

as their owne quyete possessyon.

Hunfredo. After the death of Orogone, folowed his brother Hunfredo, who continued. vii. yeares in the astate wythoute any notable thyng that happened in his tyme.

Godfrey. ¶ Than succeded Godfrey another brother, in whose tyme the prince of Salern happened to be slayne of his owne mē, and Gisulfo a Normaine made prince in his place. This Gisulfo had diuers tymes attempted the getting of Beneuento, and now of new made preparacion for the same, wherefore Leo the. ix. than bysshop of Rome, required succours of Henry the. 2. emperour of Almayne than beynge in Rome. So the emperour sent for his Germaines, that laye at Mercelly in Lumbardy and deliuered them to the bishop, that in his owne person, with the rest of those Italians he coulde make, entred into the realme, entendyng vtterlye to expulse the Normans. But Gisulfo, heryng of his coming, hasted to Beneuento, toke and fortified it, and afterwardes abyd the bishoppes army at a place called Ciuita, where in conclusion was stricken a sore battaile, but the Normains gat the victory, taking the bishop with certayne of his Cardinalles prysoners, whom (after veray gentill intreatyng they lette goe wythoute raunsome. For reward of whyche courtesie, the bysshop afterwardes confirmed vnto the Normaines, all that they helde in Italy, to be their lawful possessions.

Wagelardo. ¶ Not long after this dyed Godfrey, and lefte the erledome of Puglia to his sonne Wagelardo. Wherewyth Robert (surnamed Guiscardo) brother vnto Godfrey, was so much offended, that by force he chased hys nephew out of the astate, & than occupied bothe the coun-

treys of Puglia and Calabria, adioignyng also vnto it, the citee of Troia, whyche vnto that daye perteyned to the Romaynes.

Robert Guiscarda

This Robert was a man strong, hardy, and wise who perceiuyng the great contencion betwene the Romaynes and Nicolas the secound their bishop (the better to establishe his dominion) he sente his ambassadours to the bishop, who in cõpany of those ambassadours came to the cicee Aquila, and there mette with Robert: & had suche communicacion together, that Robert was contented to restore to the byshop, the citees of Beneuento and Troia, with those other landes, that he before had taken from the churche, for the which the byshop created him lawful Duke of Puglia and Calabria, and inuested him in the same duchy, with gift of the standard of the churche, so that Roberte became liege man and vassalle of the Romaine see, and by the byshops commaundement brought his armie to Rome, where he so chastised the Romaines, that they gladye obeyed their holy Romaine father.

Robert created duke.

¶ Not longe after, leauinge his brother Guglielmo in Puglia, he passed into Calabria, & fortifyed the towne of. S. Marke, and departynge thense encamped beside the riuer Boccato, nere to the baines, and shortly after gat Cosenza & Martirano. Than wente he to Squillaci & so a long the sea costes to Reggio: whiche he besieged, and finally did so much, that he gat whole Puglia and Calabria, the lande of Brutij, and the rest of the whole realme of Naples, geuyng vnto certayne of hys brethern such part as pleased hym. By reason whereof the same bretherne (who a little before had ben his contraries)

traries) consented wholy to call him from thenceforthe Duke of Calabria and Puglia.

¶ And though I couet to be briefe, yet I woul not passe ouer one thyng that happened in the tyme of this Roberte.

There was found in Puglia a certeine image of marble, with a cercle of brasse in maner of a garlãd aboute his heade, in which were written these wordes Kalendis Maiis Oriente Sole aureum caput habebo, the exposition or meanyng of this sentence was diligently sought for by Robert, but none coulde declare it, tyll at last a Saracine, learned in artemagike came forth, and (beyng prysoner) required his libertee for the interpreting of it, which being graunted, incontinently he said: The first day of the kalendes of Maye, at the risynge of the sun, marke where the end of the shadow of this head shalbe, and diggyng there, you shal know the meaning of these wordes, which time was obserued, and ere they had dygged depe, they founde a wonderfull treasure, that afterwarde dyd no small seruice vnto Roberte in hys warres. Treasure founde vnder ground.

¶ Than was the realme of Sicile vnder the Moores, whose prince Bestauerto, made one Bettimeno his admyral or chiefe capitayne ouer the same. This Bettimino came secretely into Puglia to Roger, duke Robertes brother, and shewed hym, howe Sicile was in poincte to rebel, so that for a reward and other agreementes betwene them, he finally opened to Roger the meanes, how he might get it. Whyche Roger by the helpe of his brother Robert, immediatlye enterprised, & passynge with a power into Sicile, the fyrste towne he

Sicile conquered by the normayns

toke was Messina, and at length chased awaye all the Sarasines, the whole Iland became subiecte vnto hym and his brother, so that for a token of this victorye, Roger sent vnto Alexander the secound: than bysshoppe of Rome. iiii. camelles laden with part of the praye of the Sarasines, for a presente. And wonder it was to see the speede of these victories, for Robert Guiscardo and his brothren, had broughte all these domynions before rehersed vnder them within the space of. xviii. yeres.

¶ Not longe after, Gregorie the. vii. bysshop of Rome, fyrste fel out with Robert, but afterwarde beynge sore persecuted by Henrye the. 3. Emperour of Almaine, he agreed with Robert, and receiuynge of hym onelye the marke of Ancona, he confyrmed to him al that Nicolas the. ii. had before graunted wyth rather more. For the whych, whan the same Gregory was after besieged in the castel. S. Angelo at rome, by the fornamed emperour, Robert Guiscardo came thither with an armye, and reysed the siege, leadyng the bishop (who was muche yated of the Romaynes) with hym to Salerno for his more suretie, where he shortly after dyed.

Bysshoppe of rome besieged

¶ Thus Roberte, after manye worthye feates doen in Italy and Sicile, by occasion at last minded to driue Alessio, emperour of Cõstantinople out of hys astate and to be emperour him selfe, so that he passed the sea wyth an huge armye, conquered Durazo, Valona, and dyuerse other cities in Dalmatia, Albania, and Gretia: fought by sea with the Greekish and Venetian armies both, and ouercame them: and was like to haue preuailed in his enterprise, had not death preuented hym. Finally as he was goyng into Greece at Cassiopoli,

in the

in the ile of Corfu, he sickened and died, ledynge a glo-
rioule and victorioule lyke. 60. yeres. 1082

Than succeded him in the duchie of Calabria and pug- Roger.
lia Roger his yonger sone, who in the counsaile holden at Melfi, was confyrmed by Urbane the second bishop of Rome. But Boemonde the elder brother (who euer had folowed the fayth, and at that tyme remained capi-
tayne ouer the armie in Grece) herynge that no part of the dominion in Italye was reserued for him, wared so wroth withal, that (habandonyng all his fathers enter-
pryse) passed the sea with his army, to driue hys brother oute of the astate: and dyd so muche, that after muche feyghtinge, by agremente parte of Puglia was assig-
ned vnto hym, though he enioyed it not longe. For im-
mediately after folowed the greate viage into the holye land vpon the conclusion of the counsaile made in Chi-
aramonte d'aluerina in Fraunce. In which viage a- 1094
mongest the other princes, Boemonde him selfe would nedes goe, and so worthily behaued him, that by assente of all men he was made prince of Antioche, and so con-
tinued honorablye till hys laste day. By reason wherof hys brother Roger remained quietly Duke of Puglia and Calabria, from the beginnyng of his reigne about xxv. yeres.

Next him succeded his sonne Guglielmo, that thyn- Guglielmo.
king to mary one of the daughters of Alessio emperour of Constantinople, toke shippynge to goe thither: and commended his astate to the protection of Calixte the second than bysshop of Rome. But while Guglielmo was absent, Roger than Erle of Sicile, sonne vnto Ro-
ger brother of Robert Guiscardo, without any regarde

of the

of the bysshop, assaulted Calabria, and gotte the better parte ere euer Calixt coulde succoure it. And albeit the bisshop reised suche an armye as the hasty tyme woulde serue, and came forth as farre as Beneuento, sendynge a Cardinal before with exhortacions and excommunycacions, yet wold Roger nothyng decline from his purpose: but was rather more hotte in hys enterprise, and fortune so muche fauoured hym, that after a noumber of the bisshoppes armie were fallen sicke, and manye of his dere frendes dead, the bysshop him selfe sickened so sore that he was caried in a horselitter backe to Rome, and all hys people desperpled. By reason wherof roger in maner without resistence, in shorte time gat all Puglia and Calabria into his owne possession, and so kept it, that whā Guglielmo retourned, deceined of hys pretended mariage (findynge him selfe also spoyled of hys dominion) he was fayne to repayre to his cousen the prince of Saexn, where not longe after he died, leaning none issue.

Roger. 2.

¶ So Roger remaignyng successour by inheritaunce, woulde no more be called Duke, but entitled hym selfe kynge of Italy, whych Calixt and Honorius (nexte bysshop after him) dissembled, because thei could not chose: but Innocence the second, theyr next successour would not abyde that name, and therefore moued of dysdeyne without measuryng his force, sodeinely assembled such people as he could make, and went against Roger with so great a furie, that ere euer Roger coulde make anye preparacyon, he draue hym from. S. Germaynes, and oute of all the abbey landes (where Roger thought to

haue

haue defended hym selfe) and finally constreigned him to fle into the castel Galuzzo, and there beseyged hym, till william duke of Calabzia, sonne of Roger, coming with an army to succour his father, discomfited ẏ byshops power, & finally toke the byshop him selfe, withal his cardinals pzisoners whō Roger the father entreated very courtesly, and at last licēced them to departe at theyz pleasure. In consideracion whereof the byshop graunted roger al his owne requestes, the title of king onely excepted: and amongest other thinges the citee of Naples, which till that tyme had alwaies ben the emperours. Foz ioye wherof Roger at hys entrie made an hundzeth and fiftie knightes. But innocence returnyng to rome, found a new byshop made in his absēce, one Peter, sonne of Pierleone, and was called Anacletus. Wherefoze Innocence fledde with certayne shipspes of Pisa, into Fraance. The meane whyle Roger vsityng this other bishop Anaclete, obteined of him the title of kynge of bothe the Sicsles, on this syde and beyonde the Faro. But within thzee yeres after, Innocence by helpe of the Pisant returned, & bzought wyth hym Lothayze Duke of Saxonie, whome he crowned emperour. After which Cozonacion they bothe with a puissaunt army went against Roger, & toke from hym al that he had gotten in Italye, as farre as the Faro di Messina, but within few yeres, whan Innocente was dead, Roger recouered agayne all that they toke from hym, and did afterward many notable feates agaynste Emanuel emperour of Constantinople, whose ilandes and townes he toke by foze, as Corfu, Corinthe, Thebes, and Negroponte, & burned the suburbes of Con-

The citye of Naples gotten by the Normayns.

Roger entitled kynge of Sicile

stantinople, assaulted the emperours palaice, and for a memorie of his beyng there, gathered apples in his Orchard.

1149 He also foughte with the Sarasines and rescued Lewys the. viii. Frenche kyng out of their handes, taken by theim by the way, goynge into the holie lande. And so reigning. 24. yeres lord of Sicile, he died in the citee of Palermo.

Than succeded his sonne william before named, who Guglielmo. 3 immediately ouerran the church landes, and was therfore excommunicated, insomuch that many of his owne barons conspired with Adrian bishop of Rome against hym. But finally after much a doe he humbled hym selfe to the bishop, of whom he was assoiled, & inuested kynge of newe in the dominion of both the Sicilies.

And after that made an armie into Barbarie, where by force he toke and sacked the citee of Tunyse: In his retourne from thense he vanquished the grekish army by sea, though they were many moe in number than he.

But because he wared afterward somwhat couetouse, and burdened the people with tares and subsidies, hys barons rebelled, toke him in hys palaice at Palermo, Wylliam deposed. and put him in prison. Than toke they his eldest sonne Roger, and made him ryde through the streetes. After whom the people went cryng. Life to kinge Roger, and death to the tiranne king wylliam.

But the inconstante people repentyng them of their errour, or fearynge leste Roger would reuenge the iniurie done to his father, retourned to the palaice with a newe rumour, and findyng it closed, began to assault it, so that roger thinking to appeale them, came to a win-

dowe

dow, and as he would haue spoken, was shotte into the heade with an arrowe, wherof he dyed. William restored

¶ Than was william taken out of prison and restored to his kyngdome, wherin after he had reigned in al. 21 yeres, he died, leuynge his sonne also named Wyllyam in the astate.

¶ This william for his good and peasible gouernance was surnamed. The good kynge Wyllyam. For in 26 yeres reigne, he neuer had warre with any christian prince, excepte that littel, that (moued onelye of a noble courage) he made against Andronico, who beinge leste tutour to Emanuel the second, a child, vsurped his empire of Constantinople. But the Constantinopolitans them selfes arose against him, and hewed him to peeces creatyng Isaac emperour in hys place. Guglielmo. 4

¶ Many worthy feates did this William with his galleis agaynste the infidelles: specially in the viage that the two kings Philip of France, and Richard of englande made into the holy lande. Duryng whose beynge at the siege of Acres, the good kynge William dyed in Palermo, without issue of hys body. 1191

¶ Than the barons fearing the bishop of Rome should subdue theim (whose subiectes they wolde in no wyse be) incontinently elected Tancredi (bastarde sonne of the laste Roger before named) to be their kynge. But shortly Celestine the. iii. bishop of Rome, founde meane to trouble hym on this wyse. Tancredi

¶ He crowned Henry the. vi. emperour on condycion, that he at his owne charges shold conquere the realme of both Sicyles, to hold it in fee of the church, restoryng certaine cities, and paiyng a certayne tribute. And to

make his matter the better, he secretlie toke oute of the monastarie of Palermo Constance a nunne, doughter of the forenamed roger, and (despensyng withall) gaue her in mariage to this emperoure Henrye, crowninge them both with the title of the foresayde realme. And so folowyng that title the emperour besieged Naples, but 1191 by reason of a greate plage in his armie, he was fayne to leaue his siege and retourne into Almayne. Before whose retourne (which was. iiii. yeres after) Tancredi dyed, not reignyng fully. ix. yeres.

¶ Immediately after, his wyfe Sibile caused William their sonne to be crowned. But the forenamed empe- Guglielmo. 5 roure (pretendyng title in the right of his wyfe) with a 1195 puissaunt armye entred the realme, & in maner without resistence obteined the whole, driuing the Quene & hir son william from place to place so longe, that at length 1197 he besieged theim in a stronge holde, where fallynge to composicion, it was agreed, that William should enioie the principate of Taranto, with the Erldom of Leccio, yeldyng therfore due obedience to the emperoure, who was sworne to obserue this couenaunte. But contrary to his promyse the emperour assoone as he had the mother and sonne in his handes, sent them bothe into Almaine, and made William to be gelded, to the entente there should folow no more issue of that bloudde. And Ende of the house of Normains. so ended that noble house of the Normaines miserably that about the space of. 200. yeres had prospered, and at length reigned in Italy & Sicile, as you haue heard.

¶ After Henry the. vi. emperoure of Almaine (borne of Henrico. 6 Imperatore. the house of Sueuia) had thus extinguished the domynion and power of the Normayne bloud in Italye, he

obteined

obteined the realme of Naples and Sicile, and reigned
ouer them wel neere iiii. yeres, and died. Leauynge the 1198
realme by testament vnto his sonne Federike, whō his
wife Constance bare after she was. 50. yeres old: whi-
che being but a babe, he committed to the protection of
his mother Constance, of innocent the. iii. than bysshop
of rome, and of his brother Phillip duke of Sueuia.

Federike. ¶ So Federike not fullye. iii. yeares olde was crowned
kyng in Palermo: shortly after whose Coronacion his
mother constance died, commendyng the tuicion of the
estate wholly to the bysshop of rome, that accordynglye
maintreigned the same to his power: notwithstandynge
that during the noneage of Federike, diuers businesses
hapned in the realme. First by Marquarde an Almain,
made Marques of Ancona: by Henrye the. vi. after by
Gualtiero di Brenna a Frenchman, who in the right
of his wyfe, one of the systers of the last king wyllyam
the Normaine, pretended title to the realme. Finallye
by Otho duke of Saxonie, whyche after he had obteyned the imperyall crowne at rome, disposed hym selfe
wholly to conquere Naples and Sicile: till the forena-
med Innocent by waye of excommunicacion had made
so many of his nobles and prelates to forsake him, that
he was fayne to leaue hys enterprise. At last Federike
beyng growen sufficiētly in yeres, was called into Al-
maine, and there elected emperoure after the deathe of
Otho, so that returning to rome, he was triumphant- 1220.
ly crowned by Honorius the. iii. than bisshop: in recom-
pence wherof he gaue the erledom of Fondi, with cer-
taine other landes to the church: but shortlye after Ho-
norius excommunicated federike, the cause why I find

not: so that Federike to annoy the landes of the church gathered together a noumber of disperpled Saraſines, placyng theim in Luceria: and did so much hurte, that neither Honorius, nor yet Gregorye the .ix. that was bychop after hym .xiiii. yeares, had in maner anye good dayes reſt. Some holde opinion, that Gregorie died onely for sorowe. Neuertheleſſe this Federike was a worthy man. He had .iii. wyfes, the fyrſte named Conſtance, ſyſter to the kynge of Caſtile, by whome he had a ſonne named Henry, that afterwardes for rebellinge againſt his father died in priſon: the ſecõd was Iolante daughter of Iohn di Brenno, king of Ieruſalem, with whoſe maryage the tytle of the Realme of Ieruſalem was geuen him, which title all the Napolitane kynges haue kepte euer ſens, as the emperour doth at this day: the thyrde was Iſabell, daughter to the kynge of Englande. This Federike went into the holy lande with a puiſſaunt armie, and there behaued him ſelfe ſo valiauntlye, that the Soldane ſued to hym for truce, and vpon agrement deliuered to him the citee of Ieruſalem with the whole realme thereunto belongynge (a fewe ſmal forteresſes onelye excepted) inſomuche, that in the myddeſt of Lent, he was in Ieruſalem crowned, & before his retourne reedified the citee of Ioppa, now called Zaffo. And after a notable victorye had againſte the Mylaneſe, wyth other their confederates of Lumbardie, he entred into Cremona in maner of triumph, leadynge after hym a noumber of priſoners with theyr Carroccio, on the which Piero Tiepolo Poteſtate of Mylaine was hanged by one of the armes with an halter aboute hys necke. This Carroccio was a carte drawen by

The kynges of Naples entitled kynges of Ieruſalem

1229.

Carroccio.

wen by certeine oren, trimmed aboute with greeces or steppes in maner of a kingly seate, and decked with ornamentes of tapestrie and silkes of the beste sorte, wyth the standardes and baners of all the confederete citees and nobles. Unto whiche as to the principall place of iudgement or of audience all men used to resorte. And whan so euer the Carroccio, in any battaile was losse, than was the fielde wonne, for aboute it was alwayes the strength of the battaile.

Of this battaile and triumph one wrote these wordes, Hæ occisis non sufficiunt sepulturæ, nec Cremonæ palatia multitudinem non capiunt captiuorũ, which is as muche to saye. To them that are slaine sepultures suffice not, nor the palaices of Cremona are not able to receiue the multitude of prisoners.

Than Gregorie lette crie the Croisie against him, and so much prouoked hym, that all the prieستes he toke, he caused their shauen crownes to be cutte a crosse, with a number of other despytes. And beynge at siege before the citee of Faenza (which he toke at last by composition) wantyng money to pay his souldiours, he coygned leather, and valewed it, whiche for the tyme serued as wel as siluer or golde. Afterwardes beyng returned into the realme, he receiued the lether and gaue the valewe of gold for it againe.

Entio kyng of Sardegna, and sonne of this emperour Federike, by his fathers commaundement, fought with the Genowaies by sea, and ouercame .4. saile of theim, in whyche .iii. of the bishoppe of Romes legates, with a number of other prelates (goynge to the counsayle at Rome made against Federike) were taken prysoners.

And

An Entio writyng to his father, to know what he shold doe wyth them, was aunswered thus in two verses.

Omnes prælati papa mandante vocati,
Et tres legati veniant huc vsq; ligati.

Whych is as much to saye.

Sende me those prelates called by the pope,
With their.iii.legates bound in a rope.

¶ Finally Gregory the.ix.(as I sayd before) seynge he could by no meane preuaile against Federike, sickened for sorow and dyed. 1250

¶ Than succeded Innocent the.iiii, who before beyng a Cardinal, was faste friende to the emperoure. But assoone as he was bishop he became his mortal enemy: as Federike him selfe said, whan the newes of his election was brought hym: nowe of a good friende shall I haue an ennemye. For in dede Innocent al his dayes ceased not to worke agaynst Federike al the mischyefe he coulde imagine. He fledde into Fraunce: and called a generall counsaile in Lyons, where Federike was double accused: but he esteemed it not, answearing alwayes, that as longe as the byshop went about temporal persecution, he would defend him selfe temporally. ¶ Finally after many notable batrailes and victories, he finished his life in Fiorẽtino, a little towne of Puglia, leauynge generall heyre of the realme of Naples, his sonne Conrado, borne of his second wyfe Iolante, who by election of the princes of Germanie, succeded hys father in the empyre. One other lawfull chylde he had named Henry borne of Isabel his.iii. wyfe, to whom he assigned the Iland of Sicile from the Faro di Messina forewardes. Than of bastardes he had

Entio

Entio beforenamed, kynge of Sardegna, Manfredo prince of Taranto, and Federike Prince of Antioche, with diuers others not so notable.

¶ As soone as the Conrade being in Almaine, heard of his fathers death, he came with a great army, first into Lumbardy, where he recouered many cittees that newly had rebelled: and after passed into the realme, reducynge also vnto his obedience those townes that before his comming were in a rumour, of whiche some he destroied and put to sacke, as Capua and Aquino, and so finally besieged Naples, which at length he toke by famine: ouerthrowinge the walles and principall houses therof, with banishement of diuers of the nobles. Thus whan he had got Naples, the whole realme was clerely his owne: so after he gaue hym selfe altogether to huntyng and haukyng with other like pastimes. And beyng so in peace, his mother Isabell sente hys brother Henry, than tender of yeres, to do reuerence vnto him, whom Conrade caused secretely to be murdered by the way. A child in witte and beautie beyng towarde. But the crueltee was not long vnpunished for conrade hym selfe, by procurement of his bastard brother Manfredo (as it was sayde) was poysoned within. v. monethes after.

Conrade

Crueltee

¶ Now it is to be vnderstanded, that Henrye the eldest sonne of themperour Federike, who (as I saide before) died in prison, had a lawful sone named Corradino, to whom after the death of Conrade all the dompnion of Federike descended. But Innocent the. iiii. yet liuing, and considerynge Corradino beinge but a child in Almaine, made an armie, & withal spede went to Naples,

Conradine next heire vnto Conrade.

1254. where he was receiued, and (as it was thought) had in short space obteined the realme, had he not dyed immediatelye.

Manfredo ¶ By reason of whose death, Manfredo by title of tutour of the younge Corradino (yet still in Germanye) sodeinely assaulted and discomfited the bishops army, and within very short space brought the whole realme to obedience, ere the ryghte tutours of Corradino in Almaine, knew of this victorye.

¶ Than craftily he hyred certaine Almaines to feigne, that they came freighte oute of their countrey with newes of Corradines death: wherfore Manfredo with all his, clothed in blacke seemed greatly to lamente the thing, insomuch that he caused the funeralles honorably to be executed.

¶ Not longe after appered him selfe in kinglye habite, and was saluted and called kynge. Wherewith Alexander the. iiii. than bishop of Rome was sore offended, excommunicated Manfredo, and sent an armie against hym, which was discomfyted. For Manfredo gathering into his handes the treasures of his predecessours, waged so many Saracynes, and banished men of the Florentines and Lumbardes, that he was alwayes to stronge for the bishop.

¶ After Alexander succeded Urbane the. iiii. who to ouercome Manfredo lette crie a Croysie, vnder coloure to expulse the Saracines oute of Italie and Sicile. But the army of that Croysie was not sufficient to furnish the enterprise. So that Urbane of newe began to deuise a better way, callyng charles Duke of Angio and erle of prouance, brother vnto Lewys the. x. frenche

kyng

kynge vnto Rome, where first he made him Senatour and after crowned hym kinge of Sicile and of Ierusalem, vpon condicion, that he should paye yearelye to the churche. 48000. duckates. Pursuyng the title, charles with his frenche armie invaded the realme, and at laste in plaine battaile fought with Manfredo besides Beneuẽto, where Manfredo was slaine, and hys power discomfited, so that Charles findyng after in maner no resistent, gat the dominion ouer the whole realme, and at length toke the wife and sonne of Manfredo prysoners, which sonne had his eies put oute, and after dyed myserablie in prison in the castel De Louo. 1265.

Ende of the house of Sueuia in the dominion of Naples. Carlo Duca de Angio.

¶ Than wente Charles royallye to Naples, where he found an infinite treasure that Manfredo had gathered, the third part whereof he destributed amongest hys souldiours: and waxed so great, that Clemente the. iiii. who succeded Urbane, made him vicare of the Empire in Italye: so that at his pleasure he rode aboute the Viterbo and into Tuscane vntil the comyng of Corradino before named, right heire by title of the house of Sueuia vnto the crowne of Naples, who hauinge certaine intelligence in Italie, came with a mighty power oute of Almaine to recouer his enheritaunce. But Charles ouercame him more by polycye than strengthe in the playne of Palenta.

¶ And albeit Corradino and his cousen the Duke of Austriche verey yonge men, fledde in the discomfiture of the battaile, and did disguise them selfes in vile apparaile, trustyng to escape: yet their yll fortune at laste discouered thẽ, so that they were taken, brought to Naples, & there after a yeres imprisonmẽt (against al law 1268

Corradino beheaded.

armes or reason) openly beheaded: some saye, throughe counsayle of the byshop of Rome. For whan Charles had asked counsaile of the byshop, what he shoulde doe with Corradino, he aunswered these wordes, Vita Corradini mors Caroli, mors Corradini vita Caroli.

Crueltee

¶ But surely Peter, than kyng of Aragone, sufficiently reproued this crueltee in a letter written to Charles with these wordes, Tu Nerone Neronior, et Sarracenis crudelior, that is to say, thou art more Nero than Nero him selfe, and more crewel than the Saracines. For in dede Charles wente into the holy land with his brother Lewys the Frenche kynge, and there being taken prisoners of the Saracines, were courteisly entreated and sette to theyr raunsome. Whiche thynge gentylnesse and reason wolde he shoulde haue vsed towardes Corradino.

¶ But see what followed. The frenche officers and souldiours in sicile, behaued them selfe so proudly with a certaine kynd of tyrannie, as wel againste women as men, that Sicilians conspyred agaynst them, throughe the instigacion of one John di Procida, sometime phisicion to the kyng Manfredo, who after he had obteined promyse of maintenaunce by kyng Peter of Aragone, wrought this conspiracie the space of .xviii. Monethes (a wonder it could so long be kept secrete) and so well it came to passe, that at the daye appoincted, with the fyrst ringyng of a bell to euensonge, the Sicilians beyng armed, slew all the frenchemen, wheresoeuer they founde them, they left not in all Sicile one frenchman on lyue, nor one woman that was knowen to be wyth chylde of a frenchman. Wherof yet vnto this daye, the

Rebellion in Sicile. Slaughter of Frenchemen.

Sicili-

Sicilians euensonge, is vsed as a prouerbe in Italy.

Peter kynge of Aragone.

¶ And than by accorde came to the kynge of Aragone and receiued Sicile vnto his dominion, the rather because he had a certaine title therunto, as in the right of his wife Constance, daughter to the late kyng Manfredo. Unto whom also the bishop of Rome graunted hys consent, and in deede inuested him kyng therof by hys ecclesiastical power.

¶ Many thynges happened betwene king Charles and king Peter, amongest other a defiaunce to fight hand to hand with the place appointed at Burdeaux, before our prince Edward, than ruler of Gascoygne: where bothe kynges kepte theyr daye: but nother mette, nor fought. And ere euer kyng Charles retourned, Roger di Loria, admyral to kyng Peter, had foughten by sea with Charles prince of Salern, onely sonne of king Charles, before Naples, and taken hym prisoner, with a number of the Neapolitane barons and gentilmen, that were all sent (except charles with ir. of the chiefest) into Sicile, and there for a reuengemente of Corradinos death. 200. of those nobles and gentylmen were beheaded on a daye.

Charles sonne taken prisoner.

Cruelte

Finally kyng Charles vpon his retourne, made ercedynge greate preparacion to inuade Sicile, but er he could bringe it to passe, he died for anger and melancolye, after he had reigned. xix. yeres. 1274

Title of the kyngdom of Jerusalem 1276.

And for as muche as some holde opinion, that thys Charles was the fyrst Neapolitane kynge, that obteyned the title of kyng of Jerusalem, it is necessary to declare, by what meane.

The lady Marie, doughter of the prince of Antioche,

resigned into the handes of this kynge Charles all hir tytle to the realme of Jerusalem, where vpon he caused him selfe to be crowned kynge of Jerusalem, and wyth helpe of the Venetians, sent Roger Di San Seuerino to be gouernour, to receiue feaultee and homage of the christen barons there. Thus and not by the interest of Federike, the kynges of Naples vsed the title of Jerusalem: thoughe I fynde not who was Charles father, by name, nor yet by what reason that realme shold appertaine to hir.

Carlo. 2. When kynge Charles was deade, hys onelye sonne and heire, charles prince of Salerne remained prisoner in Sicile, vnder the keping of quene Constance, wife to king Peter of Aragone: and was by consent of the barons condemned to die, as it were for a ful reuengement of Conradinos death: but the noble hert of constance, would not suffer it: Excusynge the matter, that before she knew hir housbandes mynd, she would not attempt so greate a thinge. Wherefore she sente hym into Aragone, where he continued prisoner til king Peter died: and than by procurement of prince Edwarde, lorde of Gascoygne, he was delyuered & restored to hys realme of Naples. Who was raunsomed at. 30000. markes: and for performance of conenauntes. iii. of his sonnes and. 100. gentilmen laye in hostage.

Prynce Edwarde of England

Here is to be noted, that within the space of one yere died. iii. kynges and a bishop of Rome, that is to wete, Philip king of Fraunce, charles king of Naples, Peter king of Aragon, and Martine the. 4. bishop of rome.

After Peter succeded in the realme of Aragon his eldest sonne Aufus, in Sicile his sonne James, that held

in pris

in prison the forenamed charles the secounde.

¶ Finallie Aufas the elder brother beyng dead, James to haue the kingdome of Aragon in peace (fore vered at that time by the french kyng) fell at composicion wyth charles, to renounce Sicile vnto hym, and so dyd. But Federike yonger brother to James, assoone as he hard therof, got a certaine power, went into Sicile, and gat it to hym selfe: by reason whereof betwene charles and Federike was continual warre many yeres, tyll at last charles to haue calabria in peace (the most parte wherof Federike had gotten by force) consented, that Federike duryng his life, should quietly enioy Sicile. Federike kynge of Sicile.

¶ So charles bringing all his thinges to a quiet, reigned. 24. yeres, and died, leauyng issue by his wife (Mary doughter of kyng Stephen of Hungary). vi. sonnes and 6 doughters. The eldest named charles Martell, afterwardes kynge of Hungarye by the mothers title, Lewis the secound sonne bishop of Colonse in Spaine Robert the third sonne kynge of Naples. As for the rest, though they were princes, Quenes and princesses, yet I passe them ouer, and wyll onely speake of Lewys duke of Durazzo, because charles Dadurazzo (who was next kyng after the firste quene Johan) descended of hym. 1309.

At the death of charles, Roberte his. iii. sonne beynge in Auignon, was called from thens to the dominion of Naples, and confirmed kyng by Clemente the. v. than bishop of Rome, howbeit not long after Caronumberto kynge of Hungarye, and sonne of hys elder brother charles, pretended title therunto: but after longe debatyng therof, the lawiers finallye determined, that Ro- Roberi.

bert

bert shouls continue, and Caronumberto shoulde consent hym wyth the Realme of Hungarie. And thoughe Robert was muche troubled by the comyng of the emperour Henrye the. vii. into Italie, yet (after the emperour was poisoned by a blacke frier, in ministryng him the sacrament of communion at Bonconuento besides Siena, by order (as they say) of the Romish legate, king Roberte prospered so well in Italie (by reason he was taken as heade of the Guelfi) that he subdued Genoa: and the Florentines with their whole estate submitted themselfes vnto him, & accepted his sonne Carlo senza terra to be their lorde. Whiche Charles not longe after his establishment in that dominion, retourned to Naples and died.

1342. Finally Robert hym selfe sickened and died, without heyres males. And so the inheritance remayned in the iii. daughters of his forenamed sonne Charles. Vnto the eldest named Johan, he by his testament left the realme, vpon condition, that she should mary with his nephew Andrew, yonger son of the abouenamed Caronumberto. In whose tyme lined Petrarcha and Bocchacio, the one for verse, and the other for prose, famouse in theyr Italian tongue: and for theyr vertues muche cherished of this kynge Robert.

Petrarcha Boccharius.

Giouanna prima. Quene Johans Husband strangled

According to the testament of kyng Robert, hys nephiew Andrew came out of Hungary, & maried Quene Johan, with whom he reigned scarcely. iii. yeares, but that she caused hym to bee hanged out at hys chamber wyndow, because (as the fame went) he was not cockie enough to satisfie hir appetite.

Than maried she Lewys prince of Taranto, an excel-

lent

lent beautifull man. But Lewys kyng of Hungarie, elder brother to Andrew, to reuenge his brothers death came with a puissaunt army into the realme, insomuch that the Queene and hir husband bothe fledde to Auignion in Prouance, leauing charles da Durazzo, sone of Lewys da Durazzo beforenamed, theyr lieuetenãt to defend: but the Hungarien so muche prospered, that in short space he gatte the whole realme, and toke thys charles da Durazzo, with his son Charles prisoners. The father was behraded, as giltie of the death of Andrew, being of secret faction in armes with the quene: the sonne was ledde prysoner into Hungary. Finallye kynge Lewys, after he had been. iii. monethes in the realme, leauyng a stronge garrison of Hungariens at Naples, retourned into his countrey.

¶Than Clement the. vi. bishoppe of Rome entreated a peace betwene kyng Lewys and the Queene, in suche wyse, that Johan retourned into hir state, with couenaunt, that hir housbande shoulde in no wyse beare the tytle of kynge. But what auailed that: for she was no sooner in possession of the realme againe, but she by fauour of Clement, caused hir husbãd to be crowned king in Naples, and by Clement's procurement, got the con- 1352.
sent of the kynge of Hungarye therunto. For the whyche she gaue to the bishop the citee of Auignion, that the churche euer sens hathe kepte. But Lewys couetynge to satisfie hir fleshelye appetite, fell in a consumpcyon, and dyed, within. iii. yeres after.

Than she maried James of Tarracone, a yonge gentilmã borne in Maiorica, than reputed the goodliest fellow in the worlde: But to hym she graunted not the ty-

tle of kyng. Within fewe yeares he dyed: ſome ſaye by natural infyrmitee: other ſaye, ſhe cauſed his head to be ſtricken of, for companyng with another woman.
After ſhe maried Otho, Duke of Brainſwich in Saxonie, who than at that time ſerued in the warres of Italye, reteigned with the biſhop of Rome.

Finally, Queene Johan, who fauoured not Urbane the. vi. elected biſhop, immediatelye procured certaine Cardinalles to elect one of the French faction: ſo they elected clement the. vii. by reaſon wherof grew a great ſchiſme in the churche. For Italy, Hungarye and Almaine fauored Urbane: Fraunce and Spaine fauored Clemente. And Urbane to be reuenged on the quene, made an armie, and dyd ſo muche, that he conſtreigned both clement and the quene, to flee from Naples to Auignion: where the quene conſidering ſhe had no child, adopted Lewys Duke of Angio ſecound ſonne to king John of Fraunce to be hir heire of the realmes of Naples and Sicile, and therof made ſufficyente writynge: wherupon the ſecounde line of the houſe of Angio haue euer ſens mainteigned their tytle that they haue to the Realme.

Title of the ſecond lyne of the houſe of Angio.

Shortly after the quene returned to Naples. But Urbane this meane while, had inueſted Carles da durazzo (who as you haue herde before, was ledde priſoner into Hungary) kynge of Naples, and wrought ſo well, that charles by helpe of the kynge of Hungarye (that than fauored him much) brought a greate armye with him, and inconcluſion toke Naples and the quene with hir huſband priſoners. 1381.

The huſbande Otho was ſette at lyberte vpon condi-

cion

dicyon he shoulde departe out of the realme. But the quene by sentence of the king of Hungary, was hanged at the same wyndowe, where she caused hir first husbande to be hanged. Hir sister Marie (of hir counsaile in that matter) was beheaded. Queene Iohan hanged.

¶ This Marie was she, of whome Boccace was enamoured, and for whose sake he wrote the two bokes, Fiammetta and Filocolo, And amongest other verses writen of this quene Iohan, I finde .ii. verye notable. Marie

Regna regũt vulue. gẽs tota clamat simul, oh, veh,
Interitus regni est a muliere regi,

Whiche in englysh are of this effect,

Helas crien the people all,
A womans shappe weareth the crowne,
Womans rulyng the wealth turne shal,
Of realmes, quite vpside downe.

¶ Quene Iohan beynge thus dyspatched, Charles remeigned peasably in possession of the realme, til Lewis duke of Angio beforenamed (heire adopted) came with a great army out of Fraunce to recouer the realme as his enheritaunce: and by the helpe of certaine princes of Italy, passed through Lumbardy, La Romagnia, e la Marca, e so entred into Puglia, where manye townes yelded vnto hym: continuing so a yere and more, and to strength his army, Mounser de Couci was sent after him with .12000. horsemen from the frenche kyng. But he not folowing the duke, passed through Tuscane and besiegeing the Castel of Arezzo taried so long, that er euer he coulde come to the succours, the Conte Alberico, general of the kynges armye, had discomfyted the frenche armie, and slayne the duke in the fyelde. Charlo. 3

For whoſe death Charles withall his courte, mourned in blacke a moneth, Mounſer de Couci hearing of the Dukes death, ſolde the towne of Arezzo to the Flozentines for. 40000. duckates, & immediatelye retourned into Fraunce: ſo Charles had the realme in peace, till Urbane the biſhop, who called him vnto the realme, fel out with him, becauſe charles wold not cõſent to make Butillo the byſhops nephewe, borne of a vyle ſtocke, prince of Capua. Vppon which breach Urbane curſed him: and becauſe he had not power to reuenge him vppon Charles, he tourned his wrathe vppon .vii. Cardinalles that he ſuſpected. Of whom he put .v. into a ſacke and threw them into the ſea, and the other two he put to death at Genoa, and dried their bodies in a furneiſe, caryng them afterwardes on moyles before hym for an example to the reſt.

¶ Finally kyng Lewys of Hungarye deceaſyng without heire male, the barons of the realme called kynge Charles to the dominion therof, who at laſte went thither, and was crowned in Alba, but afterwards going to Buda, he was frendely called to a ſupper by the olde quene and hir doughter, and there traiterouſly ſlaine at the table.

Murder. 1386.

¶ This Charles had geuen to hym to wyfe by Lewys kyng of Hungary, Margarete yongeſt ſiſter of Quene Johan before mencioned, on whom he begat two children: Ladiſlaus and Johan. But aſſoone as the Napolitanes heard of Charles death, they toke their owne libertee vpon theim, ſo that quene Margarete, with hir children, was faine to flee to Gaeta, where ſhe remained in muche care and trouble .iiii. yeares, whyleſt the

whole

whole realme was tourned and tossed: firste by Otho late husbande to quene Johan, who gatte a greate part therof, and died at Foggia, than by Lewys the secound Duke of Angio, who folowynge his fathers title, sente certaine gallets to Naples to maintaigne those Napolines that toke his parte.

Ladislaus. 1370

Finallie Boniface the. ix. than bishop of Rome, admitted the excommunication made against Charles: and caused Ladislaus to be crowned kynge at Gaetta. And albeit the forenamed Lewys of Angio, came to Naples with an army by sea, and was there receiued, yet Ladislaus by littell and littell so allured the barons to hym, that he not only constreigned Lewys to withdraw him into Prouance, but also brought Naples and the rest of the realme obedyent to hym. Thries he attempted the gettyng of Rome, which the fourth time he obteigned, insomuche that entrynge tryumphantly, the Romayne nobilitee did him homage. But what folowed: Alexander the. v. beyng made bishop of Rome in the counsayle at Pisa, receiued the forenamed Lewys of Angio that than was newly comen thither to doe hym honour.

Rome gotten 1408.

For the which he obteigned of Alexãder the inuestiture of the realme of Naples, and prouysion was made for recouery of Rome and thother landes of the Churche, whiche within short tyme was brought to passe.

Finally Lewis conducted an army out of fraunce, and augmentyng it with the Florentines & bishop of romes powers, entred the realme: where in playne battaile he so discomfited Ladislaus, that if Lewys had knowen how to vse his victorye, he might to haue had Ladislaus in his handes, and also the whole realme: as Ladislaus,

 fallyng

talkynge of this battayle was wonte to saye, that firſte day (sayd Ladiſlaus) if thei had folowed it, they mighte haue been lordes both of my realme and person, the ſecond daye of the realme, but not of my person, and the thyrde day nother of my realme nor person. For the leyſure that Ladiſlaus had after this diſcomfiture, ſerued hym so to fortifie the paſſages, that Lewys notwithſtanding his victorie, was faine to retyre to rome, and so backe into Fraunce. By reaſon wherof, Ladyſlaus remaynynge quyet in his eſtate, diſpoſed hym ſelfe of newe to recouer rome, & partly by intelligence, partly by force did so: puttyng to ſacke onely the Florentynes gooddes, that he founde there. And at laſte ſickened in Perugia, some ſaye of a feuer, some ſaye of poyſon: ſo that he dyed, whan he had reigned. 29. yeares. And leauing none iſſue of his owne body, the realme deſcended to his ſiſter Johan Da Durazzo.

Rome the ſecound time gotten by Ladiſlaus.

1424

Giouanna. 2.

Thus Johan, late Ducheſſe of Sterlich, atteined the realme, without impediment, by reaſon of. xvi. thouſand horſemen that ſerued hir brother at hys death, wyth good captains, as Sforza da Cotigniola, gli Attendoli, Iacopuccio, & diuers others. But becauſe ſhe was somewhat noted for keppynge company with a goodlye yong man named Pādolfello, whom ſhe made hir chāberlaine, hir barons perſwaded hir to marye: ſo that ſhe toke to huſband James of Nerbona in Prouance, than Erle de la Marca in Italye, vppon condicion, that he ſhuld in no wyſe take on hym the title of kinge. But he was not long maried til by comforte of the barons: he toke the kyngly name vpon him, and cauſed Pādolfello to loſe his head: dyenge Sforza verye hardlye, and

al thyough

all thorough the instigacion of Iulio Cæsar da Capua who therfore by the quenes policie lost his head.

¶ And though the erle Iames (suspectynge hys wyfes courage) would not suffer hir to goe oute of the Castell where they lay: yet at last with lowly behauiour, growyng out of suspicion with hir housbande, she had libertee to goe so often abroede into the towne of Naples, that finally she made a conspiracy against him, and gat him into prison: reignynge afterwardes hir selfe alone. Than toke she Iohn Caracciolo to be hir high steward whom she loued more than enoughe: so that by him all thynges were gouerned, And vpon contencion betwene hym and Sforza (who was in maner as a generall amongest the men of warre) the Quene defied Sforza. Muche a doe there was, but at length the Sforza was reconsiled, and the steward banyshed. And partlye thorough the bishoppe of romes intercession, the Erle Iames was deliuered out of prison, & restored to the Quenes fauour. But for all that, not long after the erle Iames began to worke against Sforza, who (perceiuinge it) found the meane to bring the steward home againe, and therby not only purchased the Quenes fauour, but also broughte the matter so to passe, that the Erle Ia- 1419.
mes fled into Fraunce, became an heremite and there dyed. After whose departure, by commission of the byshop of Rome, Quene Iohan was crowned in Naples but er the yere was ended, the Quene lost the bishops fauour and banished Sforza: who by the byshops procurement became capitaine vnder Lewis, the. iii. duke of Angio, than newlye entitled kynge of Naples) and reysyng an armie, camped before Naples, abydinge the

comyng

comyng of Duke Lewys: who with an other army arriued there.

¶ This meane while, Queene Johan (ſeyng the power of hir enemy duke Lewis, to be to ſtrong for hir alone) practiſed with king Alfonſe of Aragone, to accept hym as hir ſonne, to enherite the realme after hir: and therof made ſufficient writing, with deliuery of two ſtrong Caſtels in Naples, Caſtel Nouo, and Caſtell di Louo, that in king Alfõſe name were receiued as a pledge of poſſeſſion. ¶ Wherupon kinge Alfonſe in perſon, with a great army by ſea came to Naples, and there foughte with the duke Lewys and his Capitaine Sforza. And though fortune for a tyme was fauourable to duke Lewys, yet at length through practiſe and lacke of mony, Sforza became the Queenes man: ſo that Lewys was fayne to leaue the enterpriſe, and drawe to Rome: by reaſon wherof the Queene with Alfonſe remayned in peace: till diſcorde fell betweene them. The ſyrſte occaſion was becauſe the proclamacions were made in the Quenes name, without any mencion of Alfonſe: which moued the barons of Aragone to cõceiue a great diſhonour, that a kyng of ſuch reputacion, ſhoulde lye there in that eſtate. So muche grewe this matter, that at laſt kyng Alfonſe toke the quenes beſt beloued ſeruant priſoner, and beſieged the Queene. Howe be it, Sforza hauing receiued hir letters, came ſtreight to Naples fought with Alfonſe power, had the better hand, entred into Naples, and conueighed the Queene awaye with hym: Wherfore kinge Alfonſe augmented hys power, and after harde feight with Sforza, recouered Naples, ſtreignyng the realme ſo muche, that by counſayle of

Alfonſe adopted heire to quene Johan

Diſcorde

Sforza,

Sforza, the Queene finally agreed with Duke Lewys, and adopted hym for hir soonne and heyre: by whose meanes Naples was recouered againe to the queenes vse. And so.x. yeres after, the Queene and Duke Le- 1424.
wys reigned in peace, and than dyed both. The queene by hir testament, lefte the realme to Raynold Duke of 1434.
Lorraine, brother to the foresayde Lewys. Thus ended the succession of charles of Angio first king of that hous Ende of the house of Durassio.

¶ Whether the Queenes testamente were feygned or true, it was vncerteyne: For incontinentlye vppon hir death, the citee of Naples, ordeyned amonge theim a common wealth, & made no mencion of any testament, vntil they saw plainely, that the bishop of Rome wente about to bringe theim vnder hym. Than they not onely publisched Raynolde to be theyr kyng, but also sente for him, to come & receiue the possession of the realme. ¶ This meane while in the warres betwene England and Fraunce, Raynold happed to be taken prisoner, so that he coulde not come to Naples. Than kynge Alfonse came into the realme through intelligence that he had with many of the nobles, and besiegeing the towne of Gaietta (than defended by certaine Genowaies, sent thither by Duke Filippo Maria of Myllayne) at laste fought with the Genowaies army by sea, in which conflicte were slaine of the kynges part, about. 5000. and the kynge hym selfe, with hys. ii. brethren, the mayster of saincte James in Galice, dyuers of the greatest princes and barons of Spaine, and of knightes to the numbre of. 200. taken prisoners: and all brought to the forenamed Duke Phillip to Myllaine: who after very gentill interteinment, deliuered theim without raunsome.

Alfonse

Kynge Alphonse taken prysoner.

So Alfonſe beyng reſtored to libertee, & waxing ſtrong through the amitee of the Duke of Myllayne, diſpoſed hym ſelfe to recouer the realme, and came thither immediately with his power, obteined Gaietta, and went to Capua, which had been alwaies kepte for hym: how be it, during the time of his impriſonment, the Neapolitanes ſeeyng they could not haue, Raynolde, ſette his wyfe Iſabel Ducheſſe of Angio vnto naples, and dyd their beſt by waye of aſſaulte to winne Capua. But now that kyng Alfonſe was retourned, the part of Angio ſo muche declined, that Iſabel was faine to reſorte for helpe to Eugenio than biſhop of Rome, who ſente the Patriarke Vitelleſco to Naples.

Patriarke Vitelleſco.

THys Patriarke was a ſtoute man, meter for the fyelde than for the churche. For firſte he diſcomfyted the armye of the prince of Taranto, and toke the prince him ſelfe priſoner, and long time valiauntely bare hym ſelfe in the warres againſte Alphonſe, one whyle wyth force, an other while with policie, ſo that beynge fallen with his army in the daunger of the king (through beſettyng of the ſtreictes and lacke of vittaile) he handled him ſelfe ſo humbly, that the kyng (embracing his faire offers) graunted him truce, and vnder coloure of the ſame truce, he (beynge armed, and the kyng vnarmed) came to Villa Giuliana, and ſo narowlye beſet it, that wyth muche a doe the kynge eſcaped his handes. Leauyng all his baggage and cartage for a pray to the Patriarke. Finally Raynolde beforenamed, beynge putte to hys raunſome, came with. xii. Genowaye galleys to Naples, where with kyngelye honours he was tryumphantly receiued; and ſo muche encreaſed hys power,

Raynoldes comyng to Naples.

that

that it was doubted, whether of the two parties were the better. Raynolde defyed Alfonse bodye to bodye, whiche Alfonse refused not. Howbeit at the daye and place of battaile appoynted, Raynolde appeared not. And albeit that Raynolde for a time prospered and gat into his handes the castel Nouo, and castel di Louo, that kynge Alfonse had alwaies kepte sens he receyued them at quene Iohans handes, til that time, yet at laste (after the death of Iacomo Caldora, one of the principallest of the Angioyne parte) Alfonses power so much encreased, what by battaile, and change of diuers of the barons affections (who leauyng the Angioyne part became Aragonese) that he recouered Naples and all the whole realme: entrynge into the citee in maner of triumphe: where for a perpetuall memory of his victorye, the Napolitanes before the castell gate, erected a notable faire arche of marble.

¶ Thus Alfonse, obteignyng the quiet possession of the realme, vsed new meanes of amitee with Eugenio thā Bishop of Rome: & did so muche, that Eugenio confirmed him in the affate, and inuested his bastarde sonne Ferdinando successour to the crowne. For whyche inuestiture, kynge Alfonse vpon couenaunte inuaded the countrey De la Marca, and takynge it by force from Francesco Sforza (afterwardes Duke of Myllayne) restored it to the churche. And than in recompence of the great courtesie receiued of Philip Duke of Myllaine, he made warre in his fauour against the Florentines, and atchieued manye worthy enterprises, beynge in maner the onelye staye of duke Phillip in his later dayes: so that the duke by his testament made hym hys

heire of the eſtate of Myllaine, but he enioyed it not, as in the hiſtory of Myllaine appereth.

¶ Finallye, after a generall leage made in Naples betwene all the eſtates of Italie, excepte the Genowayes. Alfonſe made an armie, and beſieged Genoa for breach of certaine articles concluded longe before at the making of a peace betwene them: whiche the Genowayes were bounde to geue to the kynge yerely in maner of a tribute a baſon of golde, and the cauſe of their withholdyng, was for that the kyng would neuer receyue it otherwyſe than ſittyng in his maieſtee, as though he triumphed ouer them.

¶ The prouiſion made for the continuance of that ſiege was ſo greate, that by common opinion the citee muſte nedes haue ben his, had he not dyed, the. 66. yere of hys age, and the. 22. yere of his reigne in Naples. Leauyng for ſucceſſours in the realme of Aragone & Sicile hys brother Johu, and in the Realme of Naples hys ſonne the forenamed Fernando. 458.

¶ Of this kyng Alfonſe are writtẽ many great prayſes, for his valyauntneſſe hys temperaunce hys learning, his liberalitee and other like vertues.

Ferdinando. Ferdinando, baſtarde ſonne to kynge Alphonſe, ſucceded his father, in the beginning of whoſe reigne Caliſto, thã biſhop of rome, pretẽding the title of the realme to be fallen to the churche for lacke of lawfull heyres, excommunicated Fernando: and made greate preparacion to inuade: but death preuented hym. So that Fernando (warned therby) vſed ſuch meanes of frendſhip with Pio hys nexte ſucceſſoure, that he was not onelye confirmed in the eſtate, but alſo crowned by certayne

Cardi-

Cardinalles sent to Naples for the purpose.

¶ Howe assoone as the newes of Alphonse deathe was knowen, Duke John, sonne of the forenamed Rainold (in hope of mutacion in the realme) made an armye by sea, with helpe of the Genowaies, and landynge within the territory of the duke of Sessa, ouerranne diuers prouinces, and gotte daylye townes and frendes, so that fernando was like to be put to the worse, had not the bishop of rome and the duke of Millaine taken his parte: by whose helpe duke John at length was by force constreigned to leaue his enterprise, and most part of those barons that toke his parte came and submytted theim selfes vnto ferdinando, who graciously pardoned them and restored theim to their astates.

Than died Pio, and Paule the secound succeded, who oftentymes troubled the realme.

After the death of kynge John of Cyprus, ferdynando coueityng to conquere that realme, was resisted by the Venetians: betwens whom happened crewel warre, so that the Venetians toke truce with the Turke, and (as the fame wente) were occasyon that he assaulted and toke Otronto in Puglia by force, whiche shoulde haue caused greatter mischiefe in Italie, had not the Turke (than Mahomet the.ii) dyed. The turke in Italye.

¶ Immediately vppon whose death kynge ferdynando sente his eldest sonne Alfonse duke of Calabria, to conquere Otronto, which after long siege and sore fe ght, was (for lacke of succours) recouered.

¶ Nexte Paule the seconde, succeded Sixte the.iiii. bysshop of Rome, and after hym Innocence the.viii. who both wonderful inconstantly one while were frendes,

and an other whyle foes to the kynge.

Couetouſ-neſſe. 1489.

¶ Finally this ferdinando was noted to be veray couetouſe. For callyng a counſaile of his barons in the citee of Chieti, he wold haue encreaſed his ſubſidies and taxes. And becauſe diuers of his nobles diſſuaded him from it, he put ſome of them to death, & ſome he impriſoned: from ſome he toke their goodes, and ſome willingly rebelled againſt hym: in which trauaile and tiranny he continued til he died, leauyng iſſue males. ii. ſonnes, Alphons and federike.

1494.

Alfonſe. 2

¶ After the death of ferdinando, hys ſonne Alphonſe, than Duke of Calabria, with conſent of all the barons and nobles, was admitted kynge, and ſendyng to rome to Alexander than biſhop, for his confirmacion, the cardinall Borgia, with a number of prelates was ſente to Naples, where by auctoritee of the Romiſche bulles, he inueſted and crowned the kynge.

Than the kyng fell at variance with Lodouico Sforza, duke of Mylaine, becauſe he vſurped the eſtate that of right apperteined to his nephiewe Giangaleazzo, ſonne in law to kyng Alfonſe, ſo that Lodouico (miſtruſtyng the kynges power, that in deede was bent againſte hym) founde the meane to bringe Charles the viii. Frenche kyng, into Italie, who pretendyng to goe againſt the Turkes, found no reſiſtence: by reaſō wherof he not onelye ouerronne Tuſcane & toke thaſſate of Rome from the biſhoppe, but alſo conquered the whole realme of Naples: although he enioyed it not longe: For all the princes of Italie immediatelye ſo colleged them ſelfes againſte hym: that he was faine to retyre with ſpede, and was neuertheleſſe ouertaken & fought

with

with beſides Parma, where he loſt the greateſt part of his cariages, and dyuers of hys nobilytee were taken pryſoners.

¶ Now aſſoone as kyng Alfonſe heard, that the french kyng was arriued in Lumbardy, conſidering him ſelfe to be hated of his barons, and his ſon ferrandino contrariwiſe welbeloued, incontinentlye renounced the aſſtate vnto his ſonne, toke his treaſure with hym, & ſayled into Sicile, where for the tyme of hys ſhorte lyfe (that dured ſcarce one yeare) he dyſpoſed hym ſelfe to ſtudie, ſolitarineſſe, and religion.

¶ Than ferrandino was embraced of all men, in ſuche wyſe that he was thoughte hable to reſiſte the Frenche kyng. Yet notwithſtandyng that the ſtreictes and paſſages were kept, and the Neapolitanes armye great in the field, the french men preuailed not onely in the conqueſt of the realme, but alſo in the gettynge of that dyſeaſe, that for euer ſhal be a memory vnto theyr name. Ferrandino. Myrbus Gallicus

¶ In effect king ferrandino, ſeeyng his owne debilitee in reſpecte of Charles force, determined with pacience to ouercome his aduerſe fortune: and ſo with.vii.galleis departed out of the realme, and went into the ile of Procida, where he remained till he heard of the french kynges departure, and than beyng reuoked by the Neapolitanes, not onely Naples, but alſo diuers other citees theraboutes expulſed the frenchemen, and rayſed theyr owne kinges ſtandardes. 1496.

Upon this, Ferrandino ſent for ſuccours to the Venecians, offeryng theim Brunduſio, and.iii. other hauen townes in Puglia, to helpe hym to expell the Frenchemen out of the realme. Whyche offer was accepted, and

and Fraunceſco Gonzaga, Marques of Mantua, wyth an armie ſent thither: who together with the Neapolytane power, within the ſpace of one yere, draue the frenchemen cleane awaye. Not longe after recouerye of his whole eſtate, Ferrandino (without iſſue) died of the flixe: Leauynge hys vncle Federike inheritoure to the realme.

¶ Note here, that within the ſpace of .xvi. monethes were .iiii. ſeuerall kynges of Naples, that is to wete, Ferdinando, Alphonſo, Ferrandino, and Charles.

Federike. ¶ Finally Federike, brother to the laſt Alfonſe, ſucceded to the crowne, but er he had fully reigned .iiii. yeres hearyng of the French kynges conuyng Lewis the .xii. and conſideryng him ſelfe deſtitute of money, fryendſhip, and abilitee to reſiſt, he ſold his armures and municion for .30000. ducates to the Duke Valentino Borgia, ſonne to the biſhop of Rome: and with the reſte of his treaſure and implementes, went into france, and there yelded bothe hym ſelfe and hys Realme into the Frenche kynges handes: who receyued hym, and appoinctynge hym an honourable prouiſion, kepte hym in Fraunce tyll he dyed. And thus ended the reygne of the houſe of Aragone in the realme of Naples.

Ende of the houſe of aragone in Naples. Lewys the .xii. of Fraunce.

And though vpon the ſurrender of this Federike (who many charge with cowardiſe for the vile ſubmitting of hym ſelfe, without any proufe of force) the french kinge obteined the whole realme: yet he died, not lōg enioyng it, either by reaſon of the intollerable proud behauiour of the french gouernours, or els through the inconſtant nature of the Neapolitanes, Ferdinādo king of Spaine (commonly called Il Re Catholico) coumforted ther-

1501.

vnto

vnto by many of the barons, and specially by the citesins of Naples, sent a puissaunt armie into the realme againste the frenchemen: Who within lesse than two yeres, partly by force and partly by treatie, were cleane expulsed: so that in fine, the realme rested wholly in peasable possession of the Spaniche kyng.

¶ Ferdinando the .v. of that name, kynge of Spayne, chasynge awaye the frenchemen, enioyed quietlye the realme of Naples vnto his death: and easilye recouered of the Venetians the foure portes of Puglia, that Ferrandino had geuen them. By reason that whan all the Christiã princes were entred into a league at Cambray againste the Venetians, they at that tyme made none offer of resistence, but rather consented vnto the rendering of them: like as in hope of peace they graunted vnto all the other princes what they would aye, Venice onelye excepted. King Ferdinando of Spayne.

¶ Finally ferdinando deceasynge, Charles the .v. nowe emperour of Almaine (sonne and heyre of Philip duke of Burgoyne, and of Johan his wyfe, eldest daughter and heyre of the forenamed kyng ferdinando) succeded in the realme of Naples, and he did in al the other realmes and dominions that ferdinando had: and hytherto enioyeth the same. Charles the v. Emperour 1515

¶ It is true, that the french kynge sente Mounser de Lautrech his general, with a puissaunte armie to conquere the realme. Where betwene the parties French and Spanish were done many worthy deedes of armes Naples it selfe was besieged by sea and land, vntil Andrea Dorya, general of the french kynges army by sea, revolted from the french kyng to the seruice of the em- 1528

peroure. From whyche tyme the hope of the Frenche armies proſperitee began to abate: & foꝛtune ſo muche to goe againſt theim, that what thꝛough extreme plage, and thꝛough the hardineſſe of the imperialles, that began to take courage, the frenchmen were conſtreigned to reiſe their affiege, Moũſer de Lautrech, wyth many other of the beſt Frenche capitaines beynge deade, ſome of the plage, & ſome of ẏ ſwoꝛd: ſo that of. 60000. which vnder the French ſtandarde came thither to the ſiege, eſcaped not fully. 2000. on lyue. From whyche tyme hitherwardes the emperour hath had no notable trouble there, ſauyng that now of late is begonne a litle ſtrieke betwene the Vicere Don Diego di Tolledo, and the barons of the realme, foꝛ the makynge of certaine lawes, and ſome bickering and ſlaughter hath hapned betwene the Spaniardes and theim, and many gentilmen are fled to Rome and other places foꝛ feare of punichmente. But becauſe the thing is not of ſuche impoꝛtaunce as ſhould ſeme to moue warre, I ſhal not nede to make further reherſal.

1547.

The



Lozence, an excellent faire citee, ſtandeth at the foote of the Appenine hilles, in a lyttle baley named Arno of the riuer Arno, that renneth thzoughe it. Compynge to it (excepted by the riuer ſyde) the deſcendyng is ſuch, that a man may eaſily behold euery part of the citee: without the which, downe along both ſides of the baley are ſo manye fayze palaices & ſumptuouſe houſes, that foz the ſpace of .viii. oz .x. myles it ſeemeth in maner but one towne.

¶ The citee it ſelfe is eſtemed to be .viii. myles in compaſſe, walled with ſquare ſtone in maner as harde as flynte, and of a great heighte, with a number of goodly toures after the auncient buildyng, ſtronge enough to defende, but nothyng apte foz artillerie to offend after the maner of theſe dales: Foz they were builded befoze the inuencion of gunnes. The circuit of the citee.

¶ Ouer the riuer within the citee are .iiii. verye fayze bzidges of ſquare ſtone, on the furtheſt downe the riuer hath ben a little marble image of Mars, which was ſet there by an aſtronomer about the firſt buildyng of the citee, in ſuche a conjunction of the celeſtial bodies, that it promiſed proſperitee to the citee aſlõg as that image ſhould ſtand: thzetnyng the decaye of the ſame, aſſoone as it were gone. And as I haue ben credibly enfozmed within leſſe than theſe .xx. yeres, it fell, and is gone na man can tel howe. Shoztlye where vpon the Empezours armye beſyeged the Flozentynes, and toke their Bzydges.

Arno. libertee from theim.

The riuer Arno is not lightlie bigge, but ones a yere, whan the ſonne hath power to diſſolue the ſnow on the mountaines, it ſwelleth ſo, that it maye in maner be compared to Thames at London, ſauyng it ſerueth not for veſſel to come from the ſea: by reaſon of the ſwyfte ſtreame. Wherefore the Florentines are faine for the moſt part to fetche their merchandiſe that come by ſea, from Piſa. 40. miles of by lande.

Edifices Within the citee are many goodly temples and other edefices, amongeſt the which the cathedrall churche is an excellente faire buildynge. For the walles without are all couered with fine white and blacke marble, wõderfully wel wrought, and ouer the queere is an whole vault called Cupola, facioned like the halfe of an egge riſyng betwene. iii. ſies and the body of the churche: ſo artificially made, that almoſt it ſemeth a miracle. For it is ſo high, that the pomell on the toppe beyng able to conteigne. vii. perſons, ſeemeth a verye ſmall thynge to theim that ſtande by lowe. And the compaſſe of it by the baſe, is aboute. 260. paces. Beſides that the floore vnder this vaulte round about the quiere is laide with fine marble of diuers colours ſo faire, that it yeldeth a delite to theim that walke vpon it.

¶ The ſteple ſtandyng beſides the churche, is likewiſe of fine marble a verie faire and ſquare tower, equall in height to the circute of the baſe, with diuers ſtories and thinges grauen in it, ſo artificial and coſtlye, that it deſerueth ſinguler prayſe.

¶ The temple of. S. Iohn, called Il Batteſimo, is lykewiſe of fine marble both within and without, hauing a number

number of goodlye pyllers and. iii. brasen gates verye sumptuouse and faire. Many other goodly churches there be, whiche should be to long here to rehearse.

¶ The dukes palayce, with the place before it, representeth a verie stately and auncient maiestee. On the backeside therof, is the house, wherein the wilde beastes are kepte, as lions, tigers, beares, wolfes, apes, egles, grypes, and suche other, wherof there be not fewe. Wylde beastes.

The. ii. principal houses of Strozzi and Medici seme rather the buildynges of princes than of priuate men. And generally the citesins houses for their beauty are worthy of much praise. Howbeit, they may make them good cheape, because they haue marble & stone plentye in the mountains there by, insomuch that al their stretes: which are verie faire, large and streight, are paued with flatte stone. But amongest all other they haue dyuers goodlye hospitalles, for relieue of the sicke and poore, and one very faire, so wel ordred, that it receiueth a great number of men and women, but into seuerall houses: where they are applied with good phisicke, and their beddes, their sheetes, and euerye other thynge so cleane, that many tymes right honest men and women be not ashamed to seke their health there. For that hospital alone may dispende yerely aboue. 20000. crownes: by reason whereof they haue excellente phisicyons, good poticaries, dilygente mynisters, and euery other thinge necessarie. Hospitalles.

¶ Finally there is a verie faire and strong castell, called Cittadella, more than a mile and halfe in compasse builded by the lasse duke Alexander, for a bridell to the Florentines, because he had thā newly taken their

liberties from theim: they beynge for the moste parte so variable and inconstãt, that the other Italians haue vsed to cal them Bizzari, which signifieth wylde headed.

¶ Thre myles without the citee, the Duke hath made a gardein at a little house that was hys fathers. Wherein is a labirinth or mase of bore kol of Cypre trees, hauinge in the middest one the fairest conduyte of white marble, that euer I sawe: besides that it hath dyuers other conduites, and such conueighances, that in maner euery flowre is serued with renning water: and all the chanels are of white marble so fayre, that it is in my iudgement at this presente, one of the excellentest thinges in all Europe.

¶ The Florentines customes.

The common opinion is, that the Florentines are commonly great talkers, couetouse, and spare of liuyng: but they be fine and cleanly.

¶ In deede he that byeth at the shambles more meate than theyr maner there alloweth, is incontinently noted and spoken of. But for all the lacke that is layed to theim as a reproche, yet didde I neuer see it so scarce, that a reasonable man ought to finde faulte wythal. And if men generally in other places coulde folowe it, the riche shoulde liue more healthfullye: and the poore fynde more plentie.

I continued there a certaine space at mine owne charges, and lay a good while with Master Bartholomew Panciatico, one of the notablest citesins: where I neuer saw the fare so sklender, but any honest gentilman would

woulde haue been ryghte well contented wythall. And yet I dare auowe, he exceded not the ordynarye. Beſydes that the fine ſeruice, the ſweetenelle of the houſes, the good order of all thynges, and the familiar conuerſacion of thoſe men, were enough to feede a man: yf wythoute meate men myghte be fedde. I would not denie, but many of theim vſe much talke, which I thinke proceded of the deſyre they haue to ſeeme eloquent.

For he is not reputed a man among them, that cannot plaie the Oratoure in his tale, as well in geſture as in woorde. And therfore I ſuppoſe theyr Academie was fyrſt ordeined: which is one of the goodlieſt orders that I haue ſeene.

¶ A certaine number of the chiefe of theim, being well learned, are drawen into a company, whereof the duke hym ſelfe is one. Theſe euerye holidaye at .iii. of the clocke at after noone, aſſemble in an halle appoincted, where one of them mounteth into a place called the Harange, a littell hygher than the reſte, and in his owne mother tounge maketh an Oracion of an houre long, of what matter ſo euer he thinketh beſt him ſelfe. This Oratour hath warnyng ſo to doe by an officer a great ſpace before hys daye. For they chooſe euery halfe yeare a Conſull, who appoincteth a ſundrye man to the Harange for euery holydaye. And whan the houre of aſſemblie approcheth, the moſt parte of the companye repayre to the Conſull, and ſo bring hym honourablye to the place: where he ſitteth hygheſt, thoughe the Duke him ſelfe be preſent. And for my part I neuer heard reder in ſchole, nor preacher in pulpitte handle theim ſelfes better, than I haue hearde ſome of theſe in the Harange.

The Academie.

The

Women. ¶ The Florentines wyues are nothynge ſo gaye as the Venetians. For they loue a modeſtie in theyr womens apparaile: and ſpecially if ſhe paſſe the age of.xl. lyghtly ſhe weareth but plaine blacke clothe. And they kepe theyr maidens ſo ſtreict, that in maner no ſtraunger maye ſee them.

¶ The common people are verie religiouſe, and for the moſte part ful of ſuperſtition: but they that are reckned wyſeſt, beleue muche wyth Plinie. And where they haue been much burdened with Sodomie in time paſt. I can not perceiue there is any ſuch thyng now.

¶ Of the Dukes domynion and reuenewe.

BEſydes Florence, the duke hath vnder his domynion. vi. cities, Piſa, Volterra, Piſtoia, Arezza, Cortona, and Borgo, wyth dyuers other good townes, and the greateſt part of Tuſcane, and may diſpend better than. 500000. crownes of yerely reuenew the greatſt part wherof riſeth vpon the. x. that is paied hym of all the landes within his dominion.

Of



Conferryng the diſcourſe of diuers authours togethers, touchinge the Florentine hiſtoryes, and finding the effectes of them al gathered in one by Nicolas Macchiauegli, a notable learned man, and ſecretarie of late daies to the common wealthe there: I determyned to take him for mine onely auctour in that beyalfe,

It is manifeſt, that from the auncient citee of Fieſole (the olde reuynes whereof are yet to be ſeen, on the toppe of an hill two myles from Florence) the citee of Florence had hir beginnynge pryncipallye. For by reaſon Fieſole ſtode highe, and was paineful for merchantmen to bring theyr cariage vnto the citeſins: kept their market on the ſide of the riuer Arno in the plaine where Florence now ſtandeth: e buildynge there ſhoppes for theyr wares, from ſhoppes they grew to houſes and from a fewe to many, ſo that at length it became a towne, which encreaſed much through certaine Colonies of the Romains ſent thither fyrſt by Silla, and after by thoſe three Romaines, whiche after the death of Cæſar diuided the empire betwene them.

And albeit, that ſome haue contended vpon the name, affyrming, that it was fyrſt called Fluentia, and after corrupted Florentia: yet myne opinion agreyng with Macchiauegli, is, that from the beginnyng it was called Florentia. Vnder the romaine empyre, & about the beginning of themperours, it ſemeth to take firſt name

and reputacyon. For whan the Empyre beganne to be afflicted of barbaronse nacions (as the Italyans call theim) than was Florence also destroied by Totila king of the east Gotes. 250. yeares after it was resdyfied by Charlemaine, and so continued as one of the principall citees of Italie, vnto the yere of our lord. 1215. alwayes as subiectes, fyrst to the succession of Charlemayne, after to Berengarii, & lastly to themperours of Almaine, by whych tyme the Florentines coulde dooe nothynge worthy of memorie, for the power of them whose subiectes they were: Neuertheless in the yere. 1010. they toke Fiesole and destroied it vterlye, either by the emperours consente, or els betwene the death of the one emperour and the election of the other.

Florence destroyed and redifyed.

1010

¶ But whan the bishoppes of Rome beganne to growe great, and the emperour littel, moste parte of the citees of Italye ganne to gouerne theim selfes wyth smalle regarde towardes their pryncc: so that in the tyme of the emperour Henry the. iii. all Italie was deuyded betwene hym and the Churche. Notwythstandynge the Florentines in all those troubles kept them selfes vnited togethers, and obeied the strongeste. Untyll the yeare. 1215. But lyke as after long healthy sickneste is more perilouse, so the longer Florence forbare to folow the sectes of Italie, the more affliction they suffered, whan they fell to diuision amonge theim selfes. The first occasion wherof was.

¶ Amonges their noble families were two pryncipall, Bondelmonti, & Vberti, nexte them were Amidei and Donati. In the familie of Donati was a ryche wydowe, that had a wonderfull faire doughter: whiche she

purposed

purposed to bestow on a ponge knyght, chiefe of the famille of Bondelmonti. But he, not knowynge either the faire doughter or the wydowes purpose, was betrouthed to a maide of the house of Amidei. Wherwith the wydow was wonderfully offended. And thinkynge wyth the beautye of hir doughter to breake that mariage, on a day as the gentilman passed alone by hir doze, she called him, and hauing hir doughter with hir, sayd: I reioyse at your good mariage, notwithstanding I haue a great while kepte my doughter here for you. At whose beauty the gentilman being astonied, and considerynge hir dower should be greatter than the others, without respect to his trouth geuen, or to the inconueniences that might folow for the breache thereof, forthwith answered, that syns she had kept hir for hym he should be muche vnkynde to refuse hir, and so incontynentlye maryed hir. Whiche iniurie the familie of Amidei, with helpe of the Vberti, determined to reuenge. So waityng their tyme on Easter day in the morning at the foote of the bridge Ponte Vecchio as mayster Bondelmonti was ridyng to churche, they slewe hym. Whereupon the whole citee was deuided in two parties, the one with Bondelmonti, and the other with Vberti. And because these two familyes had manye stronge houses and towers, specialye in the countrei, they warred togither many yeres with dyuers fortunes. And although they neuer concluded a full peace, yet many times they toke truce: In whych astate Florence continued vntill the tyme of the emperour Federike the ii. who beyng kynge of Naples, and at variaunce with the churche of Rome, to make hym

Diuision.

ſelfe the kröger in Tuſcane, toke part with the Vberti, by reaſon wherof the Abertine parte preuayled, and chaſed cleane out of the citee the Bondelmonti.

Guelfi and Ghibellines faction.

Here is to be noted, that in the contencion betwene the emperour and the biſhop of Rome, the whole Italyan nacion was ſo diuided in two parts, that in many houſes you ſhold haue the father againſt the ſonne, brother againſt brother, and commonly one neghbour and one houſe agaynſt an other. And to encreſe the miſchiefe, ii. brethern dowchemen dwelling in Piſtoia (20. miles from Florence) fel out for this matter, and oftentimes openly fought in maintenaunce of their diuiſion. Wherupon it folowed, that all the imperiall named theim ſelfes Ghibellini, after the name of Ghibeli, one of thoſe brethern, and the church part Guelfi, after the name of Guelfe the other brother. So that the parte of Bondelmonti were Guelfi parte: and they that were wyth Vberti were Ghibellines. Betwene whom not onely the nobilitee of Florence, but alſo the moſte parte of the commons were deuyded. Thus by the emperours fauoure the Guelfes were chaſed out of Florence, and lyued in theyr foztreſſes and caſtelles in the vale of Arno, defendyng them ſelfes as wel as they could againſt their ennemies, vntil Federike died: and than by meane of certayne of the citee that were newters, both parties were reconſiled, and the Ghibellines brought home to Florence. where (laiynge all ſuſpycyon aparte) they framed theim ſelfes to procure a lybertes vnto their citee, ere the new Emperoure ſhoulde haue power to oppreſſe theim. And ſo deuyded the citee into. vi. partes, appointynge. xii. citeins (ii. vnto

Florentines comun ſwear the conſtituted

eucrie

euery parte) to gouerne the same, naming them Antiani: chaungable euerye yeare. And to eschew occasion of variaunce, that myghte happen betweene the parties for iudgment geuing, they chose two straunge iudges, one named capytaine of the people, & the other named Potestate, to iudge all matters both ciuile and criminall. And because there is no certaine order, where no defendour is, they ordeyned. 20. standardes or banes in the citee: and. 76. in the countie, wherein were written all the youthe and able men to be readye in hys appointcted kynde of armure whan so euer they should be called, either of the capitaine, or of the Antiani. And the better to establishe the thynge, they deuised a carte drawen of two oxen, to cary their baners and ensignes couered with white: vnto whiche, as to the maiestee of their common wealthe, or as it were to the generall of their armie, the men of warre shoulde alwaies resorte. For whan soeuer they set forth any army into the field than was this carte or chariote drawen forthe into the strete called Marcato Nouo, and there by the people committed to the charge of the chiefe gouernours of the army. Besides that they had a bell called La Martinella, which before the settynge forthe of anye armye should rynge a moneth, to the intente their ennemyes myghte prepare to defende theim selues. This bell did they also cary into the fielde with theim, to set their watche, and to cal souldiours together.

Their proceedynges herein were so commendable and so well handled, that in short space they grew to a wonderful auctoritee, so that Florence became the heade of all Tuscane: and had (no doubte of it) attained suche

reputacion, that it myghte haue been well compared to the notable cittees of the woꝛld, if the new and often diuiſions within them ſelfes had not hindered theyꝛ proſperytee.

¶ After this maner they endured .r. yeares, in whycke time they enforced the citeſins of Piſtoia Arezzo and Siena to entre in league wyth theim: and in the retourne of theyꝛ campe frō before Siena, they tokꝭ Volterra, and deſtroyed certaine other Caſtelles, the inhabitaunces wherof they caried with them to Florence. All this was dooen thꝛoughe counſaile of the guelfes, which were of greater power in Florence than the ghibellines, as wel becauſe the ghibellines thꝛoughe theyꝛ proude & ill gouernaunce had prouoked the hate of the people, whan they ruled in tyme of the emperoure Federike: as alſo becauſe the commons fauoured moꝛe the churche part than the imperiall, truſtyng with the helpe therof to haue theyꝛ libertee maynteined, whych at the emperours handes they feared to loſe.

¶ Wherfoꝛe the ghibellines, ſeeynge theyꝛ reputacyon decaied, diſpoſed thſelfes to recouer it, thinking their occaſion to be good: ſyth Manfredi ſonne of Federike had taken the realme of Naples vpon hym, and had ſoꝛe troubled the churches power. Than practiſed they ſecretly with hym, to recouer theyꝛ libertee. But their practiſes were diſcouered to the Antiani, who incontinently ſent foꝛ the Vberti to appeare before theim: and they not onely diſobeied, but alſo foꝛtiſied theim ſelfes in theyꝛ houſes, and ſo prouoked the furie of the people, that at laſte the commons aroſe, and with helpe of the guelfes chaſed the ghibellines out of Florence, and cō-

Freigued

ſtreigned theim to withdrawe to Siena. From whens they ſent to kyng Manfredi for ſuccours, and through the diligence of Maiſter Farinata delli Vberti obteined ſuch ayde, that the Guelfes ſhortly after were diſcomfited vpon the riuer of Arbia: with ſo great a loſſe, that they which eſcaped, fled not to Florence (thinking it to be loſt) but vnto Lucca. The generall of the kinges men in this iourney was one Conte Iordano, a man in armes muche renoumed, who folowyng his victory went ſtreight to Florence, and reduced it to the obedience of the kynge Manfredi, adnullyng al magiſtrates and lawes, with euery other thyng that ſemed to ſerue the cities libertee: the iniury wherof bredde double malice agaynſte the Ghibellines in the hertes of the commons, and was occaſion of theyr vndoing, as after ſhal appeare.

The Conte Iordano ſetlyng Florence after his owne facion, was reuoked by the kynge to the ſeruice of the realme: and therfore appointed as liuetenaunte generall there, the Conte Guido Nouello, lord of Caſentino, who immediatelye called a counſaile of Ghibellines at Empoli, and there concluded, that (to mainteine theyr part in Tuſcane) it was neceſſary to deſtroy Florence: but Maiſter Farinata delli Vberti principal of the Ghibellines, onely amongeſt all the reſt withſtode this opinion, allegeyng the perilles that he had ſuffered were in hope to enioy his countrey, and thinkyng himſelfe no leſſe hable to defende it than to gette it, as he had doen, he profeſſed openly to become no leſſe enemy to theim that ſhould take the contrary, than he was already to the Guelfes: and ſo with his onelye reaſon and

auctorites

auctozites dissuaded the rest from theyr purpose.

¶ This meane whyle the Guelfes, whyche were fledde to Lucca, were commaunded thēse by the citesins, who feared soze the thzetnynges of the Conte: and so wente to Bolognia, and from thense vnto Parma to helpe the Guelfes of Lumbardie against the Ghibellines there. Where after dyuers victozies, they grewe to so muche wealth and reputacion, that the bishoppe of Rome toke theim as his, and gaue theim the ensigne of the church whych they vse in Flozence to this daye.

¶ Than went the Guelfes wyth Charles of Angio against Manfredi, and were partetakers of the Victozy, whyche soo muche encreased theyr reputacyon that the Conte, with the reste of the Ghibellines, that than ruled Flozence, deuised how to gratify the commons, to gette theyr fauour (which before they had vterly lost) and therfozе diuided the cites into artes, appoincryngs officers of the commons vnto euerye arte, so that in all there were 36, Citesins called to rule agayne, and to make new lawes as before. And where the Conte with the Ghibellines thoughte by these meanes to dzawe the peoples fauour towardes theim, the contrary immediately folowed. Foz whan the Conte Guido had set a tare vppon the people, foz paymente of hys souldyours, they not onely refused the paiement, but also withstode his fozes and the Ghibellines bothe, in suche wyse, that with losse of dyuers men slayne in the bickerynge, the Conte with the Ghibellines (thzough cowardyse of the Conte) forsoke the citee, and went to Prato: and wylyng to retourne, was moze easily kepte forthe, than he coulde haue been expelled, in case he had fortifyed hym

selfe whyle he was within. Thus the people recouered libertee vnto theyr cites, and (in hope to make all thynges well) renoked aswell the Ghibellines agayne as the guelfes. But all in vaine, for the Ghibellines rested still in the auncient mortall hate of the Guelfes, for dyuers iniuries, and the people loued theim not, as ofte as they remembred theyr passed tyrannie, besides that the Ghibellines, whan they heard of the puissaunt comyng of Corradino oute of Almaigne, to winne the realme of Naples, began to deuise how to recouer their astate againe. Wherfore the guelfes sent to the forenamed Charly thā king of Naples for helpe to defēd themselfes, whilest Corradino shuld passe. And vpō the comyng of ayde from the kynge, the Ghibellines. ii. dayes before fled. And so had the guelfes libertie to make new lawes and new magistratz, which they did immediatly: Fyrst deuidynge the Ghibellines goodes in. iii. partes one to the common wealth, another to the chiefe magistrates, & the. iii. to them selfes, in recompence of their owne hurtes. And the byshoppe of Rome the better to mainteine Tuscane guelfe, made kyng Charles imperyall vicare of Tuscane.

¶ After this Gregorie the. x. passynge through florence towardes Fraunce, deuised with the guelfes for reconsiliacion of the ghibellines, and did so muche, that certayne men for the ghibelline parte came into the citee, and after longe communicacion agreed therupon. But because the thing toke no effecte, therefore gregory excommunicated the citee. Whiche Innocente the. v. hys nert successour assoyled agayne.

¶ Thus the Guelfes forgettynge theim selfes in theyr

prosperitee, became so proude, that they regarded neyther magistrate nor people, but for euery light occasion woulde feight, and many tymes kyl without abidynge any iustice: which moued the people to murmoure, and gaue occasion to the bishop of Romes legate to practise the reuocacion of the Ghibellines vnder pretence of vnitee, and broughte it to passe in deede: and than was there new orders of magistrates appointed, & the cities so united, that for verye werynesse of longe stryefe both abroade and at home, the names of diuision began to decaie, so that Ghibellines and Guelfes were almost forgotten, whan there began a newe diuision, betweene the nobilitee and the commons, in suche wyse that they armed them selfes, and had tried the matter wyth the swoorde, if certaine religiouse and other indifferent men had not taken vp the matter.

¶ In effecte the pride of the nobilite was abated, and parte of the commons wyl brided, so that they agreed agayne, and were quiet a whyle.

There were two notable families in Florence Cerchi and Donati, betweene whome had ben an olde grudge, but no fightynge of a longe time. In Pistoia also two ponge gentilmen Lore and Geri at playe fel oute and foughte: so that Lore hurte Geri. The father of Lore beyng offended therwith, and thinking to pacifie the matter gentilly, sent his sonne to the father of Geri, to submitte hym selfe and aske forgeueneffe. But the father of Geri toke hym and cutte of his hand, saiyng, that woundes were healed with yron, and not with woordes. This matter so grewe, that the whole citee of Pistoia was deuided in two parties, the one calling them

selfes

selfes Bianchi, that is to saye, the white, and the other Neri, that is to saye the blacke. After longe stryfe within them selfes being wered, the blacke band went to Florence, and fel in fauour with the Donati: the like whereof did the whyte bande wyth the Cerchi: so that the aunciente grudge betwene those two familyes encreased, and at lasse vpon a lighte occasion fell oute and foughte in Florence. By reason whereof the whole citee aswell nobles as commons were deuyded, and oftentimes armed, so that the rulers (as newters) were faine to forsigne their power, and partly by force, partly by auctoritee, causyng the parties to vnarme theim selfes, they banished certaine of the chiefe, specially of the Neri: whiche beynge exiled, resorted to the bishoppe of Rome: and obteined of hym that Charles of Valois, brother to the French kynge (than beinge in Rome for certaine practises of the realme of Naples) shoulde be sente to Florence: by whose meane the Neri recouered the citee, and by force expulsed the Bianchi. And lyke as the Neri were first by the bishops meanes restored, so also the Bianchi, at the bishops intercession were receiued home, but not to rule: whiche grened theim so muche, that vpon new contencion (their intent beynge discouered) they were vtterly expulsed.

Thus Charles of Valois (atcheiuyng his purpose in Florence) departed thense, leauynge the Neri in quyete possession. But it endured not longe: for Corso Donati, chiefe of that part (thinkyng his astate very small to remeigne as a priuate man, of the common wealth) moued businesse in the citee, in hope to haue al the rule hym selfe. Wherein he preuailed not, for the commons

sente for the Lucchese to succoure theym, and by theyr helpe did so ouermatche Corso and his partakers, that they remaigned still in their libertee: and procured a legate from Rome, to stablisshe an order amongest them. Who in stede of order (thinking to bring certaine purposes to passe) sette theim further oute than euer they were, and departyng in greate anger excommunicated the citee.

¶ Thus as the Florentines were daylye at stryfe and warre within them selfes, there chanced so great a fire that it burned. 1300. of theyr houses: so that what through the wonderful blouddeshed, and greate losse of the fire, for verye werynesse they layed downe their weapons, and though the legate had craftely gotten. xii of the chiefe citesins to Rome, in whose absence he so comforted the Ghibellines and Bianchi (that than were in exile) that folowyng his aduise, they sodeinely entred the citee. Bet the commons so resisted them, that they were repulsed. Not longe after perceiuynge the purpose of Corso prepensed againste their libertee assaulted his house, put him to flyght: and in fleyng toke and slewe hym.

¶ After that the Florentines lyued in quiet tyll the coming of Henry the emperour, who comyng from rome (where he was crowned) besieged florence on the one side, and at length departed without doyng much hurt, the rather because the Florentines had receyued succours from Robert king of Naples, to whom they had submitted their citee for. v. yeres. 1308.

Not lōg after Vguicione della Faggiola, with helpe of the ghibellines, became lord of Pisa and of Lucca, so

that

that the Florentines for dread of hym, requyred kynge Robert of Naples to send his brother Peter to succour theim. Betwene whom and Vguicione was a battaile stricken in Vale di Nieuole, where the florentines were discomfyted, lost. 2000. men, and the kinges brother slaine in the fielde.

¶ And though the kynge did his belle to succour them, yet of their naturall inconstancie, they beganne a new diuision amonge theim selfes, parte with and parte against the kynge. And for lacke of other the kynges aduersaries gatte one Lando d'Agobio to be theyr capitaine, who with the multitude folowing him, wold kyl and murder as he went by the stretes suche as the people appointed: so that the citse was no lesse afflicted with bloudshedde within, than scourched wythoute by Vguicione, that euen than ouerranne al the countrey aboute.

¶ Not longe after Castruccio Castracani, a citezin of Lucca, gatte the dominion of Lucca and of Pisa, & became so great, that he was made chief capitain of al the ghibellines in Tuscane, so that folowyng his good fortune, he attempted to get Prato, whiche the florentines prepared theym selfes to defende, so makynge oute an armie, and promisyng reconsilemente to their banished mẽ, Castruccio retired to Lucca: wherof folowed two inconueniences: one, the commons and rulers were deuided, for the people wouldе haue pursued the enemye, but the rulers wolde not: the other, by reason their enterprise toke small effecte, they refused their promyse concernyng their banished men, who therefore dyuers tymes attempted by force, to haue their promise kepte.

Finally makyng out a new army againſt Caſtruccio vnder the leadynge of Raimondo da Cardona, the Florentines a little beſides Alto Paſſo were diſcomfited, and Raimondo ſlayne: in ſuche wyſe that the Florentines were no more able to holde vp their heades, but ſuffered Caſtruccio to ouerronne al their countrey ſpoilynge and burnyng what he wolde. Wherfore the Florentines were faine to ſue to king Robert of Naples for helpe: who enforced them to take his ſonne charles, Duke of Calabria, to be their lorde and conſequentlye ſent the duke of Athens, as his lieutenaunt to gouerne the citee, vntil the comyng of Charles.

1326. And like as the coming of charles was a ſtay againſt Caſtruccio; euen ſo it was in maner as paineful to the citeſins. For within leſſe than a yere, he leuyed of the citee, 400000. florines, notwithſtanding he had couenãted before, not to take of them aboue. 200000. beſides that, after they had gotte Piſtoia, Caſtruccio laied ſiege therunto, ſo longe, that at laſt he gatte it from the Florentines: how be it, he immediatelye therupon died, and about the ſame tyme, the forenamed Charles, lord of Florence dyed alſo. So that the citee was at ones deliuered bothe of the tyranne (as they call hym) and of the enemy: and therupon recouerynge their liberte, thei returned to a new order of their common wealth. Not long after themperour returnyng from Rome, and paſſynge towardes Lumbardie. 800. horſemen of his retinue taried behind him, and ſodainly toke Lucca which they offred to ſell to the Florentines for. 20000. florines, and beyng refuſed, ſolde it to a Genowaye for 30000. pound, wherewith the Florentynes were ſo of-

fended

fended, that they made open warre to gette it, but al in vaine, though they spent yet a greate quantitee of money more than the summe that quietly they might haue had it for.

¶ As for the ciuille contencion within the citee hapned none frō the death of Castruccio, vntil the yere. 1340. 1328

¶ Certaine of the chiefe of the citee, the better to maintein their owne auctoritee, called straungers to gouerne some offices, which appertained to the electiō of the commons. Amongest al other one Iacomo Gabrieli da Gobbi was made captaine of a warde, and dyd diuers iniuries, namelye to some of the nobilitee, as to Pietro Bardi, and Bardo Frescobaldi. So that they (not wel supportyng the wrong, specially at a straungers hande,) conspyred with dyuers other againste the rulers: mindyng not onelye to be reuenged, but also to reforme the astate of the whole citee. And as it hapneth most commonly, the deferrynge of the matter was occasion, that some fearefull conspiratour discloſed it: so that the larme bel beinge ronge, and the people armed assemblinge in the markette place, the houses of Bardi and Frescobaldi were assaulted in such wise, that they (with the most part of their friendes (forsoke the citee, and were banished: some that remaynes were taken and beheaded.

¶ Not longe after the Florentines and Pisani practised with Mastino della Scala for the purchase of Lucca, that than was in his possession, so that the Pisani (seing their bargaine ouerdrere through the offers of the Florentines) disposed them selfes, with helpe of Visconti than lorde of Millayne, to get it by force, and so layed

siege

ſyege to it. That notwithſtandyng the Florentines went forth with theyr bargaine, and bought it duryng the ſyege. Wherein the Piſani perſeuered wyth ſuche force, that in deſpite of all the florentynes ſuccours, at laſte they gatte it: ſo that the florentines not onely loſte theyr money, but alſo purchaſed them ſelfes diſhonour.

¶ This meane while the florentines, ſeing theyr owne debilitee and ill fortune, procured ſuccours of the king of Naples, who ſente the Duke of Athenes to be theyr capitayne. But he in ſteede of a capitayne that ſhoulde defende and preſerue theyr common wealth, contrarywyſe to get into fauour with the commons, and by diſpleaſyng and perſecutyng of the nobilitee, toke vppon hym ſelfe the abſolute power, and vſed the whole as his owne. He prohibited the rulers any more to aſſemble in the palaice, toke the enſignes from the Gonfaloners, brake the orders of iuſtice, deliuered al priſoners, reconſiled them that were exiled, ordeyned newe tares, and waged ſtraungers, ſo that the citee was ful of frenchemen, who forbare not to violate all ſortes of women.

¶ Thus he continued .x. monethes, encreaſynge dayly in tyrannie, to the hygh offence of the chiefe, and greate hate of the people (who before fauoured hym) that at laſte the whole citee in .iii. dyuers partes, nobles, people, and artificers conſpired againſt him, and in confuſyon aſſaulted and diſcomfited his men, and beſieged hym in the palayce. Dute of the whiche they enforſed him to ſende Guglielmo da Sceſi his ſonne. Whom they hewed and gnawed to peeces in the market place.

¶ Finally the duke fel to accorde, and renouncinge hys

astate and title to the dominion, departed wyth bagge and baggage. Wherupon not onely Florence but also Arezzo, Volterra, Pistoia, and other citees theraboutes toke on them theyr libertees though they within shorte space after, yelded to Florence theyr wonted obedyence. Than the citesins deuised a new ordre in their common wealth, wherin the nobles had so great auctoritee, that they vsed theyr lybertee in all thynges ouer the people: but that endured not longe: for the people rebelled, and by force depryued theim, erectyng magystrates of theim selfes. And thoughe the nobles openlye practised with theyr frendes abroade for succours, and fortified theyr houses withinforth, in suche wyse, that Florence was ful of armes: wherupon they attempted to recouer theyr astate. Yet at length after manye skyrmishes, much bloudshed, and fyre, the people preuailed, and brought the nobilitee so low, that they neuer durste arme theim selfes more, but became in maner vile and abiecte: so that from that tyme forth Florence decayed both in courtesie and chiualrie. Nobilitee suppressed.

Thus they rested in quyete, tyll the yeare. 1353. In whiche tyme happened that notable plague, that John Boccaccio so pitifully mencioneth in the beginning of his Decamerone, thorough whyche dyed in Florence. 96000. persones. And thoughe the nobilitee was than oppressed, yet fortune wanted not meane to reyse new discencion amongest them agayne.

Two families in Florence, Albizi and Ricci, fell at variaunce, betwene whom the whole citee was no lesse deuided, than it was firste betwene Bondelmonti and Vberti: or betwene Donati and Cerchi. And were

as long before this time the names of Guelfe and Ghibelline was in maner extincted and forgotten, Vguici one de Ricci (thynkyng to abate the reputacion of the 1317 Albizi) renued the olde law, that no Ghibelline shold enioye magistrate within the citee. But the purpose of Ricci was cleane disapointed. For where he thought to proue the Albizi to be Ghibellines, they contrarywise not onely proued them selues Guelfes, but chiefe of the guelfes: and became so great in the citee, that at length they determined to vsurpe the dominion, which beynge discouered to the people, was occasion, that their houses were sacked, and some burned, and they for the most parte fledde; and those lawes, that the Guelfes had made before in prejudice of the other citesins, were reuoked. So that those which were noted for Ghibellines, finding them selfes recouered in credite, not contented to be partetakers, but rather desirynge to rule their whole common wealth, practised a newe meane, howe by force they myghte atchieue their enterprise: and persuadyng the multitude to rebell against the lordes, they did so muche, that (notwithstandyng the conspiracy was discouered before) yet the people so assembled out of all order, renuynge vp and downe here and there, spoilyng and burnyng where as liked them best, that the power of the rulers coulde not reformme the matter, & at length it grew to so great inconuenience, that the lordes were constreigned not onely to habandone the palaice, but also the whole dominiō vnto the people, so that Michel di Lando a carder of woull, bare legged and all to torne, mounted vppe in to the hall of the palaice, with the standarde in his hand, and finding

no man

no man there, tourned him towardes the people, saying: Now you see this palayce, with the whole citee at your commaundement, what would you doe, wherunto the multitude aunswered, they wolde haue hym theyr Gonfalonere and lord: whyche incontinentlye he toke vpon him: and disposyng him selfe to quiet the rumour to finde the people occupied, he sente theim Fraigyte to seke one Muto, that had been minister of iustice before: whom he caused to be hãged by the legge in the market place, and there torne to peeces: and consequentelye proceded the other reformacions and lawes, as it semed best to hym. But because the commons perceyued, that he preferred the chiefe men to dignytees & offices, and dyd not so much regarde the commons as they looked for, they rebelled againe against him, & drewe them together to the churche of Santa Maria di Nouella, where they began to erecte newe officers, and to make newe lawes after their owne maner. The meane while Michel makyng him selfe stronge, departed oute of the palayce to mete theym: but missynge one another by a wronge waye, Michell at his retourne found theym in the byghe streete: assaultynge of the palayce. Where he sette on theim, and so discomfited them, that part he constreigned to flee out of the citee, and part to caste awaye their weapons. And (notwithstandyng hys vile birthe) he was a man him selfe of a ryght good nature, wise, and able to gouerne, yet coulde not his auctoritee so much bridel the communaltee, but that they deuided theim selfes in partes, the one of men of estimacyon, whyche called theim selfes the people, and the other of the meane crafties, whiche called theim selfes the commons,

¶Thus as they liued fighting and brauling together, newes came to the counsayle, that Giannozo da Salerno (a capitaine of Charles of Duras, than bente to conquere Naples) lyyng at Bologne, determined, with helpe of the banished men, to assaulte the citee beynge promysed by theim of the citee to haue a gate deliuered vnto them. Wherupon diuers were accused, amongest whome Piero, the chiefe of the Albizi was taken and put to execucion, and Charles Strozi fledde.

The Florentines the better to mainteine theim selfes, reteigned John Sharpe (surnamed Acuto by them) an englisch capitaine, than abidyng in Italie with a great retinewe, whose reputacion was suche, that well was that prince in Italie, that mygbte haue hys seruice in tyme of neede. For his power was so great, that whan he was oute of wages, he woulde take one citee or an other, and vse it as his owne for the tyme, till occasyon of seruice happened againe, and than wolde he sell it to that prince or common wealthe, that wolde geue most for it.

John sharpe

About this time two the chiefest citesins in Florence, George Scali & Thomas Strozzi, with their auctho-ritee and credite amongest the people, dyd what they wolde right or wronge, so that whan the capitayne of iustice wolde haue put to execucion a certaine offender their friende, they by force assaulted and sacked the capitaines palaice, and deliuered the giltie: whyche acte offended not the capitaine alonelie, but also the magistrates, so that George Scali was therefore taken, and against the commō opinion (notwithstanding the great fauour of the people, whyche euermore proueth incon-

Common people.

stante)

kante) was beheaded: and diuers of his deerest fryendes with hym. Upon occasion of whose death moste parte of the citee was armed to strengthe the iustice.

But whan he was deade, they were not so soone vnarmed againe. For the partyes betwene the people of reputacion & the commõs did so kendle, that for the space of a whole yeare, there was daylye fightynge betwene them: in suche wyse that at lengthe by agreemente of both partes, the Guelfes were reconsyled and restored to their wonted honour and rule ouer the citee, and the 1382
other magistrates and rulers were deposed, amongest whom Michel Lando before named, was one, whose vertues and merites (beynge so notable as they were) could not yet saue hym from the peoples fury.

Thus the Guelfes being in auctorite, and fearyng no man but Benedetto d'Alberti (a good man, riche, & of great auctorite) because he was not of their secte, they found the meane to banish hym, and diuers others that they thoughte contrarye to them, and so setled the common wealth after their maner, and kepte it in quyet til the yere. 1387. At whiche time Giangaleazo Visconti, Duke of Millaine toke hys vncle Bernabo prysoner, and made sharpe warres to the florentines, so that 1390
(notwithstandyng their valiaunte resistence) gettyng all the countreis aboute, as Bologna, Pisa, Perugia, and Siena, he was in so greate towardnesse to wynne Florence, that he caused a crowne of golde to be made, to the intent to crowne him selfe there kyng of Italye, and had done it in deds, if death had not preuẽted him.

Not long after the commons vpon light occasion, rebelled of new, & in greate noumber ranne to the house

of Veri di Medici, offeryng hym the rule of the affate: but he leadyng theim with hym to the high ſtreete, and leauing them there, aſcended into the palaice amongeſt the lo;des, excuſyng him ſelfe, that the people made him to come by fo;ce, and ſo with thankes of them returned to the people, and perſuaded them, that they ſhold haue they; willes, ſo that they would laye downe they; weapons. Whyche at his requeſt they dyd. Immediatly wherapon the rulers ſecretelye armed they; power, and eſtabliſchynge the o;der of the citee, put dyuers of thoſe commons to death, that had been cauſers of this dyſo;der.

¶ Not long after certaine of them that were baniſhed, beyng at Bologna, determined vppon hope of the peoples inconſtancy, to attempt the recouery of their countrey, and to alter the affate of they; citee, and ſo thoroughe conmfo;te of one Piggiello, and of Barroccio Cauicciuli, than dwellynge in Flo;ence, ſecretly they entred the towne, and ſlew one o; two: to the rumoure wherof the people beyng aſſembled, they declared, how they; compynge was to deliuer they; countrey from the tirannie of them that ruled. &c. But fo; all that, there was none that woulde aſſiſte theim. Wherefo;e they withdrew into a churche, and there ſome in the taking were ſlaine, and the reſt taken, examyned and put to execution.

¶ Beſides this the Duke of Myllaine, whileſt he warred with ỳ citee, practiſed ſecretly by meane of the baniſhed men, to winne it, but the thing being diſcouered was occaſion of the baniſhement of a noumber of citeſins, and than within two yeres died Giangaleazzo, af-

1400

ter he

ter he had warred with the Florentines.xii. yeares. So that the Florentines beinge peaced outewardlye, and indifferent quiete within theim selfes, made oute theyr power against Pisa, and valiauntly gatte it. 1405.

Than had they warre with Ladislaus kynge of Naples about the citee of Cortona, whyche the Florentines had before purchased. And that warre was so perillouse, that (as most writers affyrme) they procured a phisicion of the kynges to poyson hym. By reason of whose death, thei recouered hert, being before in maner desperat of the astate of theyr common wealth: because the king hauing already taken Rome, Siena, la Marca, & Romagnia, wanted no more but Florence onely to make his full waye into Lumbardye. Wherfe he determyned with hys power to proue hys fortune. So that the death of these two princes, the Duke of Myllayne and the kynge of Naples, was more auailable to the Florentynes, than theyr owne force. But they (whose nature could not wel beare any reste) lyued not fully. viii. yeares in peace, but that not onelye the parties within them selfes renued theyr wõted contention againe, but also the citee attempted warre against Philip, than Duke of Myllayne: in whyche warre theyr armie at Zagonara was discoumfited, and consequently al theyr holdes in Romagnia lost, Castracaro & Modigliana excepted. Wherupon they made suite to the Venetians, & obteined them in leage againste the duke. By whose meane at length they recouered their townes in Romagnia; notwithstãding the charges of that warre had ben so great (amountinge to the sũme of three millions and, 500000. duckates) and that the Florentines 1414

tines fel out amongeſt them ſelfes about the paſement thereof, whiche they called Cataſto: and the citee of Volterra rebelled againſte theim, thoughe they were
1428 ſoone brought to obedyence agayne.

¶ After this beganne the Florentines to make warre againſt the towne of Lucca, whiche endured .iii. yeres wyth wonderful domage on bothe ſides: ſpeeyallye on the Florentine, whoſe army was diſcomfited by Nicolo Piccinino, ſent by the duke of Myllayne to ſuccoure the Lucchese.

¶ Than beganne contencion within the citee betwene Coſmo de Medici & Rinaldo degli Albizi. Not that Coſmo (who was a iuſte and a vertuouſe man) gaue anye accaſyon thereof. But vppon a conſaite that Rinaldo ſuſpected, ſeyng that Coſmo with his liberalytee & vertue had gotten the loue of the people, he imagined ſtreight way, that he wēt about to be lord of all. Wherfore he ſo conſpyred, and wrought agaynſt him, that Coſmo was taken, laied in priſon, and in daūger of death. But finallye he was confined vnto Padoa, where he remaigned the ſpace of a .xii. moneth, tyll by meane of his friendes he was reconſiled home, and his enemies ſome put to death, and the reſt baniſſhed, and finally the whole aſſate of the common wealth reſourmed after hys owne maner. Durynge whoſe tyme the Florentines endeuoured them ſelfes much to conquere the citee of Lucca, to the enterpriſe wherof they enterteined Franceſco Sforza (that afterwardes was duke of Myllayne) to be theyr generall. But becauſe he than practiſed mariage with the daughter of Myllayne (whoſe father Duke Philip was enemye to the florentine &

tine affate) he so coldely proceded, that whan it came to passe, that he myghte haue steigned Lucca, he neuertheleste was occasion of peace betwene the Florentines and the Lucchese, in such wyse that Lucca styl remayned in theyr libertee. 1438.

¶ Not longe after solowed the counsaile of florence: at whiche the emperoure of Greece, with the chiefe of the Greekishe churche assembled, and agreed with the Romayne churche, though they stode not by it longe.

¶ Than arose Nicolo Piccinino, and wythout any iust grounde moued warre to the Florentines, wherein he dyd theim no small dyspleasures. But finally he was discoumfited at Anghiari: and immediatelye after the Conte di Poppi (who before had assysted Piccinino) was besieged in his owne towne: and his whole affate, with the towne of Poppi taken from hym by the Florentines.

¶ And though the warre, whiche Piccinino made, was as well against the churche as the Florentines, so that the bishop of Rome, of the victory of Anghiari, enioyed as well his parte as the Florentines: yet the charge before, and the cost that the bishop was at in pursuing the victorye, was suche, that for verye neede of money: he solde Borgo san Sepolchro, vnto the Florentines for 25000. duckates. All this whyle were the Florentines in league with the Venetians againste the duke of Myllaine, in suche wyse that the better to dysburdeine his owne charge, the duke steered kyng Alfonse of Naples against the florentines, who entred vpō Tuscane and did theim much hurt, though at last laiyng siege to the towne of Piombino) through sickenesse that fell in

his army) he was constreigned to remoue his siege, and vtterly to habandone hys enterpryse. But after Duke phillip of Millaine was deade, and Francesco Sforza in possession of the astate, the Florentines (by meane of Cosmo di Medici) did enter in amitee wyth hym: for whiche occasion, whan the Venetians were oute wyth Francesco, they procured kynge Alfonse to warre of new on the Florentines, whyche warre was not so sharpe, but that the Florentines at lengthe dyd passe it ouer without any great losse.

1464. Cosmo di Medici.

Than died Cosmo di Medici, whan he had gouerned the citee aboute. 31. yeares. He in his tyme was one of the notablest men of the world, the ritheste private man that hathe bene hearde of many yeares, and so lyberall wythall, that he relieued a number of his citesins, not onely with lone, but also with the gift of large summes of money: and many times he wolde him selfe consider who had neede, and helpe them vndesired. His wysedome was suche (and was vnlearned) that he ruled the vnruliest citee of the world in peace without ciuile sedition, which before his time was neuer in quyete. And though he might haue taken on him selfe the absolute power without difficultee, beyng in such auctoritee, yet ledde he still a private life: nor for all hys greate richesse, neuer sought other mariage for his doughters than amongest his owne citesins. He builded. v. princely houses, one within the cite, and. iiii. without, besides iiii. monastaries. ii. churches, and dyuers chappelles, so that he that wel considerith his doynges, shall iudge them rather mightie kynges than citesins.

Finally his factions were suche in Venice, in Naples, in Rome

in Rome, and in other chiefe citees of trafficque, that whan he was so disposed, he wolde make them all bare of money, so that with his only reputacion many times he wrought suche quyetnesse and commodite to his citee, that all the florentine power was not able to doe. ¶ The rule that he bare was not grounded on feare or tirannie, but upon such a loue to the people, that whan he died the commons bewailed hym as a father of the countrey. The proofe whereof was well seen, what time throughe the yll procurement of Diotisalui (one that he helde as his dere and secrete friende) a conspyracie was made against his sonne Peter.

¶ Whan the olde Duke francesco Sforza was deade, and his sonne Galeazo establisshed in the estate, the ambassadours of Millaine came to the florentines for confirmacion of their former amitee, which Peter the sōne of Cosmo, persuaded, was necessary to be mainteigned In debatynge of whiche matter Peter began to perceiue the intent of his aduersaries, and at length fullye ascertained thereof he wrought so, that all the citee armed theim selfes in his fauour, in such wise that beyng very weake of bodie, and sicke on hys bedde, the chyefe magistrates of the citee were faine to resorte to hym, and to offer theim selfes at his pleasure. Wherupon it followed, that the princypall of hys ennemyes were some banished and some slaine, & his reputacion suche, that (though he ruled not in office him selfe) yet might he at all times commaunde and doe what he wold, and folowyng alwaies the steppes of his father in the same reputacyon dyed.

¶ After whose death Italye happened to be deuyded,

betwene the kynge of Naples and the bysshop of Rome on the one parte, the Venetians, the duke of Myllayne, and the Florentines on the other parte, and amongest all the rest the bisshop of Rome hated the Florentines, specially the house of Medici, whereof two vertuouse yong men, Julian and Laurence, sonnes of the forenamed Peter, were than rulers, and in maner (thoughe they lived privately) princes of Florence, and this hate was not secret, for the bisshop openly in rome favoured the Pazi, & hindered the Medici, so that after the death of Phillip D'i Medici, archebisshop of Pisa, the bisshop of rome placed in his stede Francesco Saluian, a mortal enemie to the house of Medici, who notwythstanding the Romish election, coulde not be received of the florentines. Wherefore with the holy fathers consente this newe archebisshop beganne to practise, to alter the astate of Florence, and counsaltyng on the mattier with diuers of his frendes, specially of the families of Salviati and Pazi, concluded, that withoute the deathe of Julian and Laurence D'i Medici, it was impossyble to bryng the mattier to passe. Wherfore they procured the Cardinal of saincte George (nephewe vnto the bysshop of Rome) to come to Florence, to the intente that in visityng of him, they mighte haue bothe the brethern togethers, and so slea them. Of this their purposed intente twyse they mysse. The thirde time they devysed a solemne masse to be songe before the Cardinal, vnto the which both the brethern came, and at the eleuacion tyme Julian was slayne, and Laurence hurte, but he escaped.

Practise of a prelate.

¶ This meane while the archebisshop craftely got into the pa-

the palaice with certaine men with him, prisstly armed in hope that whan the rumour shoulde ryse he myghte haue not onely the palaice but also all the chiefe rulers of the citee in his handes: but his purpose beyng espyed er he could atchieue it, he with certaine of his complyces were immediately hanged and throwen out at the wyndowes of the palayce. This foule ende had theyr cursed conspiracie: for whan Julian was slayne, and Laurence returned to his house, it was a wonder to see howe soone the people were armed, rennyge vp and downe the stretes, and cryng, Medici Medici, killing and drawyng as many as they coulde know of the contrarye parte. And almosse there was no citezin of anye reputacion, that came not vnto the house of Laurence, to offer him selfe and his goodes to succour him, in case he neded.

¶ Finallye the tumulte beynge quyeted, as manye as coulde be founde of the Saluiati and Pazi, and of the other conspiratours, were put to execucion: and the rest that fledde, were banyshed.

¶ But for all this theyr trouble ceased not. For whan the byshop of Rome sawe that this pryuie treason toke not effect in alteracion of the estate, he attempted openly the destruccio of the citee, not vnder pretence of hate to the florentines, but to the house of Medici onely. First he excõmunicated the citee, & after sent an armye of hys owne agaynst them, and procured the kynge of Naples to inuade them with an other army: protesting alwaies, that he desired no more, but to haue Laurence de Medici in his handes: whych done, he offered to be at peace. Wherfore Laurence, to be the better assured

of his citesins, called .300. of the best of them together, and resonynge the matter wyth them, founde them wholy bent to his defence, and therupon made prouision of resistence, doyng al Italie to vnderstand, that the byshop of a shepherde, became a wolfe, and not onelye practised this secrete treason, but also openly mayntey gned it.

¶ These warres continued so longe, that the Florentynes beyng destitute of all succoure, and werye of theyr greate charge and losse of men, determyned to fall into the armes of the tone of theyr enemies, and esteemynge the kynges amitee more auailable and more durable of the both, Laurence Di Medici wente hym selfe to Naples, & so behaued him towardes the kynge, that where most mē suspected, he shold neuer retourne, he not onely retourned, but also brought a perfite conclusyon of peace wyth hym. Whereat the bishoppe of Rome was out measure wroth, but at last the Florētines sent their ambassadours to hym. Who beynge brought to audyence in Pontificalibus, at length obteined his absolucion. The rather because euin than newly the Turke had assaulted and taken Otronto in Puglia, and minded to conquere Italie: which occasion caused all the prynces of Italie to vnite them selfes together, more for feare than loue, as afterwardes dyd well appeare. For the Turke was no sooner dead, & the feare of his inuasyon passe, but they fell out againe as farre as euer they were. For betwene the bishop and the kinge grew hote warres, and the Florentines in helpe of the kynge assaulted the bishop on the other syde, and besides that the campe of the league was lyke to haue taken from the

Vene-

Venetians al theyr dominion in Lumbardy: so that Italie was full of warre, vntill by procuremente of the kynge of Spaines ambassadours, a general peace thorough all the affates of Italie was concluded (the Genowaies excepted.) By meane wherof the Florentines with theyr more ease warred vpon the Genowaies, and gat Pietra Santa, with other townes from theim, and gaue them a notable discoumfiture besides Serezana. 1486

¶ Finally the most renoumed priuate man of his time Laurence D' i Medici died, leauyng one of his sonnes a Cardinal (who was called therunto beyng not fully 13 yeres old) and his eldest sonne Peter in great reputacion, and his doughters also very wel maryed. Laurence d' i Medici

¶ He fauoured cunnyng men, specially them that were learned: he was eloquent in reasonynge, quicke of inuencion, wise in determining, and hardy in doing. Besides the conspiracy wrought againste hym, whan hys brother was slayne, he was twyse in peryll of death by treason, and yet preuented theim both to the confusion of the conspiratours. All the princes of Italy honoured hym, the kyng Mathew of Hungary shewed hym great signes of loue, the Soldan of Egypte sente hym presentes & ambassadours, the Turke deliuered Bernardo Bandini, that slewe his brother Julian, into his handes: and his owne citesins so much loued him, that I thynke of his tyme died no man happier than he.

Contrarywise his sõne Peter di Medici, who notwithstandyng his gentle interteigment of al men at the beginning (whiche made the worlde to hope well of hym) did at length proue so ambicious, so wilfull and so indiscrete in his procedynges, that neither the magistra-

tes, the

tes, the citelins, nor yet the people could wel beare him,
1495 to the encrease whereof, whan Charles the. viii. Frenche kyng, passed by Florence towardes Naples, Peter mette hym on the way, and sayde to him, that his father commaunded hym. iii. thynges, the fyrst to honour god, the secounde to worshyp the french kyng, and the thyrd to defende hys countrey. So that Charles seeyng hym thus wel disposed, entreated hym so fayre, that he deliuered into his handes Serezana, Pietra Santa, and finally set Pisa at libertee, whych was so greate a hyndraunce to the Florentine astate, that the magistrates and commons, moued of iuste disdeigne, draue him out of the citee, toke his goodes and patrymonye as forfaicte, and condemned him to perpetuall exile, with a noumber of his friendes and partetakers: and the furie of the people was suche, that they brake and defaced al the armes that coulde be found of the Medicies in Florence.

¶ And albeit that he attempted many waies to recouer his countrey, yet was his fortune so ill, that the more he sturred, the more was he hated, whiche at lengthe was the vndoyng both of him selfe, and of a great many moe as wel of his adherentes, as of his aduersaryes.

¶ Thus the familie of Medici lost reputacion and credite for the tyme: so that the astate of Florence retour-
1494 ned vnto the common rule of the magistrates and citesins, that endured til the tyme that Leo the. x. of the familie, of Medici was made bishop of rome, who though he restored not his house vnto the full rule they had before in the citee, did neuertheless so much, partly wyth auctoritee, and partly by friendshyp, that diuers of that

name

name were receiued and made partetakers of the common wealth: whiche by little and little so encreased agayne, that in the tyme of bishop Clemente the. vii. who also was of the Medici, whan the duke of Burbon passed by Florence to Romewardes, the commons of the citee made a commocion against Hippolito di Medici then gouernours of the same: he than beynge departed out of the citee in company of the Cardinal of Corrona, to goe visite the duke Vrbine, But assoone as he returned, he did so much, that they yelded theim selfes agayne vnto him, vpon couenant he should hurt no man for that matter.

Than bishop Clement made this Hippolito a Cardinall, wherupon he left the admynystracion of the common wealth, and so was the citee at libertee agayne.

But Clemene beyng determined to make it perpetuall subiecte to hys owne familie, handled hym selfe so well towardes the emperour at his coronacion at Bolaigne that he obteigned the imperiall power to the oppression of his owne naturall countrey, and brought to passe, that the prince of Orenge, with the Emperours armye besieged Florence.

¶ This siege, endured a whole yere, which for the many enterprises and battailes foughte on bothe partes, may be compared to the best Troiane, Greekish or Romaine warres, namely because the common wealth alone, without helpe or any other prince or state, sustteigned the violence of two so mighty powers as the emperours and the bishops of Rome, vntill famyne and not force ouercame them.

¶ Finally the prince of Orenge, and dyuers other no-

rable capitaines beyng slaine in the often battailes and skyrmisches, at last the Florentines for lacke of vittailles, were faine to fall to composicion, and yelded vpon these condicions, that the citee shold continew in hir libertee, referryng the reformacion of thastate to the emperour, who within the terme of. iiii. monethes shoulde therupon declare his pleasure. That all banysshed men should be reconciled without remembraunce of any iniurie before passed. That the Medici should be restored to theyr goodes taken from them by violence of the magistrates. That the citee shoulde paye. 80000. crownes to the dispatche of the armie, with other conenauntes of lesse moment. Upon whyche accorde Bartholomew Valori, commissary for the bishop of rome, entred with dyuers of the imperial capitains, and there behaued theim selfes so stoutely, that (notwithstanding the conenauntes of peace) they found the meane wythin lesse than a moneth to behead, vi. of the chiefest citesins, and to confine. 150. besides a noumber of others that habandoned and fledde the citee of them selfes: so that theyr promysed libertee was tourned into a moste cruel seruitude.

Shortely after came Alexander Di Medici, nephewe to bishop Clement, sente by the emperour out of flaunders, who at his first coming made a shew of sobrietee, in goyng priuately vnto his house, and receiuing the citesins amiable: but yet at length by little and lyttle he vsurped the offices and magistrates, and finally dysposed theim all at his pleasure, caulyng him selfe openlye to be called duke.

1532

1534 Than died Clement the Bishop, wherupon the Cardinalles

dinalles Di Medici and Saluiati, with the principal of the other banished Florentines (couetyng the recouery of their cittees libertes) sent ambassadours to the emperour, beseechyng hym to consider the tyrannye of Duke Alexander (who thā newly had builded the Cittadella) and to regarde the condicions of peace. Whyche ambassadours arriued at Barcelona euē as the emperour was takyng shippe towardes the enterprise of Tunise: so that being returned to Rome, the Cardinall Hippolito di Medici disposed hym selfe to goe vnto Tunise therfore. And takyng his iourney towardes Naples dyed at Itri by the way: poysoned (as the voyce went) to procurement of Duke Alexander.

¶ This duke Alexander was yet but ponge, who by bishop Clements procuremēt had maried the emperours bastarde doughter, he was so stoute, that without anye respecte he wolde haue hys wyll in all thynges, and namelye in feates of loue and chaunge of women was his speciall delite. And amongest all other he delyted more in the company of Laurēce di Medici (that shold succede him in the astate) than of any other man. But Laurence in steede of that loue hated the duke, and had long time determined to slea him, whan he might finde occasiō, whether he did it in hope the rather to atteigne to the domynion hym selfe, or to restore to the citee hir auncient lybertee, be diuers opinyons.

¶ In effecte without makyng any man priuie to his entent, other than a seruant of his owne, the duke beyng on a night all alone in Laurences house, and sleppyng on a bedde, Laurence and his man slew him: and therupon counsailynge with certayne of his frendes, and

seeyng no man disposed to stand with him in pursuing of his purpose, the selfe same nighte he fledde, and went straight to Uenice, where in companye of the Strozzi he liued, til of late certaine persõs, in hope of the Taglia (a reward proclaimed for the killyng of notable offenders) he was also slayne.

¶ Immediately vppon knowlage of the death of Duke Alexander, the three florentine Cardinalles, that were than in rome, departed thense, and makyng all the men they coulde by the waye, came with an armye towarde Florence. Wherfore the Medici, with their frendes in florence (to make their party good, that the banished men shoulde not preuayle to their destruction) elected Cosmo di Medici to their duke, a yonge man of .20. yeres of age, whose father Iohn Di Medici had bene a man righte valiaunt in armes. And therupon sente to the Cardinalles, prayynge them to state their armye by the way, and to come them selfes priuately to florence, where they should fynde so much reason offered them, that they shoulde neede to vse no force. So they stayed their power beside Cortona, and beynge come to florence were entreated with so faire promises, that they licenced theyr men to departe. By reason wherof the Duke that now is, with his frendes had time to make theim selfes strong, and than wolde consent to nothyng that the Cardynalles loked for: so that wyth a playne mocke they departed, lamentyng their folie: that they had chaunged the suretee of their force, for the vnsuretee of fayre wordes.

1538. ¶ This chaunge in Florence, and the mocke that the Cardinalles receiued, so much encreased their malyce,

that

that they with the helpe of Phillip Strozzi and Bartholomewe Valori, assembled & waged the number of 4000 men: which by Peter Strozzi (that yet lyueth and serueth the Frenche kynge) shoulde haue be conducted to Monte Murlo, and from thense to Florence, had not Phillip and Bartholomew (who with a smalle company came before to Monte Murlo) ben set vpon by Alexander Vitelli, taken and led awaye prisoners to Florence, where the whole conspiracy of those confederates, that were in the towne was discouered, and diuers taken and put to execucion: and so the whole enterprise broken and destroyed. Amongest the rest only Phillip Strozzi was preserued from deathe: notwythstanding he was kept in prison in the Cittadella, and there dyed. Some saye he killed him selfe rather than he wolde vndoe his children by payinge the raunsome that was required of him, beynge in dede one of the rychest priuate men that was in his time, as it doth well appeare by the wealth of hys sonne Peter, and of hys other children, which beyng banished men, and hauing nothyng in their owne countrey, doe neuertheleſſe liue abroade in so muche reputacion, that fewe brethern of christendome vnder the degree of prynces doe the like. Cittadella.

I haue spoken before of Cittadella buylded by duke Alexander for the more suretee of his dominion, which at hys death remaygned in the keppynge of one of the Dukes capitaines. But assoone as Alexander Vitelli (one that had serued well the emperour in his warres) hearde of the Dukes death, he came to Florence and entred into the Castell to speake wyth the cappytayne, where he handled the matter so well, that he excluded

the capitayne and kepte it hym selfe. And thoughe he made many faire promises to duke Cosmo, yet at lēgth he deliuered it to the emperour: wherfore rewarded hym with fayre possessions in the realme of Naples.

¶ This duke Cosmo sued first to marrie with the wife of Duke Alexander the Emperours doughter, but the bishop of Rome that nowe is, purchased hir (to his no small coste) for his sonnes sonne, Duke Octauio. For the whyche there hath ben mortal hate betwene Duke Cosmo and the bishop. And beyng thus preuented, the duke to obteigne the more stay towardes the empereur maried the doughter of Don Diego di Tolledo, Vice Re of Naples, by whose meane he hathe redeemed the Cittadella of the emperour for the summe of 400000 duckates, and is nowe absolute lorde and kynge within hym selfe.

Duke Cosmo.

¶ He hath diuers faire children by his wyfe, and loueth hir so wel, that in maner he neuer goeth abrode (vnlesse it be to church) without hir, and is reputed to be a very chaste man. He is learned and wyse, he vseth fewe wordes, and is neuertheleste in hys owne tounge eloquente. In the administracion of iustice he is so syncere, that syns the tyme of his reigne, whyche is nowe absuo.x. yeres, I haue not hearde, that he hathe pardoned any person condemned to dye. He hath restreigned the Vice of Sodome (which heretofore reigned more in Florence than elswhere in Italy) with payne of death: and hath brought hys astate to suche quyetnesse, as it hath not ben this .300. yeres past: so that Florence may wel saye, that in hym she hath founde hir longe desired libertee. For though he absolutely hath the whole reue-

newes to his owne vse, yet the sureties that the Florentynes haue in their owne thynges (whyche heretofore they neuer had) is muche more worthe to them, than the common reuenew was beneficiall to the citee.

¶ Finally the vertue of this Duke Cosmo, besides the worthinesse of his dominion, hath brought hym in suche reputacion, that he is numbred as one of the rarest prynces of our tyme, and feared also, as one in whom there be hydde thynges of greater moment than the rule of that onely estate.

D The

¶ The state of Genoa.



Genoa standeth in maner betwene the Alpes and Appenine hylles, and hath hys prospecte towarde the south. For it hangeth so on the sea vnderneth a man may almost discerne euery part of the citee. It hathe no playne countrey neere it, but on the one side hilles and mountaines and the sea Mediterraneum on the other. And yet those hilles that renne alonge the sea costes, bryngе forthe many kyndes of pleasaunt fruite, with much wyne and oyle, for the moste parte not thorough the fertilytee of the ground, but thorough the inhabitauntes peinefull dyligence.

¶ The circuite of Genoa is little lesse than. v. myles, the walles about are very newe, fayre and stronge: specially the .ii. gates Di San Thomaso and del L'arco are so large, that they seeme almost .ii. forteresses.

¶ The hauen that cometh into it, is excedyng fayre and bigge enough to receiue any naue, beyng forced somewhat narowe at the mouthe, with a wonderfull costely piere of stone made out into the sea: at the ende wherof is a stronge toure, called Il Mole: Wherby the hauen is defended from all wyndes, the southweast excepted.

¶ Within this hauen they haue an Arsenale, hable to receiue .xviii. or .xx. galleys.

¶ Theyr churches are very fayre and sumptuouse, specially the Cathedrall churche of .S. Laurence, whose fronte of whyte and blacke marble seemeth a very rare peece of worke.

Theyr

¶ Their houses are exceadynge fayre, the frontes two stories hygh, for the most part of fine marble curiously wrought: For their lawe alloweth none to decke hys house any higher with that kynde of worke, (vnlesse it be in respecte of some notable seruice) because it would requyre an infinite charge to garnish them of that sort to the toppe, their houses beyng for the most part .vi. .vii. and some .viii. stories hygh. And yet are they so fayre, that I wote not vnto what citee I maye compare theyr buildynges. And not onely within the citee, but all a longe the sea coastes, called La Riuiera, euery village is so furnished with gallaunt and sumptuouse houses, that it is a worlde to beholde.

¶ Amongest all other the palaice of Andrea Doria, without the gate of .S. Thomas, is a notable thinge, very fayre, sumptuouse and large: And aboue his house (a thing wonderful) he hathe made his claues to hewe out of the harde rockie mountayne, as muche space, as hath made .vi. gardeins one aboue an other: and hathe caused so much earth to be caried vp, as suffiseth for the growth of all maner fruites and herbes, very pleasant to beholde.

¶ Lykewyse within the towne, Andrea Doria hathe the goodliest house that any man hath buylded in ours dayes.

But the stretes of the citee for the moste part are so narow, that it is a great defacyng to the rest. Whyche I thinke the stipe descent of the hyll causeth, that they haue not roome enough to make theyr stretes large.

Halfe a myle without the towne Weastwards, they haue a very fayre watch toure, called Torre della Lu-

minaria, wherin nightly burneth a greate lyghte for a marke to theim that be on the sea, because it maye be discerned verye farre of.

Finally they haue a very fayre conduite of water conueighed on arches, muche after the auncient Romaine facion, for the space of.6. myles or more, oute of the valley of Bisagnio: notwithstandinge toat they haue dyuers fayre springes, and one specially that cannot be drawen dry.

Of their dominion and gouernaunce.

THeyr dominion is not very greate, it passeth not the boundes of Liguria, which is scarcely.80. miles in length, and nothinge so muche in breath. And may dispend in publike reuenew not fully.400000. crownes by the yeare: as I haue been enformed. In deede in tyme past they had muche greater dompynon: So that the common rent hath been veraye great: but the Turkes prosperitee hathe muche abated that. Neuertheless it is thoughte, the priuate citesins were neuer more wealthie than they be at this present.

Of theyr trade and customes.

ALl the Genowales in maner are merchant men and very great trauailers of straunge countreis For I haue ben reasonably persuaded that there be.5. or.6 thousand of them continually abrode, either merchauntes or factours; so that they leaue few places

of the

of the worlde vnsought: where anye gaine is to be had. For the merchaundise that they bring home hath spedy dispatche, by reason they re citee is as a keye vnto all the trade of Lumbardy, and to a great part of Italie.

They at home make such a nomber of silkes and velnettes, as are hable to serue many countreys: whyche is the chiefe merchaundise that they sende forthe. In deede they are commonly noted to be greate vsurers.

¶ One thing I am sure of, that if Ouide were nowe aliue, there be in Genoa, that could teache him a dousen poinctes De Arte Amandi. For if Semiramis were euer celebrated amõgest the Assirians, Venus amõgest the Greekes, Circes among the Italians, sure there be dames in Genoa that deserue to be celebrated & chronycled for their excellente practise in loue. And truelye the Genowayes them selues deserue that their wyues should be praised, because I saw in no place where women haue so muche lyberte. For it is lawfull there openly to talke of loue, with what wife so euer he bee. Insomuch that I haue seene yonge men of reputacyon stãdyng in the strete talke of loue with yong mistresses beyng in they re wyndowes aboue: and openlye reherse verses that they had made one to the other. And in the churches, specially at euensong, they make none other prayers. So that he that is not a louer there, is meete for none honest companye. Many men esteme this as a reproche to the Genowaies, but they vse it as a policie: thinkyng that their wiues throughe this libertee of open speache, are ridde of the rage that maketh other women to trauaile so much in secret.

¶ In dede the women there are exceding faire and best

apparailed to my fantasie of all other. For thoughe their vppermost garmente be but plaine clothe, by reason of a law, yet vnderneth they weare the finest silkes that may be had, and are so finely hosed and shoed, as I neuer sawe the like, open faced, and for the moste parte bare headed, with the heare so finely trussed and curled that it passeth reherssall. So that in myne opinion the supreame court of loue is no where to be sought, out of Genoa.

¶ But like as the women are excellent in this, euen so doe the men excede all other in superstition. For there be within the citee. 20 scholes or companies of disciplinantes otherwise called Battuti, whose maner is whan they are called to deuocion, as euery good fridaye, or in the middest of a plage, of famine, of warre, or of other like occasion, that requireth or rogacions such processions, thei assemble and cloth them selfes in sacke, linnen or buckeramme: with their backes naked, and their faces couered, sauyng littell holes to loke oute at. And hauynge certaine skourges or whippes (some of wyer) in their handes, they goe about the towne whyppynge theim selfes, that the bloud shall renne from the backe downe to the heeles, so painefullye, that it moueth the poore people to compassyon. For whan this is done, they thinke God must nedes fulfil their prayer. The lyke wherof is vsed in all other places of Italy, but because I thinke no two citees are able to match Genoa in the noumber of these Battuti, I thoughte good to make mencion of theim here.

¶ Finally, the astate is holden by a duke, chaungeable euerye. ii. yeare: who with. viii. gouernours and. viii. proctours

procloures assigned vnto hym, ruleth the whole for the tyme. Neuertheleſſe Andrea Dorta the emperours admyrall for the myddell seas, vseth all at hys wyll in matters of peace or warre, and almoſt in euerye other thynge.

The buildyng of Genoa.

OF the edificacion of Genoa be dyuers opinions: but because no certaintee is written thereof, I will omitte theyr saynges that ascribe it to Janus, or to Genuus the sonne of Saturne, and agreing with the opinion of the bishop of Nebio (that particularlye wrote the Chronycle thereof) I thinke it to be of such antiquitee, that neyther the tyme of foundacion, nor yet the authour thereof can wel be knowen. As for the name, it is not vnlyke, but that (because it is the veray entrie from the seas vnto Lumbardy) it was fyrſte called Ianua (a gate or dooze) & afterwardes corruptely Genoa. But howe or whan it was buylded, or for what cauſe it was so named, this is cleere, that in the Romaines time, almoſt .300. yeres before the cominge of Chriſt, this citee ruled the countrey about it, as appeareth bothe by a table of braſſe latelye founde in the vale of Poceuera, and also by the mencyon that Liuie maketh of the deſtruction of it by Mago Anniballes brother, and of the repairynge of it agayne by the Romayne Conſule Lucretius Spurius.

¶ From whiche tyme to the commynge of Charlemayne into Italie, I find nothyng notable of Genoa, saue that it was one of the fyrſt citees, that openlye profeſſed the

Christian fayth. But after Charlemayne was crowned emperour, and his sonne Pepine made kinge of Italie, Ademaro, a baron of Fraunce, was sente thyther to be capitaine: who by commaundement of kyng Pepine, fought by sea with the Saracines: and thoughe he was taken prisoner in the battaile, yet the Genowayes ouercame theyr enemies, take. xiii. Saracine shyppes, and the ile of Corsica, which in maner euer sens hathe remained vnder the Genowaies dominion: and so continued Genoa obediente to the emperours capptaynes the space of. 100. yeres.

Wonder

In the yeare. 936. there happened in a little streete than called Fontanella, & now Bordigoto, nere to the piere of the hauen, a littel spryng in stede of water cast forth blond, and ranne so a whole daye, to the great wonder of the people: wherupon folowed, that the Saracines armie came sodeinely vpon the towne, and takyng it by force, sacked and rifled it, sette it on fyre, and caryed away the people, men women and children, in such wise, that they lefte the towne as a playne wildernesse. But the Genowaies army, whiche was than abrode, mette wyth these Saracines on the sea aboute Sardegnia, whers they fought with theim cutte them in peces, and

958

recouered their prisoners with double prayes, and so reflored their cities.

After this the emperoure Berengario graunted them certaine priuileges, with ful dominion ouer the townes that they than possessed. By reason whereof they shortly encreased, not onely in welth but also in such power that in the voiage made into the holy lande by Godfrey of Boloigne and other princes, the Genowaies armye

1099.

was

was one of the notablest of that companye, firste at the wynning of Antioche, and after at the getting of Jerusalem, in comyng to which secounde enterprise the genowaies were faine to drowne theyr owne ships in the hauen of Iaffo, because they were not able to resist the Soldanes armie, that came vpon theim: thought better to drowne them, than to encrease the enemyes power with their losse and shame both: how be it they first discharged all thyngs that might be had out of them, whiche they caried with them vnto the siege of Jerusalem, and there behaued them selfes so worthily, that almoste none other company of the christian army was comparable to them. Policie. 1109.

¶ After this they armed. 27. Galleis and. vi. shyppes, and sent theim into Soria in ayde of Boemonde than kynge of Jerusalem, where they gatte the citee of Cæsarea in Palestina, and leavynge it in possessyon of the christians, retourned home with greate tryumphe and praye.

¶ Finally within the space of. 13. yeres the Genowaies sent. vii. seuerall armies into Soria, by whose meanes the principal townes from the golfe of Laiacia southwardes, to the golfe of Rissa, that is to wete Malinistra, Solino, Antioche, Laodicia, Tortosa, Tripoli, Baruti, Accon, sometime called Ptholemaida, Acres, Ghibelletto, Cæsaria, Assur, Iaffo, Acaron, and Ascalon, were gotten oute of the Turkes handes. For which great seruice Baudewyn than king of Jerusalem next after Boemonde, gaue to the Genowayes dyuers notable priuileges through al his dominion, whiche they enioyed longe time.

After

After these many victoryes retournyng to Genoa, the warre that ceased so farre of, sprang vp nerer home For the Pisani contended with the Genowaies for cõsecracion of the bishop of Corsica, & for the ile of Sardegnia. Wherupon folowed sharpe warres betwene them, for the moste parte to the disauauntage of the Pi-
1127. sani: so that at last beyng plainely ouercomen the Genowaies entred into Pisa by force, & rased all the houses therof downe to the fyrst floore.

Thus finishing those warres, and wanting occasion
1146. where to be occupied, thei made out an army against the Saracines, & firste ouerranne the ile of Minorica, and after assaulted the cities of Almeria and Tortosa, in the confines of Granata, which they toke by force, with the slaughter of an infinite nomber of Moores, besydes 10000. slaues that they caryed wyth them to Genoa, and suche a quantitee of treasure and bosties, as fewe lyke had ben seen in those daies: diuidyng the domynyon that was gotten into three partes, the Erle of Barcelona (chiefe of this enterprise) had two to hym selfe, and the Genowaies the thyrde.

The glorie and wealth of which victories were such to the Genowaies, that for many yeres after they enterprised no great matter farre from home, but such sedicion fel among them selfes, that theyr owne brauling many times gaue courage to forein princes to worke against them. For the emperour federike the fyrste after he had conquered Lumbardie) thought also to subdue them: and made open preparacyon for it. Whyche was cause of theyr vnion agayne. For whan they perceiued an outward ennemie, than were they inwardlye

soone

soone agreed: and assoone as they were sure of peace abroade, incontinētly they warred againe within them selfes. Neuertheles they bled the emperoure so well with giftes and kayre woordes, that he not only suffred theim to continue in theyr libertes, but also encreased theyr common wealth with a noumber of priuileges: and was occasion, that after long cōtencion with them of Pisa, the Genowaies at lengthe enioied quietlye the one halfe of Sardegnia, whiche before the Pisani had wholly to them selfes.

About this time the Souldan of Aegypt gotte Jerusalem, and dyuers other cities in Soria out of the Christians handes. 1190

Wherfore kynge Richarde of Englande, and kynge Phillip of Fraunce made their viage into those parties, and kyng Richarde arryued at Genoa with .xv. galleys, where he taried but one daye. Richarde kynge of England

After whom the Genowaies sente .80. saile, wyth men and municion to the assiege of Acon or Ptholemaida To the succours of which citie the Souldan sent a shyp charged with victuall and armure, and amongest other a cage full of fleeyng serpentes, purposely sent to be set forth in the Christian army, that with theyr venim they myght plage it. But it was mette by the englysh naule and taken. And the emperour federike coming towardes the same enterprise, beyng al ready entred into Soria, by mischappe was drowned in a riuer.

After whose death his sonne Henrie nert emperours came to genoa in his owne persō, requiring their helpe to the conquest of Sicilia, promisyng theim the profyte, so that he myght haue the honoure. Whyche so muche enflamed the hertes of the people, that they made oute 1194.

a great number of galleis and other vesselles, and dyd so much seruice, that the emperour (in maner by their power) gatte the whole Ile of Sicilia, whyche he vnthankefullye considered. For whan they had done their best for hym, he rewarded them with all the spyte he coulde, threatnyng to oppresse their libertee, and to make them his subiectes: insomuche that the Pisani, through counforte thereof, molested the genowayes of new, and fortifyng Poggio di Bonifacio, fel to spoylyng and rifling of the Genowaies goodes by sea.

But at lengthe the losse tourned to theim selfes. For the genowaies armed theim, and takyng Bonifacio by force, not onely sacked and munited it for theim selfes, but also toke a number of Pisane shippes, as they could fynde theim. Whereupon it folowed, that the Pisani made out their power, and so fought diuers times with the genowayes with diuers fortune.

The inhabitauntes of Vintimiglia breakynge the articles of accorde betweene the genowayes and theim, were faine to come barefoote with crosses in their handes to Genoa and aske pardon, for feare of the preparacion that the citee made againste theim. And the yeare folowynge, the genowaies purchased the dominyon of Gaui, of the vnheritours therof: and the inhabitauntes of the vale of Arocia submytted their countrey to the Genowayes dominion.

1201

And because the Pisani prepared to assayle certayne genoway shyps, comyng out of Soria, laded with riche merchandise, the citee armed certaine galleis & shippes to conducte them safely: whyche metynge togethers in the mouth of the Adriatike sea, determined to attempte

1204

to wynne

to winne the citee of Saragosa in Sicile lately gotten by the pisani. In ỹ enterpryse wherof they toke certaine Pisane shyppes: and without greate feight wonne the citee, leauynge it fortifyed and gouerned for the common welth of Genoa. Than the Pisani made out a newe armye and besieged it, and of lykelyhod shoulde haue put it to great afterdele, if Henry erle of Malea in Greece, with certayne galleys of his owne, and other shippes of the Genowaies, that came from the east, had not comen to the succours: who foughte with the Pisane armie, and with helpe of theim that were within the towne, obteined the victory, to the great slaughter and losse of theim of Pisa.

¶ And because the erle Henry of Malea had done the Genowayes great seruice dyuers waies, therfore they ayded hym to their great charge, with galleis, shippes, men, and horses to defende Candia, which he had vsurped vpon the Uenetians: so that the Uenetians beynge therwith agreued, immediatelye publyshed the Genowaies to be their ennemies, wherupon folowed sharpe warres betwene theim many yeres after. 1209. 1216.

Here is to be vnderstand, that from the yere. 1080. vnto the yere. 1190. the citee was gouerned frely by the citesins vnder the name of Consuls without entermedling of straũge rulers, and so in maner to this time, though for the space of. 26. yeres some straungers had ben now and than brought in as Potestates (the consules neuer theleſſe remainyng after the olde maner) but from this time forewarde the Consulles ceased, and straunge Potestates bare the rule a great tyme after.

¶ The generall armye of the Christians lyynge at the 1220

syege of Damia in Aegypte was relyeued wyth. 10. galleys sente by the Genowaies: throughe whose helpe the cities was gotten, with wonderfull ryches and an infinite number of slaues, besides the multitude of infidelles that were slaine: howbeit the christians kepte not the citee long, for the yere folowyng the Saracines recouered it agayne.

They of Vintimiglia rebelled against the genowaies,
1222 so that after many light bickerynges, at laste an armye was sent out against them, which lay longe at siege before the towne, and could not preuaile: so that the Potestate to be assured of that enterprise, edyfyed an other towne betwene them and the sea, and wyth a garryson held them so streight, that at last they yelded, wherupon the towne being recouered, the genowaies builded ther two fortresses for the more suretee of the same.

In like maner they of Sauona and of Albenga rebel-
1227 led, and were to their despyte reduced to theyr former obedyence. But the warre that happened betwene Alexandria in Lumbardy, and Genoa, for the dominion of Capriata and other townes in the confines betwene them, was not so sone appeased: thoughe in effecte the genowaies at length preuailed.

¶ Gregory the.ix. bishop of Rome trauailyng to sende
1238 an armie into the holy land, agreed the Venetians and genowayes togethers for.ix. yeares, and bounde theim to kepe peace on payne of cursynge. But lyke as his enterprise came to naught: so his curse coulde not kepe those two astates from renewing of their malice, as by their ofte fightyng with variable fortune appered after And beyng than in cõtencion with the emperour fede-

rike, and

like, & calling a counsaile in rome against themperour, he sent to the genowayes, prayinge them to conueyghe in sauetee the legates and prelates that came oute of the west parts towardes that counsaile. Wherfore they armed. 27. galleis, and receiuing two Cardinalles, and other prelates to the noumber of. 40. at Niza in Prouãce, brought them solemnely to Genoa, & goinge from thense with them towardes rome, mette wyth Ansaldo admirall of the Emperours nauye: who foughte wyth them, and toke. 22. of those galleis, withall those goodly prelates, and diuers of the chiefe of the Genowayes: and after vered the common wealth sore in diuers partes of their dominion. And because the emperoure had intelligence with diuers of the citesyns, who withstode the maintenaunce of byshop Gregorie: therefore were they for the moste parte banyshed, and manye of theyr houses raced to the earth, and as banyshed men procured many displeasures to their countrey diuers waies. And though the most part of the imperialles were thus banished, yet diuers of that affection remayned in the citee closely, insomuch that the commons deuided them openlye by name, callynge the imperialles Mastarati, and the Papistes Rampini: whiche names contynued til the comyng vp of Guelfi and Ghibellini, that deuyded the whole Italian nacion, as is mencyoned in the Florentine history.

¶ Than died the bishop gregory, and Celestine his succes- 1243.
sour liued but. 18. daies, after whom succeded Innocence the. iiii. a Genowaye borne. He folowynge the trade of hys predecessours contendyng with the emperour, & beinge in his daunger at Sutri in the realme of

Naples, wrought so wyth the Genowayes, that they priuily made out certaine galleys, whiche came to Ciuita Vecchia beside Rome, to receiue the byshop, who as secretly as he could came thither, and toke shipping to Genoa, where he was receiued with Gloria in excelsis, as reason wolde: not a little to the emperours displeasure, that before accompted him selfe in maner sure of hym. And Innocence restynge hym selfe a certayne space in genoa, he departed towardes Lions in fraunce and there helde a general counsaile agaynste the emperour Federike, during whose life he durst not retourne into Italy: but immediately after the emperours death he came backe againe by genoa, and was there no lesse triumphantly receiued, than he was the firste tyme.

1251 Upon the death of this emperour the Genowayes also recouered Saona and dyuers other townes, that by the emperours tyme rebelled agaynst theim, and had doone theim notable displeasures, as wel by sea as by lands. And byshop Innocence beynge departed from genoa to Milaine wrought so, that the banished Mascarati were restored to theyr countrey againe: & 10000 pounds paied them of the comminaltee in recompence of theyr goodes taken away before.

1257 And not long after the people made a commocion against the office of the Potestate, so that ỹ rumour ceasyng, they elected Guglielm Bocanigra, a citezin, to be theyr capitaine & superiour vnto the Potestate, and all other magistrates, who beynge placed in that office for .x. yeres, by lyttle and little vsurped the domynyon ouer the whole, and so prouoked the chiefe citezyns to conspyre agaynste hym: And though he beyng aduer-

tised

tised of the fyrst conspiracie preuented hid fall, by banishyng of dyuers of the conspyratours, and by reconciliyng of the rest: Yet his tyrannie so muche encreased: that at length, not the chiefe citesins alone, but also the commons openly rebelled, and depoſed hym, reducyng the citee to the former order of theyr straunge potestate

¶ In his time the citee happened to haue great warres 1258
specially with the Venetians, who hauyng like priuileges in the citee of Acon, and in other partes of Soria, as the genowaies had, vpon a light occasion brake the peace, that byshop Gregorye before had made betwene theim: so that both the Venetians and the Genowayes made out notable armies into Soria, either of theim to mainteine his party there, and after diuers skyrmishes and light bickerynges, at last the armies met & fought before Acon, where the genowaies were discomfited, & xvb. of theyr galleis taken. So that those Genowayes that than were in Acon, were constreigned to flie.

And therupon the Venetians tokt, sacked & rased their houses to the earthe: and for a more despite, rooted vp a verie fayre toure of the Genowaies, and made a ponde of that place, and settynge botes therupon, wolde saye in scorne: See where the genowaies toure swymmeth.

¶ This ouerthrowe caused the Genowayes to enter in 1261
leage with Michael Paleologo emperoure of Constantinople, than enemie to the Venetians: who gaue to the Genowaies the citee of Lesmirre, and the yle of Sio, as some affyrme.

¶ Either of those common wealthes yerely made out a noumber of galleis, which most commonly mette togethers and fought: but the notablest conflict of all was

before

before Sicilia, betwene Trapani & Mazara, where the
1266. Venetians toke .xxvii. genowayes galleis, withall the
booti and prisoners that were in them.

¶ And though the Genowaies many times gotte from the Venetians dyuers of theyr armed galleis, & manye of theyr merchaunt shippes richelye laden: yet all thynges reckened, the Venetians had the better, whether I shuld ascribe it to fortune or force, I cannot wel iudge.

¶ Lewys the French kyng waged a certaine noumber
1270 of galleis and shippes, with .10000. men of the Genowaies, which serued him in his enterprise made to Tunise in Affrike, where the kynge hym selfe, one of hys sonnes, and dyuers other princes & a noumber of souldours died of the plague: so that Charles kyng of Naples, than lefte chiefe of the armye, fell to composicyon with the kyng of Tunise, and vpon the receipte of certaine money, with promyse of other thynges, dissolued the army, and retourned homewardes without any notable acte: in which retourne he mette wyth Edwarde our prince, that with a goodly companye was departed out of Gascoyne towardes the ayde of that enterpryse, and offered hym part of the money gotten towards his charges: but the prince refused it. Wherefore the reste of the armie, (that were sore tourmented wyth a great tempest, in which a noumber of shippes and men were lost) seeyng the englishe armie cleare, and safe without losse: aduysed, that it was onelye because they would take no parte of money receiued of the infidelles.

¶ And thoughe the Genowayes bothe for shyppes and noumber of men deserued moste in this viage: yet had kyng Charles so litel respecte to them, that those that

remay-

remained, retourned to genoa not onely without gaine or rewarde, but gladde wyth theyr greate losse to be at home againe.

¶ About this time, by reason of the Guelfe and ghibelline parties, that corrupted al Italie (as in the Florentine history appeareth), dyuers of the chiefe houses of genoa likewyse diuided theym selfes into those sectes: insomuche that they of the houses of Doria and Spinoli, with helpe of theyr partetakers, by force expulsed the Flischi & Grimaldi out of the citee, and banyshed those two families, with a number of others, which banished mē, with helpe of a Cardinal of the Flischi, prouoked Charles than kynge of Naples, to make warre against the genowaies, whych endured not longe.

For Oberto Spinola, & Oberto Doria, that toke vpon theim the absolute power, and ruled the citee certayne yeres, keping theyr aduersaries out, were by faire meanes so entreated of Innocence the .v. than bysshopp of Rome, that the banished men were quyetly reconciled and called home: the gouernaunce of the citee neuerthe lesse remaynynge in the handes of the Oberti as it did before. 1376

And than the common wealth bought of Nicolas De Flischo certaine townes and territories to the value of 25000. pound, which they wel and truely payed hym. But the Flischi and Grimaldi continued scarcelye .vii. monethes at home, but they were accused of conspiracie against the estate, and so banished of new.

¶ And though kyng Philip of France had before this tyme made peace for a season betweene the Venetians and genowaies, in hope of an enterprise that he entended to-

ded towardes the holy lande: yet the auncient hate was suche betweene theim, that the one coulde scarce meete with the other on the sea, but that they would fight togethers, and take that aduauntage that they would doe in warre.

1282. Giudice ¶ Than began Giudice di Ginercha in Corsica to trouble the genowaye vessels, and at lengthe to declare him selfe open enemie to them. Wherefore they made out a power against him, and expulsed hym out of hys astate. But by theim of Pisa he was by force restored agayne: for the which the warre renewed betwene the genowaies and the Pisani, one of the blouddiest warrs and greatest by sea that hath lightly ben hearde of betwene two commons wealthes. For within the space of three yeres their armies foughte. iiii. battailes, and they⁊ diligence was such, that whan the one army was discomfited (whiche for the moste parte hapt to the Pisani) they wold within a moneth or. vi. weekes repaire their number of galleis as strong as at the fyrst, not of olde galleis, but of newe tymber. And it wolde seeme incredyble to hym that knoweth those two citees, that they should be able (hauyng so little dominion) to make suche powers one against an other, as by their chronicles appereth they did.

1284 ¶ For the Genowaies vpon a sodeine tidynges of the Pisanes landing in Porto Venere, armed. 70 galleis in lesse than. iii. dayes, and sette them foorthe to the sea, and in the same yeare was. 58. galleis, and. viii. Pamphiii (whyche be boates of. 140. or. 160. ores) made readye in Genoa in a daye, which with the reste of the armie, to the noumber of. 88. galleis, besides other vessells,

selles, sayled forthe before the hauen of Pisa, where after a cruell and bloudde battaile the Genowayes had the victorie, toke. 28. Pisane gallets, bouiged seuen, put the rest to flight, and ledde with theim. 9272. prisoners, whose raunsome yelded vnto the genowayes no small summes of money: and though this ouerthrow shoulde seeme almost sufficient to be the destruction of a great prince, yet did that one citee of Pisa so beare it, that after a little dissembled peace they declared & contynued enemyes a longe while after againste the Genowaies, and fought many battailes by sea with diuers fortune.

¶ The nobilitee of genoa conspired againste the gouer- 1208
nours and people, to take from them the rule, because the citee was gouerned more after the commons wyl, than the gentilmens. And this conspiracy was so close kept (notwithstandynge that in maner all the chiefe families, as Grimaldi, Flischi, Negri, Malloni, Saluacici, Embriaci, & others were confederates in it) that it was neuer knowen, ey! they were in the streetes armed on horsebacke & on foote, and had taken the churche of saincte Laurence: But folowyng to the Abbotes house (for so was the chiefe ruler called) the people assembled and respyted the conspiratours in suche wyse, that the nobilitee was fayne to laye downe their weapons, vpon promyse to be pardoned of lyfe and goodes. By reason wherof the commocyon ceased, and certaine of the principal causers were banished for a time.

Upon examinacion, what power the genowayes were 1290
able to make by sea in tyme of nede, it was founde they had. 120 gallets, furnished with their owne chosen mē. Wherof, 40. were immediatly sent forth against Pisa,

whiche entred the hauen, destroied the great toure that the Pisanes had made there for their defence, toke the towne of Ligorno, and raced it to the earth: and finally brake the great chaine that crossed the water, a greate parte whereof they brought with them to Genoa, and there openly hanged it vp for a perpetuall memorye of their victories.

¶ Where as the commons the yere before had defended their rulers from the conspiracie of the nobilitee, nowe they them selfes began to moue and to make rumours against them: so that the capitaines of their owne accorde gaue vp their offices to the people, wherevpon a newe order was taken, that they shoulde haue a straunger to be their cappytayne, and the reste of all the officers, as the counsaylours, the Antiani, and such other, should be made halfe of the gentilmen, and halfe of the people.

1202. ¶ Not longe after vppon a lyghte occasyon, the truce was broken betwene the Genowaies & the Venetians, and either of them armed a certaine number of galleis to the sea, and in the Leuaunte seas before the hauen of Giacia mette and foughte, where the lesse number, the genowaies ouercame the greater number, and toke. 25

1294 of their galleis.

¶ Here it is to be noted, that wythin the space of. vii. yeres, from the beginnyng of the last warres agaynste Pisa, it appereth, that the genowayes at sundrye tymes had armed. 627. saile, besides the merchant shippes and galeis, that yerely amounted to. 70. or moe. And the custome of comers and goers, with the tare of salte, yelded yerelyvnto the comminaltee aboue an. 140000

pounds

pounde (euery pounde of theirs beyng two of ours, or therabouts) whiche semeth a thing incredible.

Than were the Pascharati and Rampini of the citee (whiche were also as guelfi and ghibellini) made at one, after they had contended as ennemyes moze than 50. yeares. Wherupon (hearyng of a great preparacion that the Venetians made to reuenge theyr losse the yere before) the genowaies armed. 165. galleis wherof 105. were new, in the which they had 45000 feighting men, all of their owne subiectes, vnder the leadynge of Oberto d'Oria, admirall for that vyage, who wente into Sicile, thinkyng there to mete the Venetians, but they met not, so that the army returned without doing anye feate: and their wealthe was suche, that. 8000. men of that armye were cloathed in clothe of golde and sylkes. 1295

¶ The olde enmitie betwene the Guelfi and Ghibellini renewed, so that the citee was deuided, that is to wete, the families of Spinola, & Doria, with their folowers on the one parte, & Flischi and Grimaldi, wyth theyr secte on the other parte: so that they foughte from the later ende of December, vnto the. vii. of Februarye daie by daye, and burned diuers goodlie houses: but at laste Spinola and Doria preuailed, & the other were dryuen out of the towne and banyshed. By reason wherof. ii. capitaines of those. ii. houses were elected to the rule of the citee after the olde maner, and the straunge capitayne, with the Potestate discharged. 1296

¶ Lamba d'Oria, beynge one of the capitaines of the towne, and admyrall of the armye by sea, entred the Venetian golfe, fought with the Venetiã armye, burned 1298.

77. galleis, and brought.18. with .7400. prisoners to genoa, and neuertheles shortly after made peace with the Venetians, and graunted truce to theim of Pisa for 27. yeares. For the whiche the Pisani, yelded to the genowaies the ile of Corsica, and the citee of Sassari in Sardegnia, with. 125000. pounds in money.

1304 The emperour Adronico Paleologo of Constantinople, for the greate amitee betweene hym and the genowaies, gaue theim the ground, wheron Pera standeth, a myle distant from Constantinople, where al the christians now dwel, fyrst builded by the Genowaies.

¶ Within two yeres after beganne the discorde, that

1306. caused so much mischiefe betwene the houses of Spinola and Doria, (whyche before tyme had been stedfaste frendes together) and endured the space of xv. yeares with much bloudshedyng, till the comyng of the emperour Henrie the. vi. to genoa, who agreed both parties, and so behaued him, that the citesins bounde theim selfes by feaultee vnto his obedience for terme of. xx. yeares: which was the fyrst tyme that the citee submytted hir selfe to the dominion of anye straunger. Notwythstandyng whan the emperour was departed, those two parties Spinola and Doria fought openly in the cites so that at length the Spinoli (beyng the weaker) were

1315. dryuen out with well nere al their partetakers, and yet the warre continued betwene them the space of. 24. yeres, aswel within as without the citee, to the great domage, and almost destruction of the common wealth. For many times the banished mē by meane of frendes were reconcyled againe: and whan they were ones returned, than did they worse than euer they did before.

This

This discension was not onelye betwene those two fa-
milies of Spinola and Doria, but also betwene the sec-
tes of Guelfes and Ghibellines: into whyche partyes
the whole citee was likewise diuyded: so that the Chi- 1318
bellines, whiche than were banyshed by helpe of the
Visconti of Myllaine, and of other ghibellines, made
a great armie: and vnder the leadyng of Marke, sonne
to Mathewe Visconti, came before Genoa, tooke the
suburbes, & streigned the citee so sore, that if it had not
been succoured by kyng Robert of Naples (who in his
owne person, with 25. galleis entred the hauen) the
Ghibellines had been lyke to haue taken it. Wherfore
they of the citee, to make theim selfes strong, yelded the
dominion into the handes of the bishop of Rome, and of
the foresayd kynge of Naples, for the space of .x. yeres:
in whiche time were so many ciuile battailes stricken,
so muche bloudshedde, so many townes and houses de-
stroied and burned, so many galleis and shippes broken
drowned and lost, and so great summes of money spent,
that it seemeth a wonder how so little a countrey shuld
bringe forth so great furniture, and all to mischiefe. 1334
¶ Finally kynge Robert (to whom the rule of the citee
was prolonged for .vi. yeres) called the ambassadours,
aswell of the Ghibellines as of the Guelfes, to Na-
ples: and there made theim to conclude a peace, so that
the ghibellines were reconciled home, where they liued
not longe in quiete, as hereafter shal appeare.
¶ In the time of this warre one notable policye was Policie.
vsed by sea. The yeare before conclusion of thys peace,
federike Marabotto, capitaine of .xv. galleis of the Gu-
elfes (whereof .ii. were drowned in Sardegnia) was

chased

chased by Aitono Doria, capitayne of .xiiii. of the ghibelline galleis, and came so neere with the nighte, that they were within a flight shotte together, so that Federike could by no meane escape: Wherefore in the darke of the nyghte, he set forthe a little emptie vessel, with a burnyng lanterne in it, and caused all the lightes of his galleys to be put oute. This dooen he lette the little vessell lose: whyche the wawes of the sea by lyttle and little droue towardes the lande: so that Aitono thynkynge it to be the galleis that he had in chace, folowed, and by that meane was so farre from Federike er it was day, that Federike easily escaped the daunger.

1332. Than beganne the Catalaines to make warre to the genowaies vpon a veraye light occasion, which continued a great while, with many notable battailes by sea more to the losse of the Catalaynes than of the Genowayes: though the better of bothe had no cause to triumphe. But these forein warres were nothing so hurtfull to the citee, as theyr owne ciuile sedicion, whyche shortlye after renued betwene the guelfes and Ghibellyns: so that within the citee they foughte a certayne space with variable fortune, till at length the Ghibellynes preuailed, and chased away the Guelfes: and so an other whyle toke the rule vpon theim. Wherefore the guelfes fortifyed theim selfes at Monaco, and made out dyuers armies by sea, whiche were dyuers tymes mette withall, by the contrary parte, thoughe in effecte there happened no notable battaile betwene them.

1338. Not longe after the Frenche kynge warrynge wyth Englande, hyred .40. galleis of the genowayes: whereof .xx. were of the Ghibellines in Genoa, and .xx. of

the

the Guelfes in Monaco, whyche whan they had ser-
ued him a yere, retourned not wel contented with their
payment, so that the mariners and other meane souldi-
ours toke the rule of the galleis from theyr capitaines: 1339.
and were growen to suche a courage, that whan they
landed, they moued the commons to rebell against the
rule of the common wealth, & subuertynge the citee of
Sauona, with moste parte of the countrey theraboutes,
the commons of genoa toke courage therupon to arme
them selfes, and to renne to the palaice cryng, that they
wold haue an Abbot made of the people, and would no
more be ruled by the capitaines. Wherfore the nobles
(seing theyr power inferiour to the peoples furye) as-
sembled together, & fel to counsaile for chosinge of thys
new Abbotte, in whiche counsayle they taried so longe
within, that the people without were wery, and by start
a poore wyredrawer or a goldesmithe (to geue hym the
better name) and asked the people, whether they would
be ruled by him? Wherunto many answered, yea, wel
(quod he) and than shal Simonine Bocanegra be our
lorde and ruler. Be it (quod one) and be it quod an o-
ther: so that the people with an whole voyce cried, Ab-
botte Bocanegra. But he (who was a good man) did
what he could to refuse it: and they seyng that, amen-
ded the matter with cryng not Abbotte but Duke: so
that in conclusion, whether he woulde or no, the abso-
lute power was put in his hande, and he called Duke:
beyng the fyrst that euer had that title in Genoa. Than
was a law made, that none should be called to any rule
or office of the common wealthe, vnlesse he were a Ghi-
belline.

1340 ¶The Turke at this tyme wared greate, and had certaine galleis goyng vpon the sea called Mare Maggiore (otherwise Pontus Euxinus) whyche had robbed certaine merchaunte shippes of the genowaies, wherefore they armed them selfes in Caffa, and meetynge fought with the Turkes army, and recouered not onely their owne goodes, but also toke .x. Turkish galleis and a shippe with great bootie.

1344 ¶Likewise the emperour of the Tartares made warre on the genowaies, and besieged them in Caffa (a towne situate in the confines of Tartarie) oute of the whyche the Genowaies issuyng by night, burned the Tartares engines, and slewe .5000. men: so that their emperoure sent to genoa for peace, and vnder coloure thereof (obteignyng it) did them much more hurt by treason than he had done in open warre. For he spoyled them at one time of .200000. poundes.

¶The Nobilitee of genoa (that than were banyshed) seeyng the astate ruled all by the people, assembled their powers, and came before the citee, so that Bocanegra (seeyng also the nobilitee and people within the citee in maner at an open cõtencion for the same) deposed him selfe of his dignitee, and departed oute of the citee: In

1345 whose place John di Morta was by the people elected, and the nobilitee kepte out, til by the award of Lucchino Visconti, lord of Millaine (to whose iudgement the mattier was committed) they were restored to the citee and to parte of their goodes, the rule remaignynge neuertheleße at the peoples wyll.

¶Al this while, they of Monacho mainteigned warre

1346 against Genoa, & had newly armed .34. galleis where-

fore

fore they of Genoa armed also.29. so that because they wold not meete togethers, they of Monaco wēt to serue Phillip the french kyng against oure kynge Edwarde the.iii. in whiche warres they had so good succesſe, that one galley of theim neuer retourned home agayne: but the other army of Genoa, vnder the leadyng of Simonde Vignioſo proſpered verey much. For after diuers enterpriſes atchieued in the realme of Naples, he entred into the Archipelago (otherwyſe called Mare Egeum) and there gat the ile of Sio, which in proceſſe of tyme hathe been occaſion of wonderfull gayne and wealth to the Genowaies, and beſydes that at the ſame time he gat the two citees called Foglie Vecchie.

Than renewed the warre betwene the Venetians and the genowaies, wherin were diuers battailles ſtricken, 1350 one before Conſtantinople, where the Venetians were diſcomfited, wyth the loſſe of.30. galleis: an other in Sardegnia, where the genowayes were diſcomfyted, with the loſſe of.41. galleis, and an other at the ile of Sapientia, where the Venetians loſt.40. ſayle, beſides dyuers others of leſſe importaunce.

¶ And though it ſeeme, that the Genowaies got moſte in theſe laſt warres with the Venetians: yet their gaine 1353 was ſo blouddy & coſtly, that in maner of neceſſitee they ſubmitted them ſelfes to John than archebyſhop and lorde of Myllayne. Under whom it continued ſcarce- 1354. ly.iii. yeres, but that the people (beynge offended wyth the taxes that the biſhop required of theim) reſtored Simonde Bocanegra to the eſtate of duke, whereof he had depoſed him ſelfe before: and he in recompence thereof, depoſed all the nobilitee, and gaue the offices amongeſt

the people. For whiche were dyuers conspiracyes wrought against hym: and (as some holde opinion) at length he was poysoned at a bankette made to the king of Cyprus, as he passed that way into Fraunce.

¶ Gabriell Adorno was made Duke next after hym, who continued the space of .v. yeres, till the people mislyked his rule, and by force deposing him, created Domenike di Campo Fregoso in hys roome. In whose time happened the businesse in Cyprus betwene the Venetians and Genowaies for goyng on the vpper hand, whych afterwardes was occasion of cruell warres.

1363

1370

1372

¶ It happened vpon the death of king Peter of Cyprus (who in the night was slayne by his brethern) that as his sonne Peter should goe to the cerimony of his coronacion, the Venetians and genowayes than presente, contended veray ernestly for the vpper hand, whych at length by order of the kynges counsaile was geuen to the Venetians, so that the genowaies, preparyng them selfes to be reuenged, were discouered, taken, & slayne, that of as manye as were in Cyprus, there escaped but one to bryng home newes of this mattier: whyche at length caused the destruction of that lande.

¶ For the Genowaies made out an army, and the same daye .xii. monethes, that they were beaten, they entred by force into Famagosta (the chiefe citee of cipryus) and toke all the nobylytee of the Realme. iii. of the chyefe they put to death, because they had been their enemies, and haunyng all the realme at theyr disposicion, they restored it to the yong king Peter, reseruing Famagosta to them selfes, with a trybute of .40000. Florines: whyche they enioyed vnto the yere of our lorde. 1464.

1373.

and

and besides that they brought diuers noble men & gentilmen of the cipriottes prisoners vnto genoa, amõgest whom was the kynges vncle Iames Lusigniano, who beyng kept in the tower Capo di Faro, begat a sonne called Jano, and was afterwardes kyng hym selfe. 1378

And albeit that Domenyke di Campo Fregoso (who for the space of .viii. yeres had ben duke) ruled the estate so well, that no man could iustly reprooue him, yet the inconstant multitude, with a little steryng of some that were great, made a commocion against him, and not onelye deposed hym, and put hym and hys brother Peter (general of the enterprise of Cyprus) in prison, but also banyshed all theim of the house of Fregoso: who for a greate space had ben notable ministers of the common wealth.

But this ingratitude of the people can be no wonder to theim that haue redde historyes. For it is almost ordinary with the people to render yll for good. Ingratitude of people.

Than was Nicolas di Guarco elected Duke: By whose tyme happened that notable warre betwene the genowayes and Venetians, wherin after dyuers fortunes and victories on both partes, the Venetians loked to be beaten oute of theyr houses. For the genowayes with helpe of theyr colleges so sore oppressed theyr power by sea, that they were driuen into theyr owne hauen, and Peter Doria came with the armye before the two castels at Lio, within two mile of Venice, so that if the Site of the place made not the citee impreuable: of likelihode the Venetians had been subdued. For they sent their ambassadours to peter Doria to requyre peace with large condicions, who (not beyng contented

to haue the honour with a reasonable aduantage) wold needes they should yelde theim selfes and theyr citee to be at hys discreacion. The extremitee of whyche aunswere made the Venetians so desperate, that straynyng their vttermost powers togethers, at length they discoumfited the genowaies army, slew Peter Doria, toke.xix.galleis, and moze than.4000.pzisoners: and so recouered Chiozza, with all theyr other places about theyr marisshes, that were befoze taken from them. And than encreased their courage so much, that Carlo Zeno, with certaine Venetian galleis, entred the riuer of Genoa, and helde the genowaies shozt, till by meane
1381 of the duke of Sauoye the peace was made betweene theim.

¶ Than died kyng Peter of Cypzus, whom to succede
1383 the barõs elected his vncle James, then pzisoner in genoa: who vpon aduertisement therof was not only put at libertee, but also (after great feastes and honoz) sent home with.x. galleis of the common wealthes: fyzst binding him selfe to certaine articles aswel foz the paiment of a yerely tribute, as also foz the citee of Famagosta, which remained in the genowaies possession.

¶ About this time were so many commociõs in the citee, foz chosing of theyr Dukes, that I thinke there was neuer so much alteracion of rulers in one cõmon welth foz the tyme. And because the rehersall thereof wolde occupie a greatter roume than my purpose doeth here allow: it shal suffice to saye, that as longe as the rule of the common wealth consisted in the wyll of the multitude, neuer was so inconstãt an astate as that of genoa. Foz amõgest other in the chaũge betwene Domenyke

di Cam-

di Campo Fregoso and Nicolas Guarco were.iiii. dukes in a day: Fregoso deposed in the morynge, and Adorno incontinentlye made, and at after noone Adorno deposed, and guarco made. Wherfore as superfluouse to treate of all the Dukes elections, I woulde henceforth speake no more of theyr chaunges, wythoute great cause.

¶ The Moores of Barbarie in this tyme scoured all the middle seas, robbing and spoiling all that euer they 1389
coulde take. Wherefore the Genowayes wyth dyuers others made suite vnto the Frenche kyng for an enterprise to be made against the kyng of Tunise. Whyche the French kyng graunted, and sent the duke of Bourbone as a generall, not onely wyth a greate power of Frãce, but also with aide that was sent him out of englade, in whose company the Genowaies sent. 40. galleis, and. xx. shyppes of theirs, vnder the leadynge of John Centurione. And theyr Chronicle maketh mencion, how our Englishe archers behaued them selfes at theyr landing in Barbarie so wel, that the Moores gaue theim place: wheras withoute theim the armye shoulde haue had muche adoe to lande. The ende of whyche iourney was, that the king of Tunise released all Christian slaues, whereof there were a noumber in hys realme, and payed the Christyans. 10000. duckates, with promyse to trouble the seas no more.

¶ From the yere. 1390. till. 1396. was so muche a doe 1396
for makyng and deposyng of Dukes, that Antoniotto Adorno had beene. iiii. tymes Duke, besides. viii. or ix. others, that had been put in and out the meane time, with so much bloudshed, burnyng, and spoilynge, that

at length

at length for verate desperacion the citee sent ambassadours to Charles the.vi. Frenche kyng, besechyng him to take the dominion therof into hys handes. Who at theyr requeste sent the Counte of saincte Paule, and the byshop of Meaux to be rulers there, and to receyue the
1397 fortresses into his possession, whych immediately were deliuered to them, & feaulty swozne by al the subiectes.
¶ The Frenche Gouernour had not been there fully a
1398 yere, but the sectes of Guelfes and ghibellines renued so sore, that after much burnyng, spoilyng and kylling in the countrey theraboutes, the ghibellines entred into the citee, and from the.xvi. of Julye, to the.v. of September fought daye by daye wyth the guelfes, and fortifiyng the one halfe of the citee, against the other, they neuer ceased, tyl bothe parties were tyred with the fury of theyr owne bloudde and flambe. For amongest their feightyng it was a common matter to set one anothers house on fyre: so that the losse that the common wealth susteigned in this rage, was esteemed much more than a myllion of golde.
¶ The bishop of Meaulx, than gouernour of the citee,
for feare of his owne lyfe, fledde in the myddest of this
1399 furye. So that whan it was past, the Frenche kynge sent thither in his stede one Collarde, a counsailour of hys, who by the Genowates was honourably receiued.
He gouerned not much more than a yere, but by meane
1400 of a new sect, called La Scorzola, he was faine to habandone the citee, leauing theim together by the eares after theyr old maner, feighting and burning amongest
1401 theim selfes day by daye: whiche ceased not, till the comyng of Boucicquart marshall of Fraunce, who being

the

the kynges lieuetenant, entred into genoa with a thousand souldiours, & incontinently proceded againste the seerrers of the common wealthe, causynge two of the chiefe of the citee Battista Boccanegra, & Battista de Frauchi, to be taken & brought to the palaice, & beheaded Boccanegra: vppon whose death the people began such a crie, that they whyche had the other in keppynge, lette him go: so that whan the rumour was past, Bouciquart in a greate rage, caused the chiefe officer of the wardes head to be stricken of, because thorughe hys mens negligence, happened the escape.

¶ Than did Bouciquart also fortifie the little castell, now called Castelletto, and put a garrison into it: and whan he had taken aswel from the men of the countrei as of the towne, all kynde of armure (they? swordes excepted) than spared he none of theim: But for euerye occasion of any importaunce, woulde behead the offendour without any respect to his qualitee or kinne: And his procedynges were such, that the French kyng confyrmed hym in that office for terme of life, to the greate contentacio of the citesins, who in his rigorous iustice founde greater ease, than in the sokte procedynges of the other gouernours: whose gentilnesse gaue liberte to the presumptuouse multitude to do what they wolde, whych was theyr owne destruction. 1402

¶ Than Iano kyng of Cyprus (who had been borne, bredde vp, & wel intreated in Genoa) laied siege to the citee of Famagosta, intēdyng to get it from the genowaies: but an army of. 18. saile was incōtinently made thither, vnder ỹ leading of Bouciquart, who not onely rayled the siege, but also constreigned the kyng to pay 1403

their charges, & atchieued diuers other enterpryses on the costes of Soria: neuertheless in hys retourne the Uenetians mette with hym, and puttyng him to flight, toke .iii. of his galeis: and yet was the mattier so handled, that the warre betweene the Uenetians and Genowaies ceassed for this tyme. In dede Bouciquart in his owne quarell defied the duke of Uenice, and Carlo Zeno, capitaine of the venetian galleis, to feight either hande to hande, or number for number, but he was not aunswered.

Bouciquart. This Bouciquart, for the space of .viii. yeres ruled the common wealth of Genoa, by whyche tyme the citee of Serezana, with the countre aboute came to the obedyence of the genowaies. Because they were of them selfes no more able to resiste the Florentines, and Bouciquart solde the common wealth, the Porte of Ligorno beside Pisa for .26000. dukates.

By his time also Benedict the .xii. Scismatike bishop of Rome, came to Genoa, and was there triumphantly receiued. And the office of S. George was than deuysed, whych endureth to this daye.

The Stotes also rebelled, in so muche that Bouciquart, with .vi. galleis went thither, and reduced them to their former obedience.

Finally couetyng to haue the ruler of the astate of Millaine, he made an armie of .6000. fostemen, and .5000 horsmen, & (not mistrustyng any alteracion in Genoa) passed the Freicte into Lumbardye. But the meane while the people murmured against him, & at last rebelled and slew all the Frenchmen they could finde within the dompnyon, and than receyued the Marques of

1409.

Monfer-

Monferrato, wyth a certayne power of men into the citee, who was made capitayne & pzesidente there, with a stipend of 15000. pound by the yeare. So that whan Bouciquart wolde retourne, it was to late. For than the Genewaies wouldе bee no longer subiectes to the Frenche kynge.

¶ The Marques continued not fullye .iiii. yeares, but they rebelled, and expulsed hym out of theyr dominyon, partly by force and partly by agreement. For they gaue him. 24500. ducates for the restitucion of those townes and fortresses that he had of theyrs in hys handes. And than fell they to a newe order with the election of a Duke much after their olde maner: so that George Adorno was made duke for that time. 1413

¶ And albeit there could no fault be found in him, for he was a good iusticer, and a man endued with muche humanitee, yet was he scarce .iii. yeares in that office, but Battista Montaldo conspired agaynste him. Wherof folowed so muche ciuile warre betwene parties in the citee, that there were aboue. 100. men slaine, and that many of the best sort, and. 146. houses burned, spoiled and destroyed: and so muche hurte done besides, that it were to lamentable to tell. 1415

¶ Finally both parties weeried, they fel to agremente: so that george Adorno willingly renounced the estate of duke, and Barnabas di Goano was elected in hys steede. Who within the space of a yeare was also deposed, and Thomas Di Campo Fregoso made Duke in hys place.

¶ This man immediatelye after his election, to get the 1416
loue of the people, dysbursed. 60000. ducates of hys

owne, to the releefe of the common wealth: whyche at that tyme was farre in debte. And yet for all that the common wealth was brought to such powertee, by their one ciuile sedicion, and resisting duke Phillyp of Millaine, who than made sharpe warre vpon them, that for verey necessitee they solde the porte of Ligorno to the Florentines for. 120000. duckates.

And to encrease their calamitee kyng Alfonse of Aragone (goyng out of Spaine to gette the realme of Naples) landed in Corsica vpon the genowaies dominion and there besiegeyng Bonifacio put them to no smalle charge in the rescue thereof: wherein surely the Genowayes bare theim selfes wonderful valiauntelye, notwithstandyng that by their continual warres specially against the Duke of Millaine, they were brought to suche powertee, that they were fayne at last to submitte them selfes to the duke of Millayne, and in recompence 1421. of the deposyng of their owne duke, gaue him 30000. Florines, with the lordeship of Serezana. Than was 1421 capitaine Carmigniola made ruler of the citee for the Duke, in whose tyme an armie was made out into the realme of Naples against kyng Alfonse, vnder the leadyng of Guido Totello, who by composicion toke the cities of Gaetta and Naples, and dyd so much, that the Spaniardes forsoke the realme, and so had the duke of Millaine his purpose there, though he vsed it but easely for by faire entreatie he restored to Queene Johan, all that the Genowayes had gotten from hir. Besides that the Duke suffered the common wealth to decay, by reason that dyuers (partely by his appoynctmente, and partly by his consent) occupied certaine townes & pos-

sessions

sessions to their owne vses, whyche before belonged to the commynaltee. Wherewith the genowayes were muche offended, thoughe for that tyme they durste not sturre.

¶ And albeit that the genowaies serued hym notablye 1431
in his warres againste the Venetians, specially in the cõflicte betwene them on the riuer of Po, nere to Cremona, where the Venetians receiued a great discomfiture: yet whan the Venetians made warre againe vpõ the Genowaies, onely to be reuenged of their losse on the Po, Duke Phillip nothyng ayded the genowayes: so that the Venetians discomfited their army before the church of sainct Fruttuoso, where the Venetians toke viii. galleis: and pursuyng their victory, seeynge the genowiaes scarce able to arme theim, and the ile of Scio vndefended, made thither: and gaue diuers assaultes to the citee, thinkyng to gette it. But the Sciotes, wyth helpe of a few Genowaies that they had there, defended theim selfes so valiauntlye, that the Venetians were faine to retire with great losse of their men.

¶ Than retourned kynge Alfonse of Aragone into the 1434
realme of Naples, and besieged Gaetta, to the rescue wherof Blasio d'Asseretto was sente, wyth. xv. sayle, and not fully. 3000. men: who mette and foughte wyth the king. the forest battaile that hapned in those dayes, for so small a noumber. For the kynge set on the Genowaies armye with double the noumber of men, and with great aduauntage of shippes and galleis, yet dyd the genowaies so obstinatelye feight it oute, that of the kynges part they slew aboue. 5000. and toke the king with his. ii. brether, a noumber of dukes and Erles,

and aboue.200.knightes prisoners,with so much spoile of golde,siluer,iewelles, and other treasure, that the lyke booty had not lightlye been heard of: All whyche they brought in sauetee to Genoa:sauynge the kynges person,whiche by the duke of Myllaynes commaundement was had to Sauona,and from thense to Millaine were he was not entreated as a prisoner,but at length not onely without raunsome,but also with great presẽtes set at libertee,and that without the genowaies consent,whyche with diuers other vnkyndnesses and iniuries dooen to theim by the duke,caused the Genowaies to retourne to theyr owne wonted wylles, so that thorough procurement of Frances Spinola,ỹ whole citee 1436
was in armes,and expulsing and sleaynge all the Dukes ministers,toke on them theyr old liberty,and made Thomas di Campo Fregoso Duke againe,who continued in the same aboute.vi.yeares. In whyche tyme Raynolde Duke of Angio (that claimed the realme of Naples)came to Genoa, and was not onelye well receiued there,but also aided with certaine armed galleis towardes his enterprise,and Nicolas Fregoso sent for capitaine with him:by whose helpe he gatte the Castel Nouo in Naples,and so muche prospered otherwaies, that it was a great whyle doubted,who shoulde enioye the realme,either Raynolde, or kynge Alfonse. But at last Rainolde for lacke of men and money was faine to leaue the enterprise,so that the genowaies retourned without any recompẽce of their great charge(sustayned in that quarel. And than was king Alfõse in theyr taile 1442.
by sea:so that they were no sooner vnarmed, but that he ouerranne all the Genowaye costes. The like wher-

of did

ofdyd the Duke of Myllaine by lande: and so was the comunon wealth in maner besieged on both sides.

¶In the middest wherof beganne a conspiracie against the duke, who was deposed and Rafael Adorno setled in hys place. 1443 Than peace was obteined of kynge Alfonse vpon certaine condicions, as the necessitee of the time would allow: amongest whiche one was, that the Genowaies shoulde yerelys sende hym a basen of golde as a present, or rather as a tribute, as he toke it. 1444

¶Rafael Adorno beyng persuaded, that the common wealth should amend, if he renounced the Duchie, lefte it willyngly. Wherupon Barnabas Adorno toke vpon him: but Janus di Campo Fregoso entred by nyghte into the citee, and deposing Barnabas by force: toke the astate vpon him, and died within two yeres. 1447

After whom succeded Lewys Fregoso, and after him Peter Fregoso. In whose tyme the dominion of Corsica, with the profittes comyng out of Caffa, and oute of the other places, subiect to the genowaies in the east, were all conuerted to the magistrate of sainct George: and the citee of Pera against Constantinople (whyche apperteined before to the genowaies) was yelded to the Turke, whan Constantinople was gotten. 1454

¶John duke of Angio, sonne to the forenamed Raynolde, came this yere vnto Genoa, where by accorde of the citesins, he receiued the citee into the domynyon of the frenche kyng, and therupon toke their feaultes. But than came king Alfõse before the hauen with a notable army, & so fore streigned the citee by siege, that if death had not taken hym the rather out of the waye, he muste needes haue gotten it. Wheras his death vnlocked for, 1458

caused

caused the whole armys to skatter here and there: by reason whereof the Genowaies were delyuered, euen whan they despaired of all mercy, knowyng how much the kynge was bent to their destruction.

Than incontinently they made out an army in fauour of Duke Iohn towardes the recouery of the realme of Naples, whiche did hym notable seruice, thoughe in effecte his purpose proued not.

¶ This meane whyle Peter Fregoso, that had been Duke, keepyng the power of the citee wel dated by sen-
1459 dyng out of this armie, made a power, and imageninge howe he myghte recouer his astate, entred the citee by nyght. But this Duke Iohn with the citesins resisted, fought with hym all nyght and a part of the daye, and at last repulsyng his men, by chaunce locked hym with a few moe within the gates, where at last he was slaine and some of his alies and confederates taken and beheaded.

1490 ¶ But Duke Iohn after this victorie rested not long, til the commons beganne to contende for paiemente of taxes, and findynge faulte with the burdeine that was laied vpon theim, toke their weapons in hand, and constreigned the duke with all his frenchemen to flee into the Castell. Where they besieged him: and than made Prospero Adorno theyr duke: so that Raynolde, father vnto the besieged Duke (wyth helpe of the frenche kynge) made a great army by sea and lande, and came to Genoa, where he was well fought withall, discomfited, and lost. 2500. men: so that the Genowayes remained in theyr libertee: and yet were the ennemies no sooner retyred, but ciuile sedicion sprange vp amongest them

theim within the citee. For the Duke Adorno coulde not be cõtented to suffer the Fregosi to tarie within the citee, wherupon either of them made what power they coulde: And the Fregosi hauynge the better hande, expulsed Adorno, & made one of theyr owne name Duke.

¶ This ouerthrow was so displeasaunt to the Frenche kyng, that keping Sauona a certaine space in his handes, and seeyng the maintenaunce therof ouerchargeable for hym, gaue it vnto Fraunces Sforza than Duke of Myllayne, withall hys ryghte vnto the estate of Genoa. Wherupon Sforza sente an armye thither vnder the leadinge of Gasparo di Vicomercato, and easelye obteined the dominion of the citee, by reason that paule Fregoso, than bothe Duke and archebishop of Genoa, fledde without makyng any resistence, knowynge that the people hated hym for his great tyrannie. 1462 1464

¶ Thus Gasparo beynge in the dukes name placed in the rule of the citee, the genowayes sente .xxiiii. of their chiefest citesins in ambassade to Myllayne, to gratifye the duke: that amiably receiued them. And glad were the genowaies, that they had gottē him to be theyr lord because the good gouernaunce of hys owne subiectes made them to hope for like wealth and rest: as it proued in deede. But he lyued not fully .ii. yeres after.

¶ Than succeded his sonne Galeazzo: In whose tyme the Turke gatte the citee of Caffa, with dyuers other townes in the east parties, appertaynyng to the genowayes: Which was not onely a great hyndraunce to theyr wealth, but also to theyr reputacion. 1466 1475.

¶ And because this Galeazzo shewed hym selfe somewhat vnthankeful to the Genowaies (beyng in deede a wilful yonge man) therefore the people murmoured a-

gainſt him, ſ ones rebelled by procurement of Ieromē
1476 Gentile: whych neuertheleſſe without much a doe was
pacified: ſo that Galeazzo continued lorde therof tyll
he was ſlayne in Millaine throughe a conſpiracie made
1477 agaynſt hym. As in the Milaneſe hiſtorye appeareth.
But incontinently vpon hys death the commons aroſe
againe, and expulſing the gouernour therfore the duke
toke a new order for the rule of their common wealth.
Wherfore incontinently a great armie was ſent from
Millaine, whiche by the helpe of the Adorni, with theyr
partakers diſcomfited Obietto di Fliſco, with ỹ comy-
nyalſee, and ſo beyng entred into the citee, Proſpero
Adorno was eſtabliſhed, as the duke of Millains lieu-
tenaunt there. But he continued ſcarcely one yeare,
tyl by meane of new practiſes, that he held with Ferdi-
1478 nando kyng of Naples, he was had in ſuſpition to the
Milaneſe: who willynge to depoſe hym, rayſed a new
commocion of the people, ſo that where he was before
the dukes lieutenaunte, now he was made gouernour
abſolutely of the commen wealth. Wherupon a new
armye was ſente from Millayne to Genoa, and there
foughte wythall, and ſo diſcomfited, that of .15000. men,
whyche departed from Millaine, retourned not fully
3000. the reſt, ſome were ſlaine, but the moſt part tak-
This battaile being thus atchieued, the genowaies had
no rather recouered their liberties, but that their old ci-
uile ſedicion renewed. For the Fregoſi could not ſuffer
the Adorni to rule, wherefore within the citee they fell
together by the eares. And albeit that for a ſeaſon the
Adorni preuailed, yet at lēgth they were oppreſſed and
conſtreigned to flee, and Battiſta Fregoſo made duke

after their olde maner, wha the .iiii. were after hys election was deposed by the procurement of cardinal Fregoso, and the Cardynall made Duke in his steede, by whose tyme the Florentines made warre agaynste the Genowaies, and gat from them the townes of Serezana and Pietra Santa, whych with the countreis about theym, were of notable importaunce to the common wealth. But it is no meruaile, though the Florentines preuailed: For the genowaies were at that time habandoned of all the affaires aboute them. Whereas the Florentines were in leage with the bishop of Rome, wyth the Venetians, and diuers others. 1483. 1487

Than were the commons so wery of the Cardynalles rule, that Obietto Fliſco, vpon comfort therof, entred by nyght into the citee, and after much fight and longe contencion, made the Cardinal to renounce: so that the citesins (remembring how they were best in quiet, whã they were subiectes to the Duke of Millaine) returned of newe to be vnder the Millanese dominyon: and than was Antony Adorno made gouernoure of the citee for the duke. By whose time truce was taken with the florentines, to the genowaies disauauntage: and Charles the .viii. Frenche kynge was ayded by the genowayes towardes the winnyng of the realme of Naples, but in his retourne thense, they not onelye discomfited a good parte of his army by lande, but also toke .x. galleis, and a great gallion, that were retournynge into Fraunce from the kings sayd enterpryse of Naples. Wherupon diuers townes that before rebelled agaynst the commõ wealth, retourned thã vnto them, as Wintimiglia with others. And Serezana was boughte of the Castellane 1488. 1495. 1496

there for. 25000. ducates.

¶ The emperour Maximilian came also to Genoa and was there honourablie receiued.

1499 ¶ This time was Lewys, surnamed Moro, Duke of Millaine, and sins the last submission of the astate of genoa vnto the duke, the house of Adorni had borne al the rule. And because they had persuaded the common wealth to aide the duke against the french kynge with 1000. men payed for. iii. monethes; therefore whan the frenche kynge had chaced the duke from Millayne the citesins toke occasion to expulse the Adorni, & sente ambassadours to kyng Lewys the. xi. thā being at Millaine to offer them selfes to him: who amiably receiued them, and made hys cousen Philip of Cleues their gouernour, who with. xviii. saile French and Genowaies

1501 together, toke his viage towards the enterprise of Meteline, to the whych the Venetians also sent. 34. galleis But they returned al without atchieuing their purpose

1502 ¶ Than came kyng Lewys to spouse him at genoa, and makyng greate preparation to receiue him, the nobles contended with the auncientes of the commons, who should goe before, whyche for that time was iudged by Rocabertino, liuetenaunt for the gouernor, that they should goe by age, and nother by bloud nor dignitee.

1504 And albeit that this contencion was appeased for that time, yet for this & other light causes there grew suche hate betwene the nobilite and commons, that at length the multitude arose, and constreignyng the gentylmen to flee oute of the citee, spoyled and robbed dyuers of theyr houses.

¶ Upon knowlage of whych rumour, the French king

sente

sente the gournour thither. Who with .150. horse and 750. footemen entred the citee, thinkyng wyth his presence and power to appresse the peoples fury.

Than Aloise di Fliſco, with moſt part of the nobilitee had assembled a power, and were come to Quarto, in hope by the gouernours meanes to be reconsyled. But than beganne the Artisanes, with the rascal of the citee (whych for their poouertee were called Capette), to assemble together in companies, some of oure ladye, and some of saincte John Baptiſt, with other lyke, and so to renne about doyng infinite harmes, that the gouernor durſt no more offer to beare any auctoritee. For they made them viii. rulers by the name of tribunes, against whom no man myghte speake, so that the gouernour, seeyng his auctoritee cleane taken from him, departed.

A little before whose departure kyng Ferdinando of Spaine, with .x. galleis and .vii. foystes entred the hauen, and tarlyng there a daye, departed on hys way to Naples.

Than dyd they of the citee sende .iiii. ambaſſadours to the Frenche kynge, who scarcelye would loke upon theim: beyng determined by force to chaſtise them, and therfore sente commiſſion to the Caſtellane that kepte the Caſtelletto, to domage the citee all that he coulde, who therupon secretly made an iſſue (whan he knew he should finde the chiefeſt in the church of. S. Frances) and toke a number, and ledde them prisoners in to the caſtell, where for their raunsomes the capitayne gatte aboue .10000. duckates. But that letted him not from the execution of his maiſters commaundemente, for he neuer ceaſed, but shot of all maner of artillery into the

citee and into the hauen, to the greate terroure and annoyaunce of the people.

¶ Yet for all that these rascall Capetoo were so obstynate in theyr rebellion, that wyth helpe of theyr newe tribunes they made them a duke, one Paule da Noue a dier of sylke.

1507 ¶ And tyough that the Cardinal Finaro, wyth dyuers of the best citesins, did what they could by counsaile to cause the people to submitte theim selfes to the frenche kyng (who than newly was entred with an army into Lumbardy) yet would they neuer stowpe, tyll the frenche kynge with his owne armie, and with suche power as the nobilitee of Genoa could make, came before the citee: where the commons made a little resistence, but at length he entred in armes, made hys armye to passe thorough the citee, putte dyuers of the principall offenders to death, receyued homage of the citesyns syttyng in his magistree, placed the nobilitee in their accustomed dignitees, burned the bokes of couenauntes, in steede wherof he graunted them some priuileges, made them pay. 200000 crownes for his costes, & 40000. to the buildyng of a fortresse at Capo di Faro, encreased the garrison with. 200. souldiours, & finally bound them to kepe. iii. galleis contynually armed at theyr coste and charge. And thus (to his semyng) establisshyng all thynges, retourned towardes Fraunce. And at Sauona was ouertaken by the king of Spaine, who in his retourne from Naples landed there to visite and salute the frenche kynge: that lykewyse receyued hym with solemne chere.

1510 ¶ After this the Genowaies rested scarcely. ii. yeres in

quiet

quiete vnder the French kynges dominyon (Radolfo de la Noi beynge gouernoure) but there sprong vp a companye in the citee called the scriche whyp of the towne, which berydened, that as the barell staues of the tunne were perfectly ioyned, so were they knitte togethers in one wyll. And these waxed so stoute, that they sente ambassadours to the frenche kyng, requiryng (amongest other thyngs) a change of their gouernour, whom they reputed to be an extortioner and a tyraunt. But they spedde not as they purpose.

The meane whyle the bysshop of Rome tempted an alteracion of the estate, in so muche that the bysshoppe of Vintimiglia came to the citee, to the entent to slea the gouernoure, and to make a commocion. And though he myst of his purpose, yet did the greate bishops purpose proue at length. For Iano Fregoso, with a certayne noumber of men sent from the bishoppes campe, entred the citee, without any resistence thoroughe the gouernours cowardly slighte. And beyng made Duke, forced the castell so sore, that the castellaine for 14000. ducates prided it. Nevertheless the Castell of Lanterne helde styll the Frenche, and was besieged of the Fregosi. But the Adorni rescued it: and by commyxt of the frenche kynges armye hys sonne entred the Citee: 1513.
Wherupon the Fregosi fledde, so that the estate returned frenche, and Antoniotto Adorno, by the kynges speciall commyssion was made gouernour.

¶ In whiche office he continued but 22. dayes. For assoone as the frenche nauie was departed (whyche by reason of the great discomfiture that the french kyng had at Nouara, could tary no longer) the Fregosi with

apos of

ayde of the kynge of Spaine, came so strongely to Genoa, that the Adorni with theyr parteners were fayne to geue place, than was Octauian Fregoso made Duke: so that wythin the space of one yeare, the estate of Genoa altered. iiii. tymes.

This newe Duke paied the Spaniardes, that had ayded hym. 80000. crownes out of the common treasure, 1514 and made Andrea Doria captaine of iiii galleis, and than besieged the Castel of the Lanterne, which for the quantitee was excellent fayre and strong. Neuertheles assoone as he had gotten it (by composicion paiyng 22000. duckates to the captaine) incontinently he rased it to the earth.

The Adorni, with the Flischi than conspyred against 1515 the duke, and with a certaine noumber of men sodeinely entred into the citee: Where they were not onelye foughten with, and theyr men repulsed, but also they theim selfes taken prysoners. Wherupon the Duke, seeyng the instabilitee of his estate, to eschewe further inconuenience, sent ambassadours to the frenche king, and yelded the citee to hym: and sent hym. 2000. footemen, whych did hym no small seruice in the battaile besydes Marigniano.

After the notable victorye wherein, this Octauian (beyng from the duke chaunged to gouernoure) wyth viii. other of the chiefest citesins, went to visite the frenche kyng at Pyllayne, and there lent hym. 80000. crownes towardes hys charges.

About this time Cortogoli a Turke, scoured the 1516 seas, and did muche hurte to the Christians, whereof an army was made out against hym, vnder the leading

of the

of the archebishop Fregoso, with Andrea Doria, and others: who sailed into the coste of Barbarie, and found xb. foystes, and certaine galleis of Cortogolies vnarmed before Biserti, whych they myght haue burned or brought awaye, if they had not tended to muche to the spoyle. For that by reason of a sodeine tempest they were driuen to forsake the costes, & returne home wyth out ought doinge.

The Cardinall Sauli (a Genowaie borne) was vpon suspicion empoysoned by Leo than bishop of Rome, and by his parentes raunsomed at. 25000. duckates: and yet for all that (it was thought) that determinate poyson was geuen hym in pryson. For within a certayne space after his deliuerance he sickened, and in lesse than a yere dyed. 1517. Poison that worketh not till a tyme.

The Noores of newe troubled the seas. Agaynste whom Andrea Doria went oute with. vi. galleis, gaue the on set on. ix. sayle of theyrs, whyche he discoumfyted with sore feight, and toke. vi. of them. 1519

All this while the faction of Fregosi ruled the citee vnder the frenche kynge. Wherefore the Adorni (who were than as banished men) armed. ix. galleis, thinking secretely to enter the citee, and to subuerte the astate. But they missed of theyr purpose. Neuertheleste they ceased not to prouoke the emperour against genoa, promisyng him large succours of theyr part: So that thorough theyr procurement, immediatlyafter the battaile of Bicocke (where the frenche campe was discomfited) the duke of Myllayne, the Marques of Pescara, the Signior Prospero Colonna, and the other imperiall capitaines, with. 20000. men came before Genoa, and 1521. 1521.

by force wanne & sacked it, and takyng the gouernoure Octauiã, with diuers others (whom they kepte as prisoners) after the departure of the armye, Antoniotto Adorno was made Duke. And so the cytee remayned
1524 imperyall. Adrian the.vi. elected bysshop passed that waye towardes rome: and the duke of Burbone wyth his bande came through to Genoa as he went to rescue Millaine than besieged of the frenche men.

¶ But the frenche kyng shortly after passed the mountaines in his owne person, and not onely recouered all that he had lost in Lumbardy, Pauia excepted, but also gatte Sauona and Varagine in the ryuer of Genoa.
1525 Wherefore Don Hugo da Moncada (afterwardes Vice Re of Naples) issued out of genoa with.xb saile, set.4000.men of the genowaies on land, thinkyng to gette Varagine, where he was mette with by Iocante Corso capitaine of the frenchemen, and the Genowaies beyng discomfited, hym selfe the Vice Re was taken prysoner. Shortly wherupon folowed the takyng of the french kyng at the battaile of Pauia, who in Maye after his taking was brought to Genoa, & from thense conueighed into Spayne.

¶ Than the bishop of rome with the Venetians entred
1526 in leage with the frenche kyng agaynst the emperour. And because the citee rested imperyal, therfore was an armie of.37.galleis made, that besieged Genoa by sea, to the rescue wherof the emperour sent the Vice Re of Naples out of Spaine with.xvii. saile, who encountred with.vi.galleis of Andrea Doria (that than serued the leage agaynst the emperoure) and foughte together, in which feight Andrew and his men behaued them selfes

so valy-

so valiauntly, that they sparpled the imperyal army abrode, and toke .ii. of their shyppes. For whyche valyaunt acte the emperour made hym admiral of his army and knight of his order, and shortly after in porto fino he toke .vii. galleis .iiii. of the citee, and .iii. of Spayne, so that the siege continewyng still, the citee suffered extreme famine. Wherfore partly by force Cæsar Frego 1527
so, with a bande of frenche men by land was receyued into the towne, and the citee deliuered vnto hym in the kynges name, without bloudde or spoyle (the duke Antoniotto Adorno beyng fledde into the castell) and than was Theodore Triulci Milanese made gouernoure therof. By whose time the Union began amongest the 1528.
citesins, for there had ben diuision of parties, fyrste the Guelfes & Ghibellines, than the nobles and commons, and the commons deuided in two, merchantes and artificers, and laste of all were the factions Adorni and Fregosi. So that as longe as these parties reygned, it was impossible the citee should prospere, seinge them dayly fall together by the eares as they dyd.

¶ Finally they all agreed to extinguish these diuisions, and elected, 28. families to be al nobles, amõgest whom the offices should renne in common & chaunge without nampyng any party, and so were they brought to accord that so many yeres before had continuallye contended.

¶ Than the french kyng sente a notable armye vnder the leadyng of Mounser Lautrech, to the siege of Naples, and because it should be besieged by sea and land: therefore Andrea Doria, armed. vii. galleis, whereof he made his cousen Philippino doria capitaine, and sent hym to Naples, where the Vice Re, wyth .vi. galleis is-

sued out and fought with him, but Doria prevailed, and the Vice Re was slaine, & the Marques of Vasco with dyuers others taken prysoners.

¶ Wherupon it seemed that the Frenche kynge wared unkynd as well to the common wealth as unto Andrea Doria. For first he suffred the citee of Sauona to be exempt from the subiection of Genoa, and furthermore to haue al maner of priuileges that genoa had with the custome of salte and other thynges, whyche at lengthe would be the destruction of Genoa.

And though the Genowaies made diuers complaintes herevpon, yet (as thoughe they were not regarded) no reformacion was had.

Than the french kyng had taken from Andrea Doria diuers of his prysoners, and amongest all others the prince of Orenge, and besides that had payed hym hys wages but very homely: so that whan Andrewe began to murmour against this, the kingwrought meanes to haue had him slaine: whyche comyng to his knowlage caused hym to dyspose hym selfe otherwayes, so that whan the tyme of his wages was expired, he bare a white baner, declaryng that he was at libertee to serue whom he wolde, and than after certaine practises with his prisoners, the Marques of Vasco and Ascanio Colonna, he became the emperours man, and was made prince of Melfi by reason whereof the citee began also to be moued against the kyng, remembryng his ingratitude. So that finally by meanes of Andrea Doria the French kings officers were licenced, his galleis by sea put to flighte, and some taken, & the citee restored to hir ancient libertee. Notwithstandyng that many thought Andrea Doria wolde haue taken the rule of it vnto him selfe.

Here-

Herevpon a counsaile was called, a new reformacion
established, a duke. viii. gouernours and. viii. protectours
chosen accordyng to the order that yet remayneth: and
the citee euer sens continued in peace, with increase of
so muche wealth and quietnesse, that at this howre she
may be reckened one of the happyest and richest cityes
of Europe.

¶ And albeit that some sterrynges haue bene sens that
time for alteracion of the astate, as the assaulte that the
Conte Guido Rangone made with. 10000. mē of the 1536.
frenche kinges brought out of Lumbardy, and the con- 1546
spiracy that the Conti di Fliſco made now of late (in
the which he him selfe was drowned, & Jannetine Do-
ria slaine) yet hath the citee persewered nowe these. 20.
yeres in one astate, much through the great wisedom of
Andrea Doria, who (refusing the dominion of it, whan
he might without difficultee haue taken it vppon him) Andrea
hath not only restored into the perfect libertee of a com- Doria.
mon welth, but also with his notable seruice in thempe-
rours affaires (as in hys viages to Tunise & Algier in
the rescue of Coron besieged of the Turkes, in defence
of Barbaroſſa hys armies the yeres. 37. and. 38. and in
oppressyng of the great rorsaires or pirattes by sea) hath
so maintesgned the imperyall fauour towardes the ge-
nowaies, that no man is able to hurt them at this day.
For though in dede they be not ỹ emperours subiectes,
yet whan any astate shoulde happen to moue warre a-
gainst them, it should wel appere, that he tendreth them
no lesse than as the deerest subiectes he hathe. For the
which they likewise at all times haue and yet doe serue
him for his money to the vttermost of their powers.

¶ The descripcion of Myllayne.

AMongest other peticuler astates of Italye, the Duchie of Myllayne hathe been one the most notable.

¶ For while the house of Visconti reigned, the same vallauntly maintened warres of great importaunce against most puissaunt princes and powers. And for the interest thereof, the notablest warrs of oure dates haue hapned betwene the emperour and the french kyng: in so much that fraunces the fyrst of that name, feightyng before Pauia against the imperyal armye (ledde by the Marques of Pescara, and the duke of Bourbone) was taken prisoner, and conueighed into Spaine: where for his raunsome, after a yeres imprisonmēt, he was faine to pledge his two sonnes, and consequently to marie the emperours syster, with other couenauntes to longe to reherse.

And no meruaile, though these two most mighty prynces of Christendome so much contended for this onelye astate. For thoughe in name (beynge but a Duchie) it should not seeme great, yet in verye deede bothe for the wealth of the countrey, and for the quantitee, the thing hathe been of as greate reputacion as some realmes of Europe. Oute of doubte there haue been some Dukes of Myllaine muche greatter in territorie, wealthier in reuenewes and treasure, more puissaūt in warres, and finally more honourable in peace, than diuers of theim that had kyngly tytles.

¶ As for the richesse and beautie of the countrey, I am

a feardeto speake of, least to hym that neuer sawe it, I shoulde seeme ouerlarge in the due prayspnge of it, and least vnto him againe that hath practised there, I shuld seeme vnwise to treate of that, that myknowlage is not hable woorthyly to set foorthe. Neuertheleſſe betwene feare and shame this much would I saye, that surlye an other peece of greund for beautiful citees and townes, for goodly riuers, fieldes and pastures, and for plentye of flesshe, foule, freshe water fishe, graine, wine and fruites, is not to be found againe in al our familiar regiõs. ¶ I thinke the emperour, that now is lord therof, woul confesse, that he draweth more mony yerely to his purse out of that onelye astate, that oute of some of hys realmes. And yet his Mylanese dominyon is not halfe so much at this present, as that that diuers dukes of Mylayne haue had. For wheras the emperour, beſydes the citee of Myllaine hathe nowe. viii. or. viii. citees, as Pauia, Lodi, Cremona, Alexandria, Vercelli, Nouara, and Como: Dukes of Myllaine haue had, some. xx. and some. xxx. Citees, and vpwardes. Yea and some so great, that they haue aspyred to the dominion ouer all Italie: as in the briefe history folowyng more plainely appeareth. Neuertheleſſe he that nowe shall happen to see the companye of noble men and gentilmen, that ar in waner continually attendaunte on the emperours lieutenaunte or deputie in Myllaine, shall saye, that the same representeth rather the court of some puissaunte kynge, than the traine of a deputie.

And I thinke verily, that Don Ferrando Gonzaga, now lieuetenant there, rideth many times more honorably accompanied, and with a greater presence of ma-

gistee,

Wyues of Millaine.

glitee, than the emperour him selfe doeth in Germany ¶ The like whereof with rather the more is to be sayde of the Mylanese gentilwomen, who in sumptuouse apparaile may compare with the best: spetiallye in the ornamentes of theyr Charlottes, with couerings of cloth of golde, of velluettes, of silkes, and a thousande sortes of embroderies. There is almoste no craftesmans wyfe in Myllayne, that hathe not hir gowne of silke, and hir chayne of Golde. A thyng that should seeme rather meruailouse than credyble. But the craftesmen there are so excellent in theyr doynges, and the women so experte in silke workes, that it is no wonder though their gayne grow to the biyng of gaye geare.

Myllayne Situate.

Finally the citee of Myllaine standyng in the herte of the pleasauntest and fayrest plaine of all Christendom, is serued of all delectable and necessarye thynges that are to be desyred for mans sustentacion. Honourable for the courte, gallaunt for gentilmen, herborough for souldiours, delicate for dames, riche for merchauntes, and wealthy for artificers. But for notable or sumptuouse buildynges, it maye not be compared with Venice, Rome, or Florence. For all be it, the houses be great and fayre within, yet outwardly it is nothing of that beautie and pompe, that those other citees bee: by reason that for the most part the Mylanese buildynge is all of bricke, because harde stone and marble is not to be had by a great waye of.

¶ Neuertheleste the Domo of Myllaine (beynge theyr Cathedrall church) is one of the rarest workes of oure time, built all of fine marble, so well grauen and cutte, that the workemanshyp is wonder. But it is of so

vnmea-

vnmeasurable greatnesse, that most men doubte, whether euer it woull be finished or not: thoughe it haue many thousande duckates of yearely reuenew in good land towardes the contynuaunce, and a noumber of workemen dayly labouryng theron.

¶ But what speake I of the churche, the castell of Myllaine being so neere: which in mine opinion is the worthiest and strongeste of all Europe. For it hathe warde within warde, fortresse diuided from fortresse, that one may holde against an other, walles of endlesse strength and large dyches wel watered, as fayre builte ouer all as nedeth to bee, and so well fortified, that without famyne it is impregnable. And this concernynge the countrey, citee and people of Myllaine in general, shal suffice. Castel of Myllaine

¶ The beginnyng and succesſe of the state of Myllayne.

AS Liuie and diuers other authors write, the yere before the compynge of Christe. 259. from the edyficacion of Rome. 460. and from the beginning of the worlde, 4860. in the tyme of Assuere, otherwyse called Cirus and Longimanus, sonne of Xerses, and nephewe to Dario kynges of Persie: The citee of Myllaine was rather augmented than newly builte by certaine frenchmen called Senoni or Insubrii, people of low Britaine, now called Semans, where likewyse is a towne called Myllayne. These were the frenchemen that fyrst passed the mountaines, and setled them selfes in Lumbardy, & that afterwardes went vnder the lea-

dyng of Brenne to rome, burned the cites, and beſieged the Campidoglio though at laſt they were diſcomfited ¶ Finally in proceſſe of tyme beynge becomen Mylaneſe, and made ſubiectes to the Romaynes, Amilcare the Affricane at his coming into Italy, perſuaded them to rebel, wherefore they were foughten with and twyſe ouerthrowen: firſte by Furio the Pretor, and after by Claudio Marcello, who in the later conflict ſlew Mago brother of Hannibal, with 37000. Affricanes and Milaneſe together: and therfore at hys returne vnto rome was receiued with triumphe.

Millaines name.

¶ Nowe wherfore it was called Millaine be two opynions, the one is, that it toke that name of the other Millaine in Brittaine: the other, by reaſon the forme of a farowyng ſowe halfe couered with woulle (ſignifiyng fattenelle) was found at the digging of the foundacion, they called it Milana, as who ſhould ſaye halfe woulle. But how ſoeuer the occaſion thereof proceded, I fynde that it had diuers names, as Subria Meſopia Paucētia, Alba, & Ercolea of Ercole, Maſsimino that furniſhed it with houſes, and cloſed it with walles: and alſo builded a temple in it to the honour of Hercules, which is nowe conuerted to be the churche of. S. Laurence. Thus after the tryumphe of Claudio Marcello, Mylaine encreaſed more and more, & reſted in peace about 500. yeres, beynge in maner the chiefe markette of all Italy. Inſomuche that many Romaines came thither, to dwell, and manye tymes the ſelfe Emperours came thither to ſolace. But at length, in the tyme of Saincte Ambroſe biſhop there, whan the ſect of Arrians began, it was ſomewhat troubled: and ſhortlye after deſtroyed

by kyng

by kyng Attila, called of the Italians Flagellum dei. Attila
¶ And albeit that it was after reedified, yet by Totila and the emperour Iustinians capitaines, it was for the more parte agayne and againe destroied. And by the Lumbards also it was many times sore vexed. But last 1162
of all Galuano, (who beyng taken prisoner by the emperour Barbarossa, by escape was retourned) seing afterwards the same Federico occupied with the french warres, reedified it of new, and dyenge without issue, left it to his citesins: who (with fauoure of their neyghbours) gouerned the same as a common wealthe, the space of. 52. yeres, tyl Giouanni Torrigiani, a principal citesin vsurped the dominion by force. giouanni Torrigiani. Tiranny

¶ This Torrigiani (as he that was cruell and desyrouse to make his astate durable) seigned daylye newe crimes and offences against his citesins, and specialye against the Visconti, to ridde them out of the way. And though he cloked his cruelitee with the best colour of iustice that he could imagine outwardelly, so that no man for feare durste withstande him, yet God takynge vengeaunce suffered hym to be discomfited, and slayne before Parma, where he had ben two yeres generall of the emperours army against the byshop of Rome.

Now vpon the death of Torrigiani, the Milanese began to contend amongest them selfes, so longe, that at last Martino Torrigiani toke the dominion vpon him, and kept it two yeres, in whych time beyng aduertised, that Ezelino, lord of verona, with many banished Milanese came in armes against him, he issued out into the field with his power, fought with Ezelino, hurte, and toke him prisoner, and so beyng victorious, and of the Martino Torrigiani.

age of.80.yeres,dyed at Souzino.

Phillippo Torrig

¶After hym succeded his sonne Phillippo,who beynge but weake herted and grosse witted,made neuertheless warre against the Tremonese,sacked Como,toke Bergamo and Nouara,and finally erpulsed the familye of Tornielli. After whych enterprises he died,leauynge the astate to his sonne Napoleone,that after happened to be slayne . Unto whom succeded hys sonne named Phillippo,that by meane of the archebyshoppe Ottone Uisconti was afterwardes erpulsed.

Napoleone

Uisconti

It is to be vnderstand,that before the time of Giouanni Torrigiani , the house of Uisconti was equall wyth the best of Millaine:beyng descended of the erles of Angiera,that before time had ben lordes of Millayne: for the name of Uisconti,was taken of Ottone Sonne of Elipandro,who by reason he was lord both of Angiera and of Millaine called him selfe Uisconte,as who shold say,twyse Erle.

Ottone

This Ottone being gone in a croisy with other princes to conquere the holye lande,fought there with a Saracine hande to hand,and ouercame him,and because the Saracine for his enseigne caried on his crest an adder, wyth a lyttel childe in his mouthe, Ottone as a perpetual memory of his victory, vsed the same euer after in hys armes.

¶But now to come to the purpose,aboute the yeare of grace.1262.there remained.iiii.bretherne of the house of Uisconti on liue,that is to wete , Ouone before nanamed, Vberto ,Iacopo,and Gasparo,sonnes of Vberto de Visconti.

Ottone Uisconti

¶This Ottone(the archebyshop being than a banished man)

man) through helpe of his kinsman Gregory byshop of Rome, by force expulsed oute of Millayne the foresayde Philippo Torrigiani, sonne of Napoleone, and finally became lorde therof: beynge afterwardes confyrmed in the same as vicare of the empire.

Within two yeres after Ramõdo Torrigiani bishop of Como, and Patriarke of Aquileia, retourned with a great army to dryue Ottone out, and did much hurt in the Milanese territorye. But at laste he receiued a sore discomfiture by Ottone, throughe helpe of the familyes of Duarosi & Palauisini, whyche houses together wyth those of Lampugnani (descended of the Gotti) and those of Pietrasanta (comen out of Tuscane) those of Pozzi, of Caimi, of Bossi, of Marliani, & of Triulsi, were al at that time most noble and puissaunt in Millaine.

After the death of Ottone, his brother Iacopo hauing a sonne named Tibaldo, and Tibaldo, a sonne named Matteo (who for his lucky courage and deedes was surnamed Magno) the reputacyon and state of the Visconti beganne to grow more and more. For this Matteo gat Alexandria, Pauia, Tortona, and many other townes. Matteo Magno.

Finally this Matteo putting Pietro Visconti in pryson (whom after he deliuered) beynge aduertised, howe the same Pietro conspyred with the chiefe of the Torrigiani, to dryue him out of his estate, & mistrusting his owne power to defẽd the same, committed the whole to Alberto Scoto, lord of Piacenza: and fledde him selfe into the marisches of the lake of Garda, where he lyued longe time of his onely labour of fishynge. He had. iiii. sonnes by his wife Bona Cosa, the fyrst named Gala-

azo(so called because in the nyghte of his birthe the cockes crowed moze than they were wonte)the seconde Giouanni,the.iii.Stefano,and the.iiii.Lucchino.

Galeazo. This Galeazo succeded his father, and goynge afterwardes with Henry the emperour to Rome,was there made capitaine of the lighte horsemen,and aboute that tyme begat two sonnes,the one called Azone, and the other Marco.His courage was so great,that whan the emperoure Lodouico di Baniera required a certayne summe of monsy of the Milanese,Galeazo withstode it. Upon displeasure whereof Lodouico toke hym prysoner,and banyshed his sonnes Azone and Marco. But at lengthe, at the instaunce of Castruccio Lucchese,Galeazo was deliuered. And finallye beynge in company of the same Castruccio at the siege of Pistoia sickened and dyed in the towne of Pestia.

Azone. After whose death Azone and Marco(for a certayne summe of money paied before hād) obteined of the emperour Lodouico the restitution of the state of Myllayne. And so Azone as elder brother hauynge the dominion, Marco in hys name gatte the citee of Lucca, and his uncle Lucchino the citees of Bergamo,Brescia and Pauia:wherby Azone became great, and so hyghe of stomacke,that remembrynge the iniuries doen to him by the emperour Lodouico:whan he wolde haue passed throughe Myllaine (as lorde of all Italye)he closed the gates against him:refusyng to accepte him for his better. Therefore not without good cause was he bothe feared and esteemed,specially for hys approued valyantnesse:for beyng sent of his father to helpe Castruccio,he fought with the florentines neere to Fucecchio,

discom-

discomfited, and pursued them euen to the gates of florence: and laying siege to the citee, remaigned there .i. del certayne daies, for no man durst issue out to meddle with him. Whiche was the fyrste enterprise of the Uisconti against the Florentines.

¶ After whyche Azone, throughe helpe of Castruccio, became lord of the Alco Pascio, and of Bologna: and as some say, beyng in the campe on a daye, after he had broken his fast: puttinge his sallet on his head (whyche before had lien on the earthe) there issued out an adder, that glyded downe alongest his face, without dooynge hym anye hurte: whereof it folowed, that the Uisconti bled the adder in theyr armes. And thoughe it so may wel be true, yet this seconde opinion of the adder doeth not so much satisfie me as the fyrst.

¶ Finally Azone dyyng without issue, his vnckes Lucchino and Giouanni rested in his place, and were confirmed in the astate by Benedetto the .xi. bishop of rome as vicares of the Churche: with condicyon, that after the death of the Emperour Lodouico di Bauiera, the state of Myllaine shoulde be holden of the dominion of the churche. Lucchino

Lucchino as elder brother, toke vpon him to gouerne, and proued a veray righteous and mercyfull man. He granted recōcilement vnto many of the citelins before tyme confyned by Azone: and buylded manye deuoute places in Myllayne. He gatte manye townes parte by force and part with loue, and in maner renued the walles of Bergamo at hys owne coste. He reformed many thynges in Bressa, and so finally dyed.

After him his brother Giouanni succeded, who incon- Giouanni.

tinently

tinently called home Matteo, Bernabo, and Galeazo, sonnes of hys brother Stefano, before time banysshed by Lucchino.

¶ And albeit, that this Giouanni was an archebishop, yet being more geuen to armes than to the church, thorough the valiantnesse of Galeazo he gat Parma, Lodi, Cremona, Bergamo, Genoua, Sauona, and manye other townes: and finally dyed, leauyng his estate dyuyded betwene Bernabo and Galeazo.

Bernabo

¶ This Bernabo held warre longe tyme with the byshoppe of Rome for the citee of Bologna, that together wyth Genoua had rebelled agaynste hym: and finally toke for Bologna a great summe of money, and forbare Genoa, because it had been before redemed at hys handes for the summe of. 600000. duckates. But some saye, he was enforced to lette it alone, by reason that in one selfe tyme he was troubled of the Romish legate, of Philippino di Gonzaga, and of Cane della Scala, for the thynges of Bressa, where he had been ones discomfited.

He had no wyfe one of the daughters of Mastino della Scala, a woman that for hir vnreasonable pryde was surnamed. La Reina, the Queene. And had by hir. 14. chyldren, whereof. iiii. were sonnes. To Lodouico the eldest he gaue the citee of Cremona. To Carlo, Parma: To Ridolfo, Bergamo, and to Mastino, Lodi.

¶ The rest beyng daughters he maried on this wyse.

La Verde, vnto Leupoldo duke of Austria, graundfather to the emperour Federico the thyrde.

La Taddea, to the Duke of Bauiera.

La Va-

La Valentina, to Peter kyng of Cypzus.
La Catherina, to Giangaleazo Uisconti his nephew
L'Antonia, to Federico kyng of Sicilia
La Maddalena, to the duke of Bauiera againe.
L' Agnesa, to Francesco Gonzaga.
La Lisabetta, to Ernesco duke of Monaca in Bauiera.

L' Angiolella, to Federico the younger: and La Lucia to Lodouico Duke of Angiers, eldest sonne to the Frenche kyng. And after to Baldasar Marques of Pisna, and finally to Edmond, Erle of Kente, sonne to the kyng of Englande. And with the maryage of euerie of these daughters he paied an. 100000. duckats.

¶ Besides these he had. iiii. bastarde daughters, Bernarda, Ricciarda, Lisabetta, and Margherita. And fiue bastarde sonnes, Ambzosio, Nestoze, Lancilotto, Galeotto, and Sagramozo.

¶ On the other syde Galeazo begatte on hys wyfe Bianca, daughter of Amone duke of Sauoie, a sonne named Giangaleazo, and a daughter named La Uiolante whiche afterwardes was maryed to Lionell Duke of Clarence, and sonne to the kynge of Englande. At the sumptuouse feaste of whose maryage Petrarcha happned to be presente. How be it, some haue wzitten, that she was maried to the Frenche kynges sonne, with the dower of an. 100000. crownes. But how so euer it were, hir husband lyued not passyng fiue monethes after the mariage, and shortlye therevpon the father Galeazo also dyed. Galeazo.

¶ After whose death his sonne Giangaleazo growen to sufficiēt yeres diuided the state with his vncle Bernabo Giangaleazo.

on this maner. He kepte to hym selfe Paula, Tortona, Alexandria, Nouara, and the other townes neere vnto the Alpes, with the one halfe of Millayne: and gaue vnto Bernabo Parma, Piacenza, Cremona, Lodi, Crema, Bergamo, Como, and the other halfe of Millayne, with this aduauntage: that for as muche as Bernabo was the more auncient, he shoulde dwell in Millayne, and Giangaleazo in Paula. Thus beynge agreed after a certaine time Giãgaleazo was aduertised by his wyfe, how Bernabo hir father & hys vncle, had dyuers tymes sought his death, to ridde hym oute of the state: so that Giangaleazo incontinentlye determined to preuente hym, and goyng vnto Millaine vnder pretence of pastime or of some other busynesse, Bernabo (to honour hym the more) issued out against him, and so was taken died in prison, and parte of his sonnes slayne, parte banyshed. Whyche acte onely excepted (thoughe it was not yet all agaynst reason) this Giangaleazo in all hys doynges was accompted so worthy, noble, and valiaunt a prince, that of the people he was called. Il Conte di Virtu, that is to say, The Erle of vertue. For he was not onely beautifull of personage, but also learned, eloquent, wise, hardy, & liberal And was the first that euer was inuested duke of Millayne, payng therefore to the emperour Vinceslao an. 100000. duckates. After the obteinyng of this honour he encreased his estate by the getting of Verona, Vicenza, Padoa, and Bologna.

He discomfited the armies of the leage made betwene the Florentines & Bolognese with other their confederates at Casalecchio, & brought the Florentines at length to that taynge, that had he not died the rather,

they

they muſt nedes haue yelded to bene his ſubiectes.
He ouercame Antonino della Scala, and buylded the fayre palayce in Pauia, with that goodly libzarye, that yet is ſeen there, walled the parke aboute, beynge of a great circuite, and edified the Charterhouſe, that to this houre amongeſt the beautiful buildynges of the wozld, may be rekened one of the rareſt.

He brought Italy into ſuch feare, that the Piſani, the Seneſi, the Perugini, the Aſceſiani, and the Luccheſi willyngly became his men, ſo that he founde hym ſelfe lozd ouer. 29. citees, and thought to haue bene kynge of Italy, if death had not ſo ſone taken hym.

He had two wifes, the one called Liſabetta, doughter to the kyng of Boeme, by whome he had a doughter named la Valentina, maried afterwardes to the duke of Orliens, with the dower of the Eriedome of Aſte, that hath ben cauſe of no ſmall trouble in Italye: and the otherwife named Caterina de Viſconti, by whom he had two ſonnes Giouanni, and Philippo Maria.
He had one baſtarde called Gabriello, who afterwardes ſolde Piſa to the Flozentines.

Finally this notable pzince at Parignano dyed: and 1402
accozdyng to his owne ozder was from thenſe caried to the ſayd Charterhouſe beſides Pauia, and there buried.
Than ſucceded in the aſtate Gianmaria the eldeſte Giouanni Maria.
ſonne, whoſe dealinges were ſo greuouſe to the Milaneſe, without any their deſeruing, that bearynge maſſe on a day in the churche, throughe the furye of the people and of his owne men together he was ſlayne, firſt cauſyng his mother to die in pziſon, foz ofte warnyng him of that that happened in dede.

He was wonte to ſay many times (in excuſyng of his errours) that in a greate houſe it was neceſſarye there ſhould growe men of diuers ſortes, and that he therfore vſed the cõtrary of his fathers doinges, ſo that through his cruelte and his death together, many citees rebelled, in ſuch wiſe that the Milanese were conſtreigned to cal the ſonnes of Bernabo to the Douchy, who enioied the ſame butyl that Philippo maria recouered the do-
1433 minion, and driuing them out mette with one of theim called Neſtore in a ſkirmiſh, and ſlewe hym.

This Philippo was firſt lord of Pauia, and had ma-
Philippo Maria ried Beatrice the doughter, or (as other ſay) ſometime wife of Fazino Cane della Scala: for none intent but becauſe ſhe was enheritour of many fayre lordeſhippes beyonde the Po, and had alſo very much money. By meane wherof fleayng Crabrino lord of Verona he gat that citee to hym ſelfe.

He was conſtreigned to yelde Bologna, Furli, and Imola to the byſhop of Rome. Neuertheleſſe he gatte Genoa, though afterwardes he loſt it agayne.

He lykewiſe toke Brella, whych beyng recouered againſt him by the venetians, cauſed betwene them very longe and cruell warre. Wherein on the Venetian ſide were capitains Frãceſco Carmighuola, Giouãni Malauolta, Gianfranceſco Gonzaga, and Nanni Strozzi, a Florẽtine knyght. And on the ſide of Philippo agaynſt the venetians were Franceſco Sforza, Agnola da Pergoletto, the one and other Nicolo Guerriero e Piccinino, e one Fierauãte da Perugia, with the helpe alſo of Alfonſo kynge of Naples, who beynge before tyme brought priſoner to Philippo by the genowaies, and by

hym reſtored to lybertee: lyke a faythfull friende (for a great whyle after) ſuccoured hym in al his buſineſſe.

¶ Thus whan Philippo had finyſhed the enterpryſe agaynſt the Venetians, and by meane of thoſe his cappytaines gotten Placenza, Como and Lodi, he made the Marques of Monferrato ſo afearde of hym, that wyllyngly he yelded vnto Philippo's hand: Vercelli, Alexandria, and Aſte. And Nicolo da Eſte of Ferrara came to viſite him, renderinge Parma, that before had ben taken from Ottone, and knowlageynge hym ſelfe to holde the citee of Reggio in fee of Philippo.

The citee of Florence fearyng the power of this man, entred in leage with the Venetians, whoſe two armies vnited togethers were foughten withall by certaine of Philippo's capitaynes, in the Countie of Farenza, and there ouercomen.

¶ Notwithſtanding that the ſame victory was of much leſſe importaunce, than that which the noble florentine Coſmo di Medici obteigned in the plaine of Anghiari againſt the armye of Philippo, led by Nicolo Piccinino, towardes the florentine damage: for the whyche victory Coſmo at hys retourne to Florence was called father of hys countrey.

¶ But for all that thoſe warres had neuer ende as long as Philippo lyued: who finally fell oute wyth the forenamed Alfonſe kynge of Naples, and by force reſtored the Queene Gionanna to hir poſſeſſion.

He receiued into Myllayne Martine the .v. bythoppe of Rome, as he retourned from the counſayle of Conſtance: and maried his daughter Bianca vnto Franceſco Sforza.

¶ Finally findyng hym selfe fallen in great aduersites what throughe blindenesse that toke hym in his age, what through the losse of Genoa, and what through the discomfiture of his armye at Casale Maggiore: In folowyng the victory wherof the Venetians had alreadie passed the riuer of Adda, and scoured the countrey euen to the gates of Mylaine, he at lasse a litteli before his death, bequethed his estate by testamente vnto the kyng Alfonso, as to one the dereste friend he had.

Philippo Maria described.

¶ This Philippo had ben a prince of a subtill nature, wittie, a louer of trauayle, couetouse to learne and to haue, and yet liberal in geuyng, easie of pardoning, but suspitiouse oute of measure, & so lighte of credence, that many tymes he wrongefully ridde oute of the waye the deereste frendes he had. Whereof it folowed, that in his moste businesse he founde him selfe vtterly habandoned, leauyng the state of Mylaine in maner naked.

For the duke of Orliens in the righte of his wyfe Valentina, daughter of Giangaleazo, enforced hym selfe to atteine the possession, whych the emperour Federico for his parte in tytell of the empyre denyed.

But Francesco Sforza, as sonne in lawe of the deade Philippo, withstode them bothe, insomuche that thorough this rumour the Mylanese rent the testament in peeces, and toke on them theyr libertee, electynge.xii. men to diuise order for the gouernaunce of theyr cities, wherevnto they had the helpe of Carlo Gonzaga, who beyng lately departed from the campe of Sforza, was present in Mylaine the same time. And so the new officers beyng ordeyned, there were manye of those nobles slaine, that were knowen fauourable to ỹ part of Fran-

Testament broken

cesco

cesco, whose power & courage the Mylanese feared muche more thã the puissance of france, or of themperour. Francesco Sforza

¶ The father of this Francesco, named Mutio, was borne besydes the castel of Cotignuola: and folowyng the warres fyrst serued the souldiours with carryng of woode and water. Than gettyng a little with sackynge here and there, became so strong and hardy, that many tymes he would by force take the bootie from his owne companions, and therfore was called Sforza. Mutio father to Frauncys Sforza

¶ From whyche base condicion he beganne to ware an aduenturer, and to feight on horsbacke, so that finallye he became a capitaine: and in short space was iudged equal vnto Braccio Montone, the valiauntest and honourablest general of those dayes.

¶ But at last (after he had long time serued the Quene Giouanna againste kinge Alfonse in the Realme of Naples, and in other places dooen manye notable enterprises) couetyng to saue a lakey in the riuer of Pescara, he was drowned hym selfe, and coulde neuer after be found nor heard of.

¶ Than was this Francesco his sonne fyrste waged of the forenamed Queene, and after the Venetians, than of Philippo, and after Philippo of the Mylanese agaynste the Venetians, and lastlye of the Venetians agaynste the Mylanese. In all whyche doynges as well in the realme, as in Lumbardie, he euermore shewed great proufes of his worthinesse: and at last with helpe of the Venetians came against Myllaine and besieged it. Insomuche that after longe resistence, constreigned with hunger, & deceyued of theyr promysed helpe from the Venetians, the Mylanese (fyrste sleayng the Venetian

tian ambassadour) accepted Francesco for theyr prince. Who not longe after (stablishyng the thynges of Mylaine at his pleasure) made warre to king Alfonso, and to the Venetians bothe: in whiche warres he was serued of these valiaunt capitaines, Tiberio Brandolino, Nicolo Guertiero, Dolce dell' Anguillara, Carlo di Cãpo Basso, and Iacopo Piccinino, whyche Iacopo was promised to haue to wife his daughter Drusiana, before time maried vnto Iano Fregoso duke of genoa. How be it, the duke Francesco afterwardes for suspycion caused this Iacopo to be slayne.

¶ Aboutes the same time, whilest Eugenio bishoppe of rome was occupied at the counsaile of Basile, Francesco (as hys enemie) attempted to take the state of Marca from hym. And there kept warre longe time wyth kyng Alfonso, whom the sayde byshop had sent thither against him: where they saye Francesco was defied by Nicolo Piccinino, & beynge chalenged to feight hande to hande, would in no wyse accepte it. That notwythstandyng he was vndoubtedly a worthy man of armes, the most happie and valiaunte of all other in hys tyme. For in those .xvi. yeares, that he reigned Duke, he in maner extinguished the sedicion of the parties of Guelfi and Ghibellini, insomuche that the Genowayes fallen in discorde amongest theim selfes, seeyng the good gouernaunce of this duke Francesco, with the louing entertainemẽt of his subiects, willingly embraced him for theyr lorde. He loued muche Cosmo di Medici of Florence, by whose helpe and counsaile it is thought he prospered not a littel in the beginnyng of his astate: seeyng that Cosmo (assoone as he was made Duke) sent

ambassa-

ambassadours vnto hym, reioysyng at his prosperitee. For the frendshyp wherof francesco afterwardes succoured Piero di Medici in the cõiuracion made against hym by Luca Pitti, whom Borso duke of Ferrara fauoured.

¶ This Duke francesco reedyfied the litle forte in the Castell of Myllayne, called Giogne, and builded manye deuoute places. Nevertheless in hys age he was somewhat blamed for hys disordinate loue to women, more than hys astate, hys age, and hys passed vertues dyd allowe.

Finally finishyng the course of this lyfe, he lefte (by his wife Bianca) .v. sons Galeazo, Lodouico, surnamed Moro Ascanio, Philippo, Ottauiano, and a daughter named Hippolita Maria that afterwardes, was maryed to Alfonso duke of Calabria.

Galeazo.

Whan Galeazo beyng in the warres in france wyth kynge Lewys, heard of his fathers death, he retourned to Myllayne: where he was receyued as duke. And all be it, he was expert in armes, yet did he neuer shewe any honourable proufte thereof: as he that entred into an astate ouermuche wealthye and quyete. And because he had so muche felicitee, that he thought it impossible euer to decay, he set so litle by men and by vertue, that many of his owne citesins and seruauntes hated hym. And they whom he fauoured moste conspyred his death and slewe hym. The principall whereof was one Giauãdrea Lampugnano that with his owne hãdes fyrst strake him, in the churche of saincte Stephen, whan Galeazo had his garde of Halberders rounde aboute hym. Whyche Halberders incontinentlye slewe

the same Giaudrea (that sleeyng through the women happened to be tangled by the spurre) muche after the maner as he was serued, that slew Alzuball in spaine.

¶ And albeit that this Galeazo through his delycate or wanton like, became odiouse & vnworthy to theim that delited in chiualry, and also hated of them that had the fairest wifes and doughters, with whom he wold be familiar (as the same went) yet the commons lamented him a great deale more than many of his predecessours because that duryng his life they remaigned in peace. For in peace whan the souldiour doeth begge, the plow prospereth: and in warre whan the plow man is fledde, the souldiour plaieth the swyne.

Giouanni. ¶ These thinges beyng thus happened, Giauanni, the sonne of Galeazo, thã but a child, succeded in the astate, vnder the gouernance of his mother Bona, and of one Cecco, that longe tyme had bene broughte vp in that house.

This Cecco was borne in Calabria of verye low degee. But through his wisedome he became noble and of so good credite with Francesco Sforza, that he gouerned most thinges in Pyllaine.

¶ Finally, whan Galeazo was deade, to the entent that Giouanni might the more quietly enioy the dominyon he sent away his other brethern into exile. But at lẽgth Lodouico Moro, vncle to Giouanni was reuoked by the people: and incontinently vpon his retoure Cecco beheaded, and Bianca the mother exiled.

¶ After whych time Giouanni remayned in the astate aboute .xii. yeares. But his prouse was so simple, that in maner by force he committed the rule of all thynges

to Lodo-

to Lodouico. By whose meanes (as he that was not yet contented) some say Giouanni at length was poysoned, and dyed in Pauia, leauinge issue a sonne called frãcesco Sforza begotten on his wife Isabella doughter of Alfonso kyng of Naples.

Now incontinently as Giouanni was deade, this Lodouico Moro both of the people, and also by consent of the emperour Maximilian was proclaymed Duke, and shortly after maried his neece Bianca, doughter of hys brother Galeazo vnto the same Maximilian, takynge also vpon him the protection of his nephewe the ponge Francesco Sforza, and of his mother Isabella. Lodouicus Moro.

Than maried he Beatrice the doughter of Ercole duke of Ferrara, and begat on hir Francesco Sforza, with a secounde sonne, in whose birth the mother dyed.

¶ This Moro was a wittie man, of veray good disposicion, and one that delyted muche in the administracion of iustice, in peintyng, and in cunnyng men.

¶ In the begynnynge of his astate he entred in amytee with the Florentines, the Senese, the Bolognese, with Ercole da Este, with the Marques of Mantua, wyth Lewis king of fraunce, and with Alfonso kyng of Naples. But lyke as he was easy to enter into frendeshyp, so for a trifle wold he sodeinly breake with the best of theim.

He helped Charles Duke of Sauoy against Lodouico Marques of Saluzzo, and confined hys brother the Cardinall Ascanio, because in Ferrara he had practysed dyuers new thynges agaynst him.

He toke Boccalino by siege, that had rebelled agaynst the Romayne churche, and therby gratyfied the byshop of Rome, Eee ii wyth

¶ With hys great polycy he recouered Genoa, that before had rebelled agaynste hym. He founde the meanes to bryng Charles the. viii. frenche kyng into Italye, to expulse kyng Alfonso out of Naples, because he had before taken him for his enemy, for sekyng to mainteigne the astate of Glouanni the sonne of Galeazo, agaynste hym.

¶ This comyng of the frenche kynge not only annoied Alfonso, but also troubled all Italy.

Finally he made warre against the Uenetians, whych dured til that after the death of kynge Charles, Lewys succeded in the realme of fraunce, who hated so muche this duke Moro, that beynge entred in leage wyth the Uenetians: Moro was constreigned to flee into Almaine, where he remained whyles the frenchemen toke Millaine, and the venetians Cremona & Gieradadda How be it not long after the frenchmen thrugbe their yll gouernaunce were dryuen from Millaine, & Lodouico renoked home out of Douchelande, who after his arryuall, takyng Nouara, and trausylinge to chace the frenche men out of Italy, was betraied of the Douchemen, and bothe he and Ascano taken and ledde into fraunce, where finally he dyed.

Francesco

This Lodouico reignyng in his dominion, used to answere them that counsailed him to encrease his treasure with tares and tallages, that the office of a good shepeherde was to shere his sheepe, and not to flaie them.

¶ Thus Lodouico Moro taken and deade, as is beforesayd, his sonne Francesco shortly after the battaile of Rauēna, being thā but tender of yeres, was established duke of Millayne by the emperours meanes, and

continued

continued in the astate til the coming of Fraunces the frenche kynge into Italye, who wyth the helpe of the Uenetians chaced him away, and gatte the state of Millaine by force, leauynge Mounser de Lautrech gouernour of the same, so that Francesco Sforza withdrew hym to Trent, and there remained til the French men through their tyranny and yll gouernaunce, became so hated of the Milanese, that at lengthe they were chased away, and Francesco reuoked home: though in effecte he enioyed it not longe. For the frenche kynge shortlye after with a great power came in his owne person into Italy, & so chaced Francesco againe oute of the state of Millaine, and prospered much in his warres there, vntyl the iourney of Pauia, where he with manye of his nobles were taken prisoners. After whych discomfiture francesco Sforza, by the emperours fauour was ones againe restored to the douchie of Millaine, & continued in the same til through enuye and malyce of some pikethanks, the emperour was vntruckly persuaded, that the sayd Francesco was not so faithful towardes hys maiestee, as his goodnesse had merited, so that the emperour conceiuyng an vnkyndenesse & a mistrust in him, constreigned him by force not onely to habandone Millaine, but also for his saufegarde to flee into the castell, whych after a verye longe siege he yelded vnto the imperialles, to depart frely with bagge and baggage.

And so (beyng letted of the imperialles from goinge to Como, where he entended to sodgiourne, tyl he might clere his innocency towardes the emperour) in maner halfe desperate, he agreed with the french men: & driue to the campe of the leage, that than was made againste

the Empereoure.

Finally he went vnto Cremona, til after the tabyng of saincte Polo, the Frenchemens doynges in Italye went all to wracke. Wherfore seeing the emperour Charles the.v. that nowe is come to Bologna to bee crowned, he went simplye thither vnto hym: and there submittyng hym selfe with iust excuses, recouered hys magistrees fauour, with restitucion of the astate of Millaine, vpon these condicions folowyng: That the Duke shoulde marye the emperours neece, daughter of the kyng of Denmarke and of the emperours syster: that he should paye the emperoure nine hundreth thousande ducates in tenne yeres by equal porcions: And finally, that dyynge without issue, he should leaue his astate of inheritaunce to the emperoure.

Incontinently vpō which agrement Alexandro Bentiuogli, as vice Duke, with diuers other officers, were sent to Millaine, to leauey the fyrste paymente of this money, whyche was easilye gathered vp. For the Millanese couetyng the retourne of theyr duke (whome for his gentil & temperate gouernance in tymes paste they hertely loued) sticked not to streigne them selfes for his relefe, in suche wyse, that thoughe theyr customes and tares were doubled by reason of these paymentes, yet theyr hope of better life to come vnder their duke, made them not to esteeme theyr present charges.

Than came themperours neece, the daughter of Denmarke, to Millaine, and there was moste solemnely receiued with infinite triumphes: and finally maryed to the duke in presence of the Cardinal of Mantua, wyth such feastes and plaies afterwardes, as so greate a ma-

riage

riage requyred.

¶ But ere a yere went about, the Duke (through great infyrmitee, blinded of one eye) dyed without issue: leauyng the astate of Myllaine wholly to the emperoure, who euer sens hathe gouerned the same by his lieuetenauntes. The fyrst wherof was named Antonino di Leua, so lame a man of his limmes, that he vsed to be caried on men shoulders: but on the other syde so prudent and ware a capitaine in his doingz, as in his daies was not lightly to be founde agayne.

¶ Nexte vnto whom folowed the Marques of Vasco a very honourable and courtlye man, but not altogether so happye in hys procedynges as suche noble men couette to be.

Finally after his death the emperoure hathe placed there the famouse Don Ferrando Gonzaga, vncle to the Duke of Mantua, whose prosperitee hathe not onelye been greate in feates of warre, but also wonderfull in purchasing of fame, through the sincere and rare administracion of iustice, that he vseth.

I call it not rare for other cause, than for the rare correction he hath vsed against the offendours, wherby he hath wonne the hertes of them that loue iustice.

As for the progresse of the thynges happened in the state of Myllaine, sens the death of Francesco Sforza (in whome it seweth the house of Visconti to haue taken his ende) I shal not neede here to make any rehersall, because on the one syde the dooynges of the same haue not been very great: and on the other side they are present and similiare.

Of

¶ Of the astate of Mantua.



The citee of it selfe is verye fayre and strong, and standeth rychely, by reason the Countreis aboute are playne, & no lesse plentyfull than the other partes of Lumbardye. It is strong, because the riuer of Meltio, (or Mentio as some call it) fallynge oute of the lake of Garda thorough the towne of Peschiera, passeth to the Po by Mantua, and maketh about it suche a poole, that thre part of the citee are defended with the bredth of a quarter of a myle of water euery waye: whyche in some places is deepe, & in some shalowe, that it can not be passed wyth botes. And than in the necessarye places such bulwarkes are made to defende, that it semeth impossyble to be wonne by assaulte on that syde.

¶ And for the .iiii. parte, whyche is towarde the weast, it is very wel fortified with stronge walles and bulwarkes, and a large dyche well watered, besydes that the grounde on that side is in maner all marisshe, or at the least so ranke, that in the drest of the sommer there can none artillery passe, so that the citee is vndoubtedly one of the strongest that I haue seen.

¶ The dominion that the duke hath is not greate, neyther of circuite nor of reuenewe. For at the best (as I haue ben enformed) the rētes neuer passed an. 100000 duckates a yere, and many times it hath ben much lesse by reason it is not standyng, but riseth of customes and casualtees.

¶ It is true, that the state is much encreased by reason

of Mon-

of Monferrato, that the laſt Duke had by the mariage of his wyfe, ſo that now the Duke of Mantoa's rentes by eſtimacion are reckened at .130000. duchates or thereaboutes.

And as for notable buildynges in Mantua, other than ſuche as be vniverſall in the goodly Cities of Italie, I finde none, ſauyng certaine proper lodgeinges that the duke Federico deceaſed, hath made on the ſouth parte of his palaice, whych vndoubtedly are gaiaunt and riche. Wherfore proceedyng nowe to the originall of the citeſins and citee, with the ſucceſſe therof hitherward:

¶ The Originall of Mantua.

BY agrement of moſte auctheurs I finde, that the people of Mantua are deſcended of thoſe auncient Tuſcanes, that before the ſiege of Troy departed out of Lydia in Aſia, and vnder the leadynge of their prince Tirreno, came and enhabyted the region of Italye. Parte of whyche Tuſcanes, choſyng afterwardes the place of Mantua for their habitacion, buylded the citee, before the comyng of Eneas into Italye, and before the edificacyon of Rome, more than .300. yeres. The capitaine of whyche people at that tyme was named Dgne, a very expert man in Aſtronomy, or in the ſcience of diuinacyon. For his vertue in which ſcience, folowynge the Greke worde Mantia, he named the citee Mantua. Howbeit, Dante (ſpeakynge thereof) referreth the beginnyng of Mantua to Manto, daughter of Tireſia, kynge of Thebes: whom the poetes feigne, loſt his ſight for iudgeing betwene Iupiter and Iuno,

that the woman in the die of nature had more pleasure than the man: taken for iudge in this matter, because (through the villynge of certayne serpentes) he before tyme had ben chaunged from a man to a woman, & had vsed in bothe kyndes. So that Iupiter in recompence of his sight (that Iuno had taken from him) gaue hym the science of diuinacion, and he hauynge a doughter afterwards, according to that science named hir Manto who comyng into Italy was auctheur bothe of the beginnynge and also of the name of Mantua. But howsoeuer it were, I find, that ones it was destroied by Attila kyng of the Goti, and after by Agilulfo kyng of the Lumbardes, thyrdly by Cacciano king of Bauiera, and lastly by the Hungaryens. And than being redified

1063 Nicolas the second bysshop of Rome helde a generall counsaile ther, in the which the se holy Pilates (I wold say prelates) decreed, that from thensefurth the bishops of Rome shulde be elected by the college of Cardinals, to the intent the emperours should haue no more to do wythal. At the tyme of which counsaile Matilda doughter of the Conte Bonifacio, was lady of Mantua. This Conte Bonifacio was lord of the cities of Luca, Parma, Reggio, Mantua, and Ferrara, called altogethers at that time. Il Patrimonio, and was so greate a man, that he obteygned vnto wyfe Beatrice, sister of Henry the second emperour of Almayne. Whiche Beatrice after hir husbands death gouerned the whole dominion right yeres, and was finally buried in Pisa: leuyng hir doughter Matilda before named with an husband named Godfrey in the estate.

Matilda Matilda after the death of hir husband Godfrey ma-

ryed a-

ried againe, and at length found meane to be diuorsed: insomuch that dying without issue she lefte hir whole estate vnto the church of Rome, and was buryed in the abey of S. Benette de Bondeno besides Mantua.

After whose death the citee of Mantua was gouerned by Romaine vicares & legates, vntill abouttes the yere of grace. 1220. one Sordello founde the meanes to be principal gouernor therof: the myghtiest man of body and strength that was in those dayes, insomuch that being prouoked many times to feight, he alwaies remained vanquisher. Through the notable fame whereof the Frenche kyng sent for hym, and beyng arriued in hys presence, merily sayd vnto him: he beleued not that he shuld be Sordello: wherwith Sordello being offended, incontinently tourned his backe without speaking any word: and beyng called againe, was demaunded by the French king, what he meaned so sodeinly to tourne his backe; he aunswered: I wolde haue returned to Mantua to bryng witnesse, that I am Sordello. Sordello

He maried one of the doughters of Ezelino da Romano, who first being enamoured on him, fled secretly to departe from hir fathers house, & goe to Mantua vnto him. Whereof Ezelino at length hauynge knowlage, tempted by meane of his doughter, that Sordello shoulde haue betraied the Mantuanes into his handes, but Sordello wolde neuer consent therunto, insomuch that at last Ezelino came him selfe and besyeged Mantua, hoppynge to gette it by force. But all in vayne, for after he had lien before it certaine daies, he finally was constreigned to raise his siege, and not long after dyed. So that ỹ Mantuanes prouoked through that example

immediately endeuored them selues to fortify their cities with victuales and water, to the ende that in time to come their victuales might not easily be cutte from them. And in short space after fel in contention with the Cremonese for the possession of the ryuer of Oglio. In which time the notablest families of Mantua were the Poledroni (that had chaced awaye the Crabzoli) and next them were the Arlotti, the Taccialodi the Grallolani, and the Agnelli, but at length the Buona Colli became most puissant of all the rest, the heade of which house was named Pinamonte, who beynge conspired against by all the other forenamed families, founde the meane to ouercome all their forces. And beyng elected with an other named Ottonello, vnto the chiefest office of iudgement vppon life and death for terme of .vi. monethes, he founde the meane also to slea his colleage, and vsurpe the dominion ouer the citee by force.

Pinamonte. ¶ Neuertheless afterwardes he behaued hym selfe so well, that throughe his gentle and iuste dealynges, he gatte the cities fauoure, and continued in the estate 18. yeres. After whom succeded Bardelaio, yll beloued of all men, and next him Botticello indifferentlye well beloued: on the other syde. But last of all Passerino entoled the domynyon, whose sonne named Francesco, caused the destruction of his father, of him selfe, and of their other kinne and frendes by this meane.

Passerino. ¶ Amongest his manye frendes Philippino, sonne of Luigi Gonzaga was one. Of whom this Francesco began to conceiue a ialousy touchyng his wyfe: and so much encreased this suspicion, that beyng on a day (as the maner is) greeted by Philippino, he churlishly answered,

swered, that he wolde be euen with hym, by forlynge his wyfe againe openly in the markette place. The arrogancye of which aunswere so much enflamed the innocent hert of Philippino, that incontinentlye he began to imagine how to be auenged: not on Francesco alone but also on the father Passerino considerynge: that the one coulde not be well done without the other. And so, declarynge the terrible wordes of Francesco, lamented the case vnto hys brother Guido Gonzaga, & to dyuers other of his frends and kinne: who all together with the helpe of Cane lord of Scala, determined to dispatch Passerino. And at the daye appoynted assembled in armes in the market place, and there slew Passerino, as he fledde towardes his owne house to haue saued hym selfe. So that whan Passerino was slayne, the house of Gonzaga toke on it the dominion, banished diuers of the contrary part, beheaded Francesco, & therwith ceased from further cruelitee agaynst their ennemies: by commaundemente of the forenamed Luigi Gonzaga, that first of that name was lord of Mantua.

¶ This familie of Gonzaga had his beginninge of one Luigi Tedesco an Almaine of royall bloudde, who (in the tyme that all Italy was in armes, and so many armies about Rubicone) had taken place for hym and all his familie at Mantua. Of whom afterwardes descended this Luigi Gonzaga before named, that aboute the yere of grace. 1328. began his dominion ouer Mantua, and gourned the same afterwardes the space of 53. yeres. He had three wifes, and by euerye wyfe three sonnes: By the fyrste he had Guido, Philippino, and Feltrino. By the second Currado, Alberto, and Federico,

Gonzaga.

Luigi. Gonzaga.

derico. And by the thyrd, Azo, Iacopo, and Glouanni. Insomuche that there hapened in Mantua thre notable mariag⁊ of that house in one time, Luigi him selfe to his last wife of the house of Palespini: Currado hys son to the sister of Mastino della Scala, & Ugolino his sons son borne of Guido, vnto a little girle of Becacci da Pauia. At which mariag⁊ there assembled a wonderful number of people; insomuch ỹ Luigi him selfe gaue away amongest nobles & gentilmen. 120. goodly horses. After the succesle of these thynges whilest Philippino was followyng the warres, in seruice of the kyng of Hungarie against the kyng of Naples, there hapned a mischaunce vnto the house of Gonzaga.

Isabell wyfe of Lucchino Visconti: lorde of Pylaine, a verie fayre woman, feigned to hir husband, that she had made a vow to goe in pylgrimage vnto Venice and vnder that colour, obteignynge licence, she toke Mantua in hir waye, where she lodged in the house of Gonzaghi, auncient frends vnto hir husband. And after she had supped, secretelye sente for Ugolino, vnto whom she declared, that for the feruent loue she bare to him, she had taken on hir that iourney: prayynge hym therfore to kepe hir company vnto Venice.

This thing came to the eares of Lucchino, who prouoked therby, laied syege to Mantua. Neuertheleſſe findyng the frendes of Vgolino innocent of the fault and that Guido the father did his best to correct him, Lucchino, through intercession leueled the syege: And shortly after Luigi Gonzaga, of the age of .93. dyed, hauinge led an happie life, to see so many forewarde persones to the .iii. and fourthe degree of hys owne generacion.

After

After whom Guido his eldest sonne entred into the state, and whilest the empyre was vacant, by the helpe of his brother Philippino gatte Lamporeggio, and contended longe tyme in armes with Obizone Marquys of Ferrara: who at lengthe was ouercomen by Philippino, and with great losse constreigned to withdraw hym home vnto Ferrara. Guido

This Guido had .iii. sonnes, Vgolino, Francesco, and Luigi. And because the two younger perceiued, that the father fauoured more the eldeste, they takynge counsaile together, determined to ridde hym out of the waye: and so biddynge hym to supper on an euenynge, slew hym.

This vnnaturall parte of the sonnes was suppressed of the doloursse father as well as nature wolde suffer it. But because the correction therof should haue drawen more bloudde of his owne, he therefore sought to abate his passion with the new mariage of his sonne Francesco vnto the doughter of Guido Polenta, lorde of Rauenna. Neuertheleste Bernabo Visconti, vncle to the wife of Vgolino, to auenge Vgolino's death (after he had first sette away his neece) laied siege to Mantua: by reason wherof Guido was constreygned to sue for helpe to the emperour Charles, that than warred in Italye: who before time going towardes hys coronacion, and passyng through Mantua, had ben there moste honourably receiued, by Luigi father of Guido: so that by the emperours meanes the matter was remedyed, and within short space after died Guido and his sonne Francesco bothe.

And than came the state clerelye to Luigi, who buyl- Luigi

ded the

ded the palatee, wherin all his succeſſours to this days haue dwelled. He begatte on his wyfe Alda, a ſonne named Franceſco, whom he maried verye yonge vnto Agneſa, doughter of Bernabo Wiſconti, and at laſte being knowen openly to haue committed aduultrie, the people aroſe and cruelly ſlew hym.

Franceſco. ¶ After whoſe death the aſtate deſcended to his ſonne Franceſco, than beynge of the age of .xiiii. yeares. But growen afterwardes to more tyme, he ſo muche loued peace that he refuſed to enter into confederation, with Giangaleazo Duke of Myllaine. And vppon diſpleaſure therfore folowyng betwene them, Franceſco cauſed the adder (that for the great amitee and alyance betweue thoſe two houſes had in tyme paſt been foygned to the armes of Mantua) to be cleane taken oute thereof. For whyche deſpite Giangaleazo beſieged Mantua, and laye before the ſame an whole yere, in whyche meane time there periſſhed many notable men on both ſydes, and ſpecially of the houſe of Gonzaga. 4. that is to wete, Guido, Cotello, Bartolino, and Galeazo. Which Galeazo Gonzago amongeſt al other was reputed the ſtrongeſt & hardieſt man of his daies, hauing fought ofte tymes bodye to bodie, and remained euermore vainquiſher, namely againſt Buccialdo a notable ſtronge man the gouernour of the Frenche kynge in Genoa. Theſe buſineſſe at length beynge pacifyed, and Franceſco ſomwhat awakened in armes he entered priſe warre in the name of Giangaleazo againſte the Bologniſe, and againſt Giouanni Bentiuogli, in the thicke whereof he toke Jacopo Carraro of Padoa priſoner, and led hym to Mantua, geuyng hym ſuche cur-

teyſe li-

teyse libertee there, that yeldyng vnkyndnesse for kindnesse Jacopo escaped awaye: whereof folowed muche adoe afterwardes. For assone as the Duke of Myllaine was dead, the Venetians (consideryng the prouoked displeasure before rehersed) elected the sayde Francesco to be their generall in thenterprise agaynste the Carrari, and were so well serued of hym, that after he had chased the Carrari out of Padoa and Verona, he reduced bothe those citees to the Venetian obedyence: And so after a glorypouse lyfe dyed. 1407

Leauinge after him hys sonne Gianfrancesco in the domynyon of the age of. 14. yeares, who by hys wyfe Paola, daughter of Malatesta, lorde of Rimini, had. 4. sonnes, Luigi, Carlo, Lucido, and Alexandro. To the fyrst wherof he obteyned for wyfe Barbera daughter of the Marques of Brandenburghe, and kinneswoman vnto the emperour Edmond, who at his comming into Italy, and passing through Mantua, was there honourablie receiued by Gianfrancesco, insumuche that before his departure he made hym Marques, and gaue hym in his armes the ensigne of the empire. Gianfrancesco.

After the atteigning of whych honours he was three seuerall times made generall of the Venetians, and in euery enterprise gat the vpper hande. And at lasse forsakyng them, he was waged against them by Philippo Duke of Myllaine: and in that seruice in companye of Niccolo Piccinino was part of the occasion, that the Venetians than lost the citee of Verona: with many other townes of the Bressaue and Vicentine: so he died leauynge his dominion diuided in iiii. partes vnto hys foure sonnes. To Luigi (as eldest) the citee of Mantua, 1443

with those other townes that he had aboute Verona, to Carlo (who was an exceadynge stronge man) Lucera, with the rest of those lands that he held on Cremonese territorie. To Lucido (yll shapen and weake of person) Capriana, La Volta, and Ciregiata: and finallye Alexandro (who was crokebacked, and becomen religiouse) Canneto, with that land that he had on the Bressane.

Luigi

¶ Thus Luigi the eldest toke the astate vpon hym, and continued not longe in the same vnuered of his brother Carlo, whose myghtynesse and force of bodye was coupled with such an haultenesse of mynde, that for despyte of atteigning his elder brothers astate, he coulde not be contented to liue in peace.

¶ And al be it that in the warres betwene Francesco Sforza, & the Milanese he fled from one part to another and backe againe: yet by his brothers meanes he recouered the fauour of Sforza, at whose hands he receiued dyuers benefytes. But Luigi, seing now the yll dysposicion of his vnquiete mynde, finallye toke from him all the landes that his father lefte hym: so that Carlo fledde to the Venetians, and became their captaine, so long till at length throughe their helpe he assembled a power of men, wente againste his brother, and foughte with hym to the ieopardye of the lose of the Mantuan astate. But in conclusion the right of Luigi preuailed against the force of Carlo, who beyng discomfited and fledde, died afterwardes very poorely in exile.

¶ This enterpryse beynge thus ouercomen, and the thynges of the astate quieted, Luigi triumphantlye receiued the emperoure Federico the thyrde, as he passed

through

through Mantua to Rome, and beyng than a widower by the death of his first wife, maried Margarite daughter of the duke of Bauiera, and cousen to the forenamed emperoure.

¶He was so great of body that he was commonly called the Turke, so well exercised in armes, and so beloued specially of the Dukes of Millaine, that duke Philippo called him sonne, Francesco called hym brother, and Galeazo called him father.

¶He was noble of courage, fine of wytte, and somewhat learned, which thinges together with his liberall and courteise lyfe, made him beloued of all men.

¶Finally through some disorder in liuyng, as he that loued to liue in pleasure, he dyed somewhat before the full course of his naturall terme. Leauing by his first wife Barbara. v. sonnes, Federico: Francesco made Cardinall, Luigi, Gianfrancesco, and Rodolfo, all notable and vertuouse persons.

Federico as eldest, succeded in the astate, and was afterwardes generall to the duke of Millaine, and maryed La Margerita Tedesca, on whom he begat a sonne named Frãcesco: and in the Venetian warres againste the duke of Ferrara, hauing gotten Asola which after wardes he was constreigned by force to restore, sickned for sorow and dyed. Federico

¶By reason wherof his sonne Francesco, of the age of 18. yeares, entred into the astate, & at the age of. 38. was made general of the Venetians, in whose seruice he did wonders: specially against Charles the eyghte French kyng, nere vnto ỹ riuer of Taro besides Parma, as the same king retourning from the conquest of the realme Francesco

of Naples, laden with great richelle, was goynge into Fraunce. In which enterprise Francesco so behaued him selfe, that he led manye noble men prysoners with him at his retourne, insomuch that the Frenche kynge made verie greate offers to haue had hys seruyce, but al in vaine. For continuing his ennemy he afterwards fought with the french men in Puglia and so dyscomfited them, that he restored the kyng Ferrandino vnto hys astate. And leauyng three sonnes by his wife Beatrise, doughter of Ercole, duke of Ferrara, that is to wete, Federico that nexte succeded him, Ercole made Cardinall, and Don ferrando that nowe is the emperours general at Millaine, finally he dyed.

Federico. 1520

After whose death, Federico toke the astate vpon him and was made general of the Romaine churche by byshop Lyon the .x. confirmed by Adrian the .vi. and continued also vnder Clemente the .vii. And as the emperour (that nowe is) retourned from hys coronacyon at Bologna, passinge throughe Mantua (where he was most honourably receiued) his maiestee, for the vertue, worthinesse, and nobilitee knowen in this Federico called hym frō the degre of Marques, & created him duke. He maried Margerite doughter and heire of the lord Guglielmo Paleologo, Marques of Monferrato, in whose right by fauoure of the emperours maiestee, he obteigned hir fathers astate, that his to say, the dominion of Monferrato. And so notably fortifynge the citee of Mantua, he died, leauinge .iiii. sons, Francesco Guglielmo, Lodouico, and federico.

1539

Francesco

Francesco after his fathers death entred into the dominion, but because he was than of very tender yeres,

and

and passeth not yet the age of.14.his father by testamēt committed the gouernaunce of hym vnto his wife, with the helpe and counsaile of his brother Ercole the Cardinall, vntil the yong duke shal be growen to sufficient yeres: who by the parentes consente, and by the emperours procurement, hathe bene contracted vnto one of kyng ferdinando's doughters, and shal mary hir very shortly, as the sayinge is.

¶ Of the state of Ferrara.



Ferrara is one of the notablest Cities of Lumbardye, aswel for the beautie and greatenesse, as also for the stronge sites and fortification. ¶ First for beautie, if that part, that is called La terra nuoua had ben tho roughly finished: as it was deuised, it should haue bene worthie for faire stretes, to haue bene preferred before any other cities that I haue seen. And nowe as it is, I thinke it no lesse worthy. For you shall finde aboue a douzen streetes so iust and euenly sette forthe, that I warrante you there is not so muche as the corner of a house to let a man of his ful sight from the tone end to the tother. Some of whyche streetes lacke lyttell of a myle longe, with the goodly houses and buildynges on bothe sydes so fayre and vniforme, that it semeth all dooen at one tyme and by one agrement, as no doubte the most part hath been in deede. And than in the myd-

deſt it hath a very fayre greene, appoincted oute for the market place. But the Duke that now is, hath had no mynde to folow it, although his father Alfonſo beſtowed the moſt trauaile of all his daies about it, to his wonderful charge: as he that ſhall ſee it maye well conſider. So that the moſt habitacion of people reſteth ſtyl in the olde parte of the citee, whych is alſo indyfferente fayre, but nothynge comparable to the newe. Than as touchynge the greatneſſe, I thinke the circuite by the walles be lyttle leſſe than .v. myles. And finallye for ſtrength it hath the goodlieſt and ſtrongeſt wal, and the largeſt diche, well watered, that I haue ſeen: ſpecially for thꝛee partes to the lande warde. And as for the fourth part, though the wall be not ſo ſtronge, yet is it reputed of no leſſe force on that ſide, than on the other, by reaſon that within .20. yardes of the wall, the great riuer of Po, hathe his courſe downe towardes the ſea: whyche renneth ſo ſwyfte, and is ſo broade and deepe, that it is not to be paſſed of any enemy to geue aſſaulte to the downe.

¶ The duke hath vnder his dominion two other citees that is to wete, Modona, and Reggio, wyth a good part of the low countreys of Romagna, and may diſpende yerely by eſtimacion betweene .200. and .250000. duckates: and is eſteemed verie riche, becauſe he hathe had no warre, nor other charge of importaunce, for the ſpace of .xiii. yeres or more, that he hathe goverened the eſtate.

The

¶ The Originall and succesſe of the Citee.

LYke as of other places be dyuers opinyons, euen ſo is there of the beginnyng, and name of Ferrara Some woull, that the name therof hath growen of a certaine quantitee of yron, that the ſame citee yelded for a tribute vnto the lorde of Rauenna: as Argenta, and Aureolo haue alſo doen of the payemente of ſyluer and golde. Some other woull, that it be ſo called of the mynes of yron that haue bene founde there, whyche opinion is moſt ſenſible, conſidering that Ferrara (after the vſe of the latine tounge) ſignifyeth none other but the place where yron is digged, forth, as Cæſar in hys commentaryes, the. viii. boke of the Frenche warres, and as Liuie in the forthe of the Macedonycall warres doe affyrme.

But to paſſe ouer theſe antiquitiees, and come nerer to our purpoſe, I finde, that the ſaid citee of Ferrara was firſt cloſed with walles by one Smeraldo, captaine for the Greekiſh emperour in Rauenna: and long time after (beyng a certaine ſpace vnder the obediẽce of Henry the ſecound emperour of Almaine) it was recouered by the counteiſe Matilda, doughter of the Cõte Bonefacio as hir right enheritaunce, through helpe of the Venetians, and of the lordes of Rauenna, out of the handes of Henry the thirde than emperoure: whiche Conteſſe at hir death, with other hir poſſeſſions, lefte it vnto the vſe of the Romaine churche: inſomuche that longe tyme it was gouerned of vicares & of legates, vntill the houſe of Eſte gatte the rule thereof. Who firſt obteigned it

709.

1029.

vnder

vnder condicion, that they should for euer hold it in fee of the churche of Rome.

And to relite the beginnyng of that house, some thinke the same is descended of those auncient Troianes, that came with Anthenor into Italy: and some other would, that their stocke shoulde be of a certayne towne called Este, nowe vnder the Venetian domynion, lyynge. xv. miles frō Padoa, on the southside of the Padoan hilles From which towne (they say) this family of Este came to dwell in Ferrara. But howe soeuer it be, the fyrste notable man of that house, that ruled Ferrara, was named Azo, who at his death lefte issue two sonnes, Aldobrandino, and Azo: the fyrste entred in possessyon, an lyuing but a shorte space, lefte the estate vnto Azo the second his younger brother.

Azo. 1 Aldobrandino.

Azo. 2.

¶ This Azo was driuen out of it by Federike the emperour, and one Salinguerra put there in his place: insomuch that Azo for succoure resorted vnto a certayne Ferrarese named Gregorio Montelungo being at that time Romyth legate in the citee of Bologna: by whose meanes, with helpe of the Venetians, of the Mantuanes, and of Ezelino, than lorde of Verona, brother in lawe vnto this Azo: Salinguerra was by force expulsed, and Azo restored vnto his estate: vppon condicyon that he shoulde hold it for euer as vicar of the churche, and none otherwyse.

¶ Now this Azo the second hauing by his firste wyfe a sonne, named Fresco, maryed agayne the secounde daughter of the kyng of Naples, named Beatrise: whiche mariage so much offended his sonne Fresco (as he that was desirouse to reigne) that prysonyng his father

Crueltee

put

put hym vnto death, and after with helpe of the Venetians toke on him the estate.

Fresco. But his owne citesins, abhorryng so greate a cruelte, procured so much the Romish legate Palagurra to the vengeaunce of Fresco, that both Fresco and the Venetians were excommunicated, and war moued against them: the generall wherof was named Diego Catelano a Spanyarde.

Cruelte Now Fresco waxynge more cruell throughe these businesses than before, put to death all those of his subiectes, that were contrarye to hym, and after burned the one halfe of the citee, purposynge to destroye the whole. But the furie of the people was so moued therby, that taxynge weapon in hande, they sought hym, and as he woulde haue fled out at the Lyon gate, slewe hym. And Rinaldo his brother (to whome of right the estate ought to haue descended) was also dead in prison.

Obizone So than Obizone, sonne of Rinaldo, toke on hym the estate: and was the firste that began to enlarge hys dominion through the gettyng of Modena and Reggio And after Obizone succeded Azo his sonne, the .iii. of that name, who delited much in armes: many times attemptyng to conquere Parma and Bologna: and at lengthe dyed without issue. Azo. 3

Rinaldo. Leauynge hys estate vnto his nephewes Rinaldo and Niccolo, sonnes of his brother Aldobrandino.

This Rinaldo desirous to encrease his dominion, with the helpe of Pallerino Buona Colsi, than lord of Mantua, obteined Argenta, & after ioygning his power with an army of the lordes of Scala, laied siege to the towne of San felice on the Modenese. Which towne the king

Manfredi, together with .30. other townes, had lefte in custody of Charles sõne to the king of Boeme: so that the same Charles, with Manfredi, and wyth Beltrame the bishop of Romes general (uniting their campes together assaulted Rinaldo, and discomfited him, takyng part of his men, amongest whom Nicolo brother vnto Rinaldo rested prisoner, insomuch that the Romish legate, waxing immoderately proude of this victorye addressed his power towardes Ferrara, and besieged it. But at last Rinaldo issued out and discomfited him, takyng prysoners Galeotto da Rimini, Frãcesco de gli Ordelaffi, Ricciareo Mãfredi di Faenza, & Astagio da Polẽta, whom he deliuered in exchange for hys brother Nicolo, and after let the rest goe frely vpon theyr othes, that they should no more be against hym.

Finally this Rinaldo was so much perswaded by his owne citesins, that he restored Argenta, to the bysshop of rome, wherby he recouered the byshoppes bieslynge, and so at length dyed without issue.

Obizone 2. Leauinge hys astate vnto hys nephewe Obizone the second of that name, sonne vnto hys brother Nicolo.

This Obizone (throughe fauoure of the legate) was the first that was made general of the church, and had therfore .10000. duckates of yerely prouision assygned vnto hym. And shortlye after was Parma also geuen into his handes by Azo da Correggio, notwythstandyng that it appertaigned vnto Mastino della Scala, and the same Azo also had before offered to sell it vnto the Florentines for .50000. duckates.

Not longe after there grewe a controuersye betwene Obizone and Philippino di Gonzaga for the cytee of

Reggio,

Reggio, wherof ther folowed so sharpe warre betwene them, that Obizone, mistrustyng his owne power, yelded the citee of Parma into the handes of Lucchino Visconti, and finally leauyng issue two sonnes, Nicolo and Alberto, dyed.

After whom Nicolo the eldest succeded, beyng alwaies fast frende to the Romaine bysshoppes, in whose fauour Nicolo maaye tymes he soughte wyth Bernabo Visconti, and had the better, specyallye in that notable iourney that happened betwene them on the Brescane territory nere to the hyll Mozlano.

He purchased also of Giouanni Aguto, an English capitayne, the citee of Faenza, for 20000. duckates, and boughte also the towne of Baguacauallo, thoughe he kept it long, for Astorgio Manfredi gatte it from him by treason.

Finally he dyd muche for hys citesins, and greatly augmented Ferrara.

He was eloquente, mercyfull and learned, constante both of nature and of coutenaunce, and so liberall, that he neuer repulsed person that soughte benefyte at hys handes. At lasse dying wythout issue, he lefte his astate vnto his brother Alberto, who also at hys deathe, ha- Alberto uyng no lawful chylde, left it vnto Nicolo his bastarde sonne, than beyng but a chylde.

Nowe was there one Azo of the house of Este, that Nicolo seing Nicolo yet tender of yeares, vnder the gouerne of tutours, and vnapte to rule, did as much as he could to preuayle hym selfe. But with the helpe of the Venetians, of the Florentines, and of the Bolognese, Nicolo was not onely maintened in the astate, but Azo for his

pzesumpcion confined also into Candia. And afterwardes beyng growen vnto age, this Nicolo became so mortall ennemye vnto Ottone, Lorde of Parma, that feiguinge at lengthe to mete with hym for a treatye of peace, caused him secretly to be slayne by the waye, by meane of Sforza Cotignola, & so recouerd the citees of Reggio & Parma, that Ottone before had occupied.

¶ After the which, being all geuen vnto the commoditee of Ferrara, he builded the great palaice or castell in the herte of the cite, wherin the Dukes euer sens haue dwelled: and besides that the palaices of Ficcarolo, and of Bellosguardo, and toke vnto wife the doughter of Francesco Vecchio da Carrara. By reason whereof he became enemie to the Venetians, and pzouoked agaynst his selfe a daungerouse warre.

¶ But finally in feates of armes he became excellente, and in the gouernyng of his astate verye pzudente, and of suche reputacion, that he caused the generall counsaile of that time to be kepte in Ferrara. At the whyche the emperour of Grece happened to be pzesent: and not long after he died, leauynge two bastarde sonnes, Lionello and Borso, and two lawful sonnes by his second wife, of the blood of the Marqueses of Saluzo, named Ercole, and Gismondo.

Lionello,

¶ Of whom, Lionello beyng the eldest succeded in the astate, by what reason I cannot tell, but that the father wolde so.

This Lionello was a verye wyse man, and in his time made of new the wall of Ferrara on the side of the Po, and amended the houses and stretes on that part of the citee. And because his sonne Nicolo, whom he had be-

gotten

gotten on the doughter of Gianfrãcesco Gonzaga was a verie childe at the time of his death, on his death bed he committed his affaire to his brother Borso, beseching him, that whan his sonne Nicolo shulde be growē vnto sufficient age, he wold vouchesafe to reffore it vnto him

¶ Thus entred Borso into the dominion, and incontinētly reuoked his brestherne Ercole & Gismōdo, whom Lionello had before cōfined into the realme of Naples, and to the entent there shuld grow none enuy betwene them, he alwayes nourished them together a lyke. Borso,

He fortified Ferrara with stronge walles, and builded the Charterhouse of the same: and was of so good a nature, that he wolde offer no man wrong, but rather forgetting those that were done vnto him, he was wont to saye: That soner and with more ease shuld a man ouercome his enemye by benefytes and curtesye than by ” sworde or vengeaunce. ”

¶ He delited much in runnyng men, and kepte dyuers about him, as well of learned as of others. And finally was so worthy a man, that the emperour Federico passing through his dominion, of his owne mocion created him Duke.

After the death of Borso, Nicolo the sonne of Lionello, according to the couenaunte made betwene Borso and his father, succeded in the affaire. Nicolo,

¶ He ruled not longe, but the right heyre Ercole, before named, with helpe of the Venetians, by force expulsed hym, in suche wyse that for succoure he fledde to his vncle to Mantua, where after the terme of thre yeres, assembling about an. 800. banished men, he attempted to recouer Ferrara: & watchynge his time whilest Ercole,

Ercole was forth of the citee. by night skaled the walls and came to the market place, crying Vela, Vela (whiche was his enseigne) but there was none of his frēdes so hardy, as to arise to succour him: so that Gismondo brother to Ercole (seyng the weakenesse of Niccolo's succours) gathered together suche power as that hasty rumour allowed, and not only discomfyted Niccolo's companye, but also toke hym, with .xx. of hys men prysoners, and broughte hym vnto Lionora the wyfe of Ercole doughter to Ferrando kynge of Naples; who sente for the Duke vnto Bellosguardo. And so within iii. dayes after (the Duke beyng retourned vnto Ferrara) Nicolo lost hys head, and was neuertheles honourablie buryed amongest hys auncestours.

Not longe after the Florentines (at that time troubled by the bishop of Rome, and the kynge of Naples) elected thys duke Ercole for theyr general, who accordingly serued them very honorably.

Finally fallynge out wyth the Venetians for the breache of certaine articles betwene them, what with war and wyth hunger he was so oppressed, that had he not obteyned the bishop of Romes fauour, he myght easily haue lost hys estate. After whyche enterprises, beynge generall of the Venetians, and of the Mylanese both, and vtterly suppressing his aduersaryes the erles of saynct Bonifacio, at last he disposed hym selfe altogethers to religiouse workes: and amongest all other with hys owne handes he daylye distributed to .xx. poore men for goddes sake, two poundes of flesshe, a measure of wyne, three loues of breade, and a little peece of money, vnto euery one of them, and than dyed.

Leauyng

Leauyng hys astate vnto hys sonne Alfonsa, who proued so worthy a man, that notwithstanding he had maried Lucretia, daughter of Alexandro bishop of Rome, yet whan the same bishoppe by force offered to take from hym the countrey of Romagna, he resisted so valiantly, that the byshop was fayne to forgoe hys enterprise. The lyke wherof he dyd vnto byshoppe Leon the.x. that purposed to haue taken Ferrara from hym. Alfonso.

And thus hauynge by Lucretia hys fyrste wyfe three sonnes, Ercole Hippolito nowe Cardynall, and Don Francesco: and by Laura hys secounde wyfe two sonnes, Alfonso and Alfonsine, he dyed.

¶ After whose death Ercole as eldest sonne, entred into the astate, and at this day enioyeth the same. Ercole.

¶ And albeit, that hitherto there hath happened no notable occasion to trie hys worthynesse, yet can he not chose, but proue well. For he is a goodly man of personage, byghe of stature, stronge and well proporcyonate in all his members, bald on the crowne of the head, and amiable enough of countenance. He hath a good witte and is somwhat learned, and indifferent in the administracyon of iustice. And one thyng special I remember of him, worthy to be recited. Themperour at his being in Italy borowed money of all handes. And demaundyng amongest the rest. 100000. crownes in lone, of this duke, he brought him a bagge of. 50000. crownes: excusyng him selfe, that to lend. 100000. crownes he was not hable, but to geue his maiestee those. 50000. he could be contented with all his hert: and by this shift kept the other. 50000. crownes in hys purse.

Finally of the religion he is no more earnest than most

pryncys are, and in his like he folowyth the court of Inne, to lose no time of pleasure.

¶ He is frendly to faire women, and cherisheth change By his fathers dates he maried madame Renea daughter vnto Lewys the.xii. frenche kinge, a very gracious lady. By whom he hath two sonnes, Alfonso, and Luigi. Hitherto he hath mainteined his dominion in peace, and is therfore thought (as I haue sayd) to be very ryche. He is well furnished of artillerie and munition: and of deuocion is altogether Frenche. So that if there shuld happen any businesse in Italy betwene the emperour and french king, his part is like to be therin

¶ The astate of Placentia. and Parma.

PLacentia and Parma are two notable citees of Lumbardy, lyinge betwene the Appepine hylles and the riuer of Po: whose territory and pastures are so fatte and swete, that it is thought no place of al Europe hable to compare with it for the excellent cheeses it maketh, whych by the name of Parmesanes are right wel knowen ouer all.

¶ These two citees of late apperteined vnto the churche of Rome. But Paule the thyrd, nowe byshop of the same, a Romaine of nacion, of the house of Farnesi, to en-

to encrease his owne familie, found the meane to separate these two citees wyth theyr territoryes from the churches dominyon, & to geue it vnto his owne sonne named Peter Aluigi, creatyng him Duke therof. And in recompence annexed vnto the church the Duchie of Camerino, that he before had taken by force from the duke of Vrbine.

¶ This Pietro Aluigi, beynge the yere of oure lorde 1546. entred into the estate, beganne to beare him selfe ouerstoutly against the nobilitee of the same, & specially towards the Signor Ieronimo Pallauicini di Corte Maggiore, who rather disdeignynge then enuynge this mãs dominion, was faine at last to flee, & to habãdone wyfe and children, goodes and landes. In so muche that this new duke toke all vnto him selfe, and furnished the castel out of Corte Maggiore (being a very stronge holde) with his owne men, toke all the rentes (beyng. 12000 duckates a yeare) to his owne purse: except a small portion assigned to the ladie wife of Ieronimo, for hir liuynge: with condicyon neuertheless, that if she reliued hir husband with any part therof, she should lose the whole. Besydes this, he oppressed hys subiectes, causyng them to bie harneis, and to furnishe them selfes for the warre on theyr owne cost. But most of all he occupied a great noumber of labourers in his woorkes, beginning the foundacion of a strong castel, in the place where the Abbey of. S. Benettes in Placentia stode. The monkes whereof he appointcted vnto a spittle hous, called saint Lazares in Champaine. And these labourers were taken vp by by force from all partes of the Parmesane and Placentine: of whyche there pe-

ryched at one time, with the fall of an holowe banke a-boue. 50. persons, so that what with one thyng, & what with an other (beyng also a man knowen full of abhominacion in all kinde of vices, and specially in the vnnatural) in conclusion he became hated of all men, in so much that the Conti Giouanni Aguzzolo, and the Conte Augustino di Pallauicini, wyth certayne of theyr kynne and frendes, conspired agaynste hym, and at theyr time appoincted, finding him with a smal garde in his owne house in Plancense, slew him, hangyng afterwardes the deade body oute at a wyndow for a spectacle vnto the people.

¶ Finally these gentilmen (foreseyng the daunger that for this doyng might folow vnto them, in case the state shoulde continew of the churche) practysed before wyth Don Ferrando Gonzaga, to see whether he wolde backe them, by receiuyng the stronge citee of Placense vnto the emperours behouse: so that being at a poincte with him, the matter was so handled, that the nexte nyght after the dukes death, there were secretly receyued into the towne. 500. of the emperours men, and so the citee wonne without stroke strikynge.

All the money, plate, iewelles and stuffe that could be founde of the Dukes, to the value of 30000. crownes and vpwards, were diuided amongest the confederates and the Conte Giouanni Aguzzolo, who kylled the Duke his owne handes, allowed by the emperoure. 20. men for hys garde.

¶ Finally the bishop of rome (being hereof aduertised) incontinente caused Parma to be fortifyed, and furnyshed wyth men of warre, and tempted by corruption of

money

money to haue had one of the gates of Placense delue red hym by night: but his practise was discouered, and certaine Spanyardes therefore taken and hanged. And euer sens for more than this halfe yere, the emperours power vppon the Placentine, and the bysshoppes on the Parmesane haue kept diligente watche and warde, lo- kynge euery houre for open war. What it woul proue to, he best knoweth that gouerneth all.

☞ Of the astate of Urbine.



The Citee of Urbine standeth al- moste on the toppe of the Appenyne hilles, in maner betwene the marke of Ancona and Tuscane, the peo- ple wherof (as Plinie writeth) haue ben surnamed Petaurensi, & it see- meth to haue taken name of Urbes Binæ, two townes For who that wel considereth the propozcion of it, shal iudge by the miter faction therof, that it hath beene two townes ioigned together, and the middell, whyche is a holow descente betwene two hilles, is the slenderesse part of the citee.

¶ The Dukes palaice is a very kayze house, but not so excellente as the Conte Baldasar in hys Courtisane doeth commende it.

¶ The dukes dominion is two citees, Urbine and Pe- saro: his reuenew passeth not 60000. crownes by the yeare. But his auncestours for the most parte serued o- ther astates, as the Duke that now is also doth, where-

by they kepte muche greatter poztes than their owne habilitee wolde beare.

¶Amongest other this Dukes father builded an house within a mile of Pesaro, called Imperiale, whyche in mine opinion is one of the best deuised litle things that maye lightlye be founde. It standeth on the syde of an hyl, and hath pzospect both to the citee and to al the valey, it hathe manye fine little chambers, goodlye open vaultes, and excellēt faire fountaines. But that whych most of all pleased myne eye, was that being of a great height, you may out of the highest gardeine ryde about on the toppe of the house, whiche is verye faire paued with bzicke, and railed on bothe sydes with fine pillers and railes of white marble.

As foz the edification of Urbine, oz other notable memozy befoze the yere. 1345, I finde nothing mete to be wzitten. At whych time (by reason of the variaunce betwene byshop Clement of Rome, and the emperour Lewis of Bauarie, who to make their parties stronge, made diuers new lozdes in Italy) Galasso di Montefeltro was made vicare foz the emperour in the citees of Urbine and Eugenio, againste the byshop of Rome and his adherentes: in which his succession contynued enheritours vnto the yeare. 1444. that Federike, after made duke, obteigned the astate. The occasion whereof was, that Guido Conte di Vrbino, hauyng no heire male by his firste wyfe, feigned, that he hadde gotten a Concubine with childe, and so secretely toke the sonne of his nere kinnesman Bernardino della Corda, whiche euen than was newly bozne, and namyng it Federike, caused it to be nourished as hys owne.

Galassa di Montefeltro 1345

Conte Guido. 1428.

Not

¶Not longe after his wyfe died, and marlyng againe, engendred a sonne named Oddo, who in dede succeded the father in hys astate. But he was so vicious of lyuyng, and so busie with gentlimens wifes, that in a sodeine rumour of the people, he was slaine, and a Protonotary, called Carpesiano with him. Oddo 1440

Wherevpon this Federike the putative sonne, by the whole voice of the people was elected their prince: who in hys youthe had ben very well brought vp, specially in feates of armes, in the exercise wherof he lost one of hys eyes. Federico 1444.

¶This Federike was not only vallaunt, but also very well learned, and so happie a man, that in his tyme he was generall of.viii. seuerall armies, and died captayne of the Venetians army in the field before Ferrara.

¶The bysshop of Rome for his worthynesse made hym duke, the kyng of England not onely gaue him mony, but also made hym of the Garter. For whiche curtesye all Englishe men haue a certaine priuilege of fredome in his dominion, and the French kynge made him also of his order. Besides that, there was none astate in Italy, but that at one tyme or other presented hym with some worthy gyfte.

And aboue all the rest his fydelytee semeth to me moste worthy of commendacion. For whan Francesco Sforza, was forsaken of all his other frendes, and pursued with.20000.men, he onely receiued him, and thereby put hym selfe and his whole astate in iopardy, whyche he determined rather to lose, than to seme an vnfaythful frend, and in effecte maintayned Sforza tyll time serued him to recouer.

Guido Vbaldo 1482

After the death of Federike, his sonne Guido Vbaldo, of the age of.xii.yeres succeded, who reigned quietly about.xvi.yeres, til the comming of Valentino Borgia, sonne of Alexander the.vi. bysshop of Rome: that first by such craft gatte the astate into hys handes, that Guido Vbaldo was fayne to flee disguised in a plowmans clothinge. Neuertheleſſe throughe the good wyll of his subiectes he recouered his astate in shorte time agayne. But Valentines force was such, that at length this Duke toke suche treasure as he had, and fledde to the Marques of Mantua, whose sister he had maryed: there dyeng without issue, ended the house of Montefeltro, that had reigned in Vrbine the space of.157. yeres

Valentino Borgia 1503

Valentino Borgia helde it but a verye smalle space, for shortly after his fathers death, July the seconde bysshop of Rome persecuted him, and brought the house of Borgia to naughtes: and therupon gaue the astate of Vrbine to his nephewe Francesco Maria Prefettino della Rouere: whom he created duke there.

Francesco Maria 1504.

¶ This Francesco Maria was a very wise and valiant prince, nothinge inferyoure to Federike beforenamed: who reigned not fully.x.yeres, but Leo the.x. that succeded Julie the.ii made a puissaunt army, and expulsed hym out of his astate, and rased the walles of the citee euen to the earthe. Wherupon he estabyshed hys nephewe Juliano di Medici Duke in hys place, and after his death (for he lined but a while) his brother Laurence di Medici: who continued in the same, tyll Adrian the.vi that succeded Leo, expulsed him, and restored the astate vnto Francesco Maria, that enioyed it til he died, the space of.xvi.yeres in so great reputacion, that

1514.

Juliano di Medici Laurence di Medici,

1522.

all prin-

all pzinces and affates of Italy loued and honozed him and the greatest of them were glad to entertayne hym foz their general in the warres. Wherin he gat infinite summes of money. But he was so greate a builder and so lyberall vnto hys souldyoues, that whan he dyed, he lefte no kynde of money in his coffers.

¶ By his like time he builded the palaice besides Pesaro, called Imperiale, and fortified the citee of Pesaro, and the castel there, with diuers other goodly buildings and gatte Katerine daughter and heyze to the Duke of Camerine to be maried vnto his sonne Guido Vbaldo, that now lyueth. In whose right he enioyed that affate durying the fathers lyfe.

¶ Assone as Francesco Maria was dead, Paule the iii. now byshop of Rome, seyng this Duke that now liueth a younge man, without money oz greate frendes, made so greate a power agaynste him, that foz feare to lose the whole, he was contente foz a lyttle money and some other smal recompences, to yeld to the byshop the affate of Camerina, whyche the byshop hitherto enioyeth. And yet foz all this, the same byshoppe hath founde the meanes to marie his neece to the same duke: where at many men meruayle not a lyttel. Guido Vbaldo 2 1538 1547

Finally this Duke Guido Vbaldo is generall ouer all the Venetians landes, townes, and foztresses, and hath of theim. 10000. crownes annuitee. But hitherto he hath had none occasion of triall in the warres. He is meane of stature, hard of fauour, & very graue in countinaunce. And though he be well learned, his wisedom hath had no great triall as yet, but men trust he would pzoue as vertuouse as his pzedecessours.

The

¶ The Conclusion.

There be dyuers other astates in Italye specially the common wealthes of Siena and Lucca, the bysshoprike of Trent called Tridentum in latine, Piombino, Mirandula, Castel Geffroie, and such like, but because they are not of such reputacion eyther for dominion, power, or continuaunce of yeares, that they should be numbred amongest the principal, I haue forborne to speake particularly of theym, thoughe some in deede deserue notable prayse: beseechyng all gentil readers to accepte my trauaile and diligence, vsed in thys behalfe, as a thinge done for their commoditees. And though I want learnyng and eloquence to accomplish so hygh an enterprise, as to describe pithlye the astates of countreis and common wealthes, yet sens I spared no payne, nor labour to doe profite, I wold at the leaste loyse for my reward craue good report.

¶ Imprynted at London in Fletestrete nere to Saincte Dunstons Churche by Thomas Marshe.

Anno Domini. 1561.